

Descendancy Narrative of William Basse (2263)

I. William¹ BASSE (2263) Here are some thoughts from Don Floyd has been doing a good deal of research on the early Basse family. Its likely that none of his ideas can be proven, but that does not diminish their importance as they are educated guess that serve to illuminate the times if not the actual family. Here are a few:

See what you think about this theory: William (Guillaume?) Basse and Mary (Marie?) Carkin (?) Basse migrated from northern France (probably Rouen) to London between 1562 and 1565, the year that Humphrey Basse was born. William Basse would be about 42 years old in 1562, the year when the Guise faction of Catholics killed a group of Huguenots worshipping on a March day in Wassy, which is in Champagne, probably in the vicinity of Reims. The number of those killed has been estimated by various sources from 23 up to 1,200. The small number is reported by at least one Catholic historical report, and the higher figures seem to come from sources more sympathetic to the Huguenots, the latter of whom called themselves "Les Reformees."

The Huguenot capital offense, according to the clearly biased Catholic report, was disrupting a Mass by singing loudly during their own worship. The Catholic report said that while an edict in January 1562 provided for Les Reformees worship, theretofore forbidden in France, such worship was still forbidden in a fortified town, which Wassy apparently was.

It is safe to assume that news of the slaughter spread quickly throughout northern France, where the Huguenots seem to have originated. And it didn't take but a few weeks for the Huguenots to organize an army to fight the Catholic army, which apparently also was formed with urgent speed. The Huguenot Army, which seems to have included mercenaries, some from Germany – those war-loving Germans) quickly secured some towns in Northern France, including Rouen. The "Wars of the Religions," being born that March day, continued for many years.

William Basse could have served in that army but we have no way of knowing. I theorize that William Basse lived in an area about 10 miles south of the Belgium border. The place is called La Basse, which was reduced to tree stumps by the Germans during World War I. It may be the place where a Levis plant is now, but I'm not sure. La Basse would be a logical place for textile production, for much of northern France has been historically associated with the production of haberdashery items such as lace. Flax also was used to produce linen in the same area. The production of lace and linen in Northern France vastly predates the 16th century. Cambrais is chiefly associated with lace, and Cambrai is also up there close to the Belgium border, and Belgium also was and is a lace-producing country. Mention lace, and many people automatically think of Belgium.

Anyway, William Basse soon saw the handwriting on the wall and knew that he had to get himself out of there. Where would he go? If his family specialized in lace, an area of wealth would be the best place to go, for only the wealthy could afford lace, which was incredibly intricate and highly desired by the landed gentry and nobility. Some of the Huguenots went to present-day Florida, and I believe I read that some went to Germany, which probably was a lousy idea. And some went to London, among other places.

And as we know, Humphrey Basse made himself a fortune at his haberdashery in London where he sold girdles (belts) and probably other textile products, including lace, ribbon and linen. The girdles of that period were nothing remotely resembling the Scarlet O'Hara corset. In fact, girdles then were not corsets. Girdles of that period were belts worn by both men and women. The expression "girding one's loins" is most likely associated with girdles, which did, indeed, gird loins.

But why would Northern France be a desired base for making lace and other textile products, including wool? The land there, being in the lowlands (Basse-Terre) and wetlands, was and is very fertile, which would be ideal for raising cotton and flax and grazing sheep, all needed to make the textile products.

In summary, we have a number of factors favoring northern France, possibly La Basse, as being the home of the Basses.

1. Northern France was where the Les Reformees, apparent followers of Calvin, were based, and they became known as Huguenots, and the Basses have been reported to be Huguenots. They apparently were based in northern France because that is where the well-off apparently lived, and the well-off were especially attracted to the idea of "the priesthood of the believer."

2. The English word "lowlands" is "Basse Terre" in French, the same as Terre Haute (highland) is in Indiana, and the lowlands are, in fact, in northern France.

3. Northern France is where textile products, especially lace, were made, having apparently filtered down from Belgium. (There are some localities in southern Belgium that have "Basse" as part of their names.)

4. Northern France was and is a fertile area, which would attract people wanting to raise cotton and flax and to graze sheep.

5. Humphrey Basse ran a haberdashery in London, indicating that he had a good knowledge of textile products and who to market them to.

6. It's a fairly straight shot and not a very long distance from northern France to London by way of the English Canal. Probably ferry.

7. London apparently needed craftsmen and was happy to see the Huguenots, who clearly provided products highly desired by the well-off in that city of approximately 500,000 people in the 16th century. (The Mountjoys, another Huguenot family, is reported to have provided headwear for the Crown.). He was born circa 1522 at France. He married Mary CARKIN (2262) in 1542 at England. Wedding said to have taken place at St. James Garlickhite which is in London.



A. Humphrey² BASSE (2264) was born circa 1564 at France. He married Mary BUSCHER (2265), daughter of Dominick BUSCHER (4188) and Genevieve CLERKE ? (4187), in 1588. A number of his children were baptized at St. Gabriel, Fenchurch St. London between the years 1571 and 1620. The church was destroyed during the great fire and was not rebuilt. A plaque was placed on Fenchurch Street to mark its previous location. At the time their christenings were recorded Humphrey was called: haberdasher, French merchant (against Mynsyng Layne), marchant, girdler, marchant in the High Street. in 1589 at London, England. He was Ottywell Smyth to Walsingham.

John Welles still a prisoner at Roanne. A gentleman brings news from the court that the French King is still at Angeres with a very strong camp. Thinks that the King of Navarre has passed the river, that Memoransee's forces are with him, and that Espernon waits until de Maine advances. Paris news that de Maine is at Etampes with great forces. On Thursday at Paris he summoned all soldiers to join him in twenty-four hours on pain of death, as Navarre's forces were said to be advancing on him. Secret report that some of de Maine's forces are beaten. Caenne news that Monpansiere besieges Fallysse and has ambushed

and routed 3,000 men under the Count de Bryssake, killing 1,200. A Roanne report that he has taken Fallysse: if so, only Lysyouexe, a weak place, is between him and Roanne.

Those of Roanne do more hurt than all the rest. Besides several other castles, they took within the last two days Chateau Galyarde, which closed the river between Paris and Roanne. This governor recently sent powder, etc., thither. The governor of Chateau Galyarde surrendered for two thousand crowns after three days' siege: he could have held out for a year. They have but 4 castles more to take and then will probably besiege this town. This governor wants powder, etc. [as in Smyth's letter of the 7th, above, p. 203]: he has supplied much to various gentlemen and has no money. He wants Smyth to supply the gentlemen, who will pay him though they will not pay the governor. The governor of Caenne wrote to this governor for powder. If Humphrey Basse, merchant, may send over by Rye four or five thousand pounds, Smyth could supply everybody. Desires licence for this. Those of Rye allow strangers, but not Englishmen, to bring over powder. A small barque set forth by this governor, who prepares one or two more, took boats going from Roanne to Picardy. The governor of New-haven wants a truce: it is unlikely. News came this week by three ships from Cyvyll in Spain that sixty very rich great ships went for the Indies not six weeks ago: thirty good ships could have taken them. No other army preparing. A Fleming, five years resident at Cyvell, says that not above forty sail of the army for England came back, and that the whole country is in poor estate for lack of traffic, corn being exceptionally dear and their crops burnt up by the great heat. Less than three weeks ago three small barques came from Spain with wool sacks, but in them were, it is said, over 200,000 crowns for Flanders and the League. The Indies fleet is expected within two months, with over 12 millions for the King, who would be undone for ever were it taken. Small barques will come with treasure to Newhaven this summertime: some small pinnaces lying off this coast might easily take them. Requests powder again.

Has sent four dozen quail, the first he has seen this year, to Mr. Dydsberye for Walsingham.—Dyepe, 26 April, 1589.

Postscript. Encloses a letter for Mr. Graye, brought by a Scot. This governor wants a good gunner: he expects a siege.

Holograph. Add. Endd. Seal. 2 pp. [France XIX. f. 107.] in 1589.¹ He was in 1600 (The Dutch were attempting to get a monopoly on the importation of pepper from the east. London merchants sought and were granted a charter to compete under the name of the name of English East India Company.

Dec 31. Westminster. 281. Charter of incorporation of the East India Company by the name of the Governor and Company of Merchants of London trading into the East Indies. "A privilege for fifteen years granted by Her Majesty to certain adventurers for the discovery of the trade for the East Indies;" that is to say, to Geo. Earl of Cumberland, and two hundred and fifteen knights, aldermen, and merchants, as follows [where Purchas has printed the names differently his spelling is inserted in brackets]:—

Sir John Hart.	Robt. Lee.	Thos. Smythe and Thos. Cambell, citizens and aldermen of London.
Sir John Spencer.	Leonard Holliday.	
Sir Edward Michelborne.	John Watts.	
John Moore.		
Wm. Cavendishe.	Edward Holmeden.	Edward Barker.
Paul Bannynge.	Robt. Hampson.	Thos. Marsh.
Sam. Backhowse.	Wm. Jennynges.	John Wragge.
Jas. Lancaster.	Gyles Paslowe.	Wm. Dale.
Rich. Staper.	Robt. Bell.	Lawrence Waldoe.
Thos. Cordell.	Thos. White.	Hen. Bridgman.
Wm. Garwey.	Nicholas Lynge.	Sam. Armitage.
Oliver Style.	Wm. Palmer.	Edward Harrison.
Wm. Quarles.	Ellis Crippes.	Edmond Nicholson
Bartholomew Barnes.	Geo. Bolles.	[Edward].
Wm. Offley.	Nic. Crispe.	[These two last names omitted by Purchas.]
Robt. Chamberlain.	John Newman.	Clement Mosley.
John Harby [Harvy].	Hump. Wallcott [Wallot].	
Rich. Wiseman.	John Merricke.	Thos. Richardson.
Wm. Stone.	Hump. Handforde.	Thos. Boothby.
Fras. Cherie.	Thos. Simondes.	John Couchman
Thos. Allabaster.	Robt. Cockes.	[Coachman].
Rich. Barret.	Wm. Wastall [Wustall].	Reynold Greene.
John Swinarton the younger.	Ric. Barret [Burret].	
John Humphrey.	Robt. Mildmay.	
Thos. Garwey [Garaway].	Thos. Bostocke.	Wm. Hynde.
Bart. Hollande.	Geo. Chandlor.	
Wm. Romeny.	Ric. Cockes.	Edward Lutterforde.
Jas. Deane.	Wm. Walton.	Wm. Barret [Burrell].
John Eldred.	Wm. Freeman.	Step. Harvy.
And. Banninge.	Thos. Southacke.	Thos. Henshawe.
Edward Leanyng [Loaning].	John Frier.	Wm. Ferris.
Fras. Dent.	Wm. Aldersey.	
Thos. Juxon [Jackson].	Ric. Balle [Bull].	Wm. Hewitt.
Ric. Pierce.	Wm. Fisher.	
Nich. Leate.	Roger Heaminge [Henying].	Jos. Salbucke [Salbanke].
John Wolstenholme.		

¹unknown record type: unknown subject, by unknown photographer; unknown series; unknown repository, unknown repository address. Online <http://www.british-history.ac.uk/report.aspx?compid=63908>; unknown file name, Elizabeth: April 1589, 11-20', Calendar of State Papers Foreign, Elizabeth, Volume 23: January-July 1589 (1950), pp. 211-224. URL: <http://www.british-history.ac.uk/report.aspx?compid=75243> Date accessed: 17 March 2011.

Nic. Pearde. Robt. Cobbe.
 Wm. Chamber. Robt. Robinson. Nic. Manley.
 Rowland Backhouse. Fras. Evington. Nic. Salter.
 Hump. Smith. Fras. Taylor. Wm. Willaston.
 Robt. Sandy. Thos. Westwray [Westwrow]. Wm. Angel.
 Hen. Robinson. Nic. Barnealy.
 Rich. Pointell. John Midleton. John Hawkins.
 John Highlorde. Robt. Gore. Roger Dye.
 Wm. Harrison. Raphe Gore. Ric. Clarke.
 Hum. Style. Wm. Cater. Thos. Hewitt.
 Hump. Robinson. Geo. Cater. George Whitmore.
 Nic. Ferror. John Busbridge. Hen. Polsteade [Polstee].
 Thos. Farrington. Thos. Horton.
 John Combe. Wm. Bond. Wm. Greenwell.
 Robt. Offley. Wm. Cotton. Robt. Johnson.
 Roger Howe. John Stockley. Bart. Hagget [Huggott].
 John Hewitt. Roger Ofield.
 Jas. Turner. Augustine Skinner. Hump. Basse.
 Morris Abbot. Ric. Wiche [Wise]. Robt. Bucke.
 Robt. Careill [Jas. Carrell]. Robt. Towerson. Ambrose. Wheeler.
 Ric. Talby. Wm. Hale.
 Robt. Brooke. Robt. Midleton. Rich. Hale [Hull], junior.
 Ric. Chamberlain. Robt. Bateman.
 Geo. Chamberlain. Ric. Gosson. John Hodgson.
 Leonard White. Robt. Waldoe [Waldore]. Alfonsus Fowle [Foote].
 John Cornelius.
 Raphe Busby [Basby]. Ric. Wragge. Edmund Spencer.
 Ric. Piott. Thos. Talbott. Ric. Deane [Denne].
 Wm. Bonham. Robt. Pennington. Ric. Ironsyde.
 Edward Barkham. Hump. Milwarde. Geo. Smythes.
 Geo. Colles. Ric. Hearne. Jas. Dunkin.
 Raphe Hamor. Raphe Allen. Edw. Walter.
 Jas. Cullimore [Colymer]. John Brooke. And. Chamberlain.
 Ant. Gibson. Robt. Stratford.
 Samuel Hare. Robt. Kayes. Ant. Stratford.
 Geo. Utley ["disfranched" 6th July, 1601]. Hugh Crompton [Crompton] Wm. Millett.
 Simon Lawrence.
 Ric. Washer. Thos. Lydall.
 Gregory Allen. Geo. Holman. Step. Hodgson.
 Hen. Archer. Morrice Llewelin. Ric. Wrighte.
 Jeffrey Kyrby. Ric. Persons [Parsons]. Wm. Starker [Starker].
 John Cason. Wm. Smyth.
 Ric. Beale. Fras. Barker. John Ellacot.
 Thos. Shipton. Wm. Turnor. Robt. Bayly, and
 John Fletcher. John Greenwoode. Roger Cotton

Licence at their own costs and charges to set forth one or more voyages to the East Indies, in the countries and parts of Asia and Africa, and to the islands thereabouts, divers of which countries and islands have long since been discovered by others of the Queen's subjects; to have succession and purchase lands without limitation; to have a common seal.

Sir Thos. Smythe, alderman, to be the first governor, and Wm. Garway. Robt. Sandy.

Oliver Style. John Eldred.
 Jas. Lancaster. Ric. Wyche.
 Paul Bannynge. Ric. Wiseman. John Highlorde.
 Leonard Hallyday. Fras. Chery. John Middleton.
 John Moore. Thos. Allabaster. John Coombe.
 Edward Holmden. Wm. Romney. Wm. Harrison.
 Rich. Staper. Roger Howe. Nic. Lynge, and
 Thos. Cordell. Wm. Chambers. Robt. Bell

the twenty-four committees, to be elected annually, and jointly to have the direction of the voyages, the provision of shipping, and merchandise; and a deputy governor to be chosen in a general court, each to take the oath of fidelity, and to be elected within the first six days in July in each year, and every member of the Company to take an oath before being admitted to traffic as a freeman of the Company. Privileges to the sons, apprentices, servants, and factors in India of the adventurers. The governor or deputy governor always to be present at general assemblies when reasonable laws, constitutions, &c., agreeably to the laws of England, may be made, and offenders against them punished by fine or imprisonment. Exemption from paying customs for, the first four voyages; to be allowed to give their bonds payable at six and twelve months for customs afterwards payable for merchandise from India; further privileges of customs. Liberty to export in each voyage thirty thousand pounds in foreign coin or bullion; so as at least 6,000l. be first coined at the Mint; to send yearly to the East Indies six good ships and six pinnaces with 500 mariners, unless the royal navy go forth. None of the Queen's subjects, but the Company, their servants, and assigns, to resort to India without the Company's licence upon pain of forfeiting ships and cargoes, half to the Queen and half to the Company, with imprisonment till the offenders give 1,000l. bond not to trade thither again. Power to grant licences to trade to the East Indies. Apprentices, servants, factors, &c., may be admitted to the freedom of the Company by the majority. Silver

exported to be shipped only at the ports of London, Dartmouth, and Plymouth, and duly entered by the Custom House officers without paying customs. ["We have not any liberty granted to carry out any gold by name, but only silver." _Marginal note.] If this charter shall not appear profitable to the crown and realm it may cease after two years' notice; if otherwise, the Queen promises at the end of this term to grant the Company a new charter for another fifteen years. [Sixteen pages, with marginal notes. Brit Mus., Harleian, 306, fol. 17–25. Printed in Purchas, I., 139–47. See also Bruce's Annals of the E. I. Comp., I, 136–139, who quotes this charter from the "Printed Collection of East India Charters, p. 3," and Anderson's Hist. of Commerce, II., 196–197, who adds "This is the very same East Ind. Comp. which through many various vicissitudes existed under the same denomination until the year 1708, when it was absorbed by the present [1787] United Company of Merchants of England trading to the East"). He was on 1 Jul 1608 (1608.

July 1. 417. Court Minutes of the East India Company. Sir Thos. Smythe elected governor, Wm. Greenwell deputy governor, and the following committees:—

John Eldred.	Wm. Harrison.	Wm. Bonham.
Wm. Cockayne.	Robt. Middleton.	Wm. Millett.
Nich. Crispe.	Hugh Hamersley.	Thos. Styles.
Robt. Johnson.	Reynold Greene.	Wm. Jennyns.
Henry Robinson.	Humphrey Basse.	Morris Abbott.
Humphrey Smyth.	Robt. Bell.	Jeffrey Kirby.
Wm. Cater.	Ralph Freeman.	John Busbridge.
Thos. Westway.	Geo. Bennett.	Edmond Scott.

Thos. Farrington, treasurer; Wm. Leighton, secretary; Thos. Stephens, account keeper to Michaelmas; and in the meantime to finish the accounts of the first three voyages; and Thos. Evesett, beadle or officer of the Company. Order for buying timber, with the overplus of money belonging to the third voyage, confirmed. Power to the governor, deputy, and committees to promise gratifications in their discretion. The Act of 11 January 1601–2, for absence and late coming to courts, to be duly executed from henceforth, and a register kept of the names of those absent; all fines on that account to be set against each man's account, unless he gives just reason for his absence. Ten pounds to be given in charity to Sarah, widow of Wm. Brum, captain of the Ascension in the first voyage, who was killed by a shot from a great piece of ordnance, unadvisedly discharged out of the Dragon at the burial of one Mr. Winter, near the coast of the East Indies. Loan to Nich. Crispe and Sam. Garrett. [Two pages and a half. Court Bk., II, 98–99.].² He 5. [f.3] 25 Aug. 1610. Award by Trinity House

Humphrey Basse, girdler of London, Luke Barefoote and Tobias Johnson, mariners of London, on the one hand, and Thomas Silvester, Thomas Wilkenson, mariners of Ipswich, Samuel Cutler, merchant, Edward Man, vintner, Elizabeth Man, spinster, and John Sturgen, brewer of Ipswich, on the other, entered bonds [4] of £200 on 4 Aug. 1610 to accept the award of at least 6 members of Trinity House in respect of their dispute, provided that the award be made before 4 Sept. 1610. The award is as follows: (a) Silvester and his associates are to pay £47 to Basse and his associates. £21 is to be deposited at the house of Richard Nottingham in Ratcliff on 29 Sept., and the balance on 2 Nov. 1610. (b) Wilkenson is to pay £30 towards the cost of weighing the Providence of London in the Thames, of which Johnson was master. (c) The liability to pay the £47 [f.3v] and the cost of weighing the Providence over and above the £30 which Wilkenson himself has to pay is to be shared between Silvester and his associates in proportion to their shares in the ownership of the Sea Adventure of Ipswich at the time of the weighing of the Providence. (d) On or before 10 Sept., both parties are to relinquish all claims on each other in respect of all disputes up to 4 Aug. 1610. Documents to this effect are to be deposited at the house of Nottingham by 12 Sept. 1610. (e) Both parties are to pay a fee of [blank] to Nottingham, clerk of Trinity House, for drawing up this award.

Hugh Merret, Robert Salmon, William Jurden, William Jones, Robert Kytchen, Robert Ryckman, Thomas Milton, Nicholas Dygens, Matthew Woodcot, William Byam, John Osborne, John Skinner. in 1610.³ He was on 12 Mar 1612 at London, England (He was listed with a long list of others on the Third Virginia Charter indicating that he subscribed money to the project. I suspect this was how his sons including Nathaniel became involved with the colony at such an early time. The new Charter of March 25, 1612 extended the territorial boundaries of Virginia to include the Bermuda Islands, often written in the documents of the time as, "the bermoodies". This Charter reduced the control of the London Company Treasurer and his council and gave much more power to the ordinary stockholder with regard to the affairs of both the London Company itself and to the government in the Colony. The Charter provided for the establishment of a lottery to create a permanent fund to support the future needs of Virginia. And, most importantly, the 1612 Charter introduced a democratic element that allowed the reorganization of the Virginia Colony Government in 1618. Under this reorganization, the first representative assembly outside England's Parliament, came into being when the Burgesses gathered at Jamestowne July 30, 1619. This new system of colonial representation became the model of all future English colonies in the New World and the very basis of the democratic institutions in the future United States of America. The London Company continued to operate under the modified Charter of 1612 until Virginia became the King's Royal Colony, 1624.

Society Historian

This was just about the time that West Indian tobacco was being introduced and only two years before the marriage of Pocohantas that occurred on April 5, 1614.

Upon further research I've discovered that he was also part of the East India Company. Here is a brief description: Having secured his monopoly grant of colonization, Sir Walter Raleigh "planted" in 1585 the first English colony in what would later be the United States, on Roanoke Island off the coast of present-day North Carolina. The area had been first explored by Ralph Lane and Richard Grenville under Raleigh's direction the previous year, and was named Virginia in honor of England's virgin queen. The new colony had few dedicated settlers, however, and the people returned to England two years later. In 1587

²unknown subject unknown record type, by unknown photographer, East Indies: July 1608', Calendar of State Papers Colonial, East Indies, China and Japan, Volume 2: 1513-1616 (1864), pp. 176. URL: <http://www.british-history.ac.uk/report.aspx?compid=68701&strquery=humphrey+basse> Date accessed: 17 March 2011.

³unknown subject unknown record type, by unknown photographer.

still another Raleigh expedition, headed by the painter John White, tried to effect a permanent settlement of Roanoke Island. Indeed, the first English child born in America, Virginia Dare, granddaughter of John White, was born that summer at Roanoke Colony. But English interest in and communication with the tiny colony was cut off during the battle with the Spanish Armada, and White, stranded in England, could not return to Roanoke until 1591. He could then find no trace of any of the colonists. The first attempt at English colonization of America had totally failed.

If Raleigh and Gilbert had received their inspiration for colonizing from such men as Hakluyt, their practical experience had been picked up in the course of subduing and enslaving Ireland. After serving in the army attempting to impose English rule on Ireland, Gilbert had proposed, in the late 1560s, to plant Englishmen in Ulster, as the Irish were forcibly driven out. A few years later, Gilbert became governor of Munster in Southern Ireland; in the course of "pacifying" the Irish, he drove out Irish peasants and replaced them with West Country English. Even as late as 1580, Gilbert and Raleigh fought together to suppress the Irish in Munster, and were rewarded with sizable grants of land. After the American colonizing failures, Raleigh turned his attention back to Ireland. There he planted English colonists to grow tobacco on the forty thousand acres of land he had been granted in Munster. In 1589 Raleigh, having expended forty thousand pounds on the American failure and not succeeding in persuading the queen to supply more, was happy to sell his patent for North American colonization to a group of associates and London merchants, largely connected with the Muscovy Company and including John White, the Reverend Richard Hakluyt, and Sir Thomas Smith. Raleigh, however, reserved to himself the right of dominion over the prospective colony.

Leading circles in and around the Muscovy Company had thus resumed the monopoly of rights to exploration and colonization of North America, which monopoly they had briefly held a decade earlier. But now they had a far greater incentive to pursue their grant to try to find compensation for the upheavals of the spice and Baltic trade, and of Antwerp, during the 1580s. Consideration was therefore given to establishing a sea trade direct to the East Indies by English and Dutch merchants. Thomas Cavendish, who had served on the Raleigh voyage to America in 1585, had sailed around the world during 1585-88 and had returned with a cargo of spices. The war with Spain now completely cut England off from the Levant spice trade, and in 1589 the London merchants received permission from the Privy Council to send three ships to the East Indies, carrying silver out of the country to pay for spices. Cavendish and John Davis, another old associate of Raleigh, made an unsuccessful attempt to circumnavigate the world. James Lancaster, who had been a merchant in Lisbon, was in 1591 dispatched with three ships to India; he returned in 1594 with one ship and a cargo of spices. In 1593 the Muscovy and Levant companies moved to the fore, sending George Weymouth to search for a northwest passage to India along the coast of North America.

The Dutch began in 1594 to form companies for distant voyages around Africa to India. Their first fleet returned in 1597, thereby giving a new impetus to the activity of English merchants. In 1598 alone, Dutch companies sent five fleets, totaling twenty-two ships, to the Indies; John Davis was the chief pilot of the Zeeland fleet. By 1601, over a dozen Dutch fleets of almost seventy ships had sailed for the East Indies. Because of renewed English voyages and conflicts with the Portuguese, the Dutch merchants forming the companies that had sent the ships to the East Indies began to amalgamate them, and in March 1602 all the Dutch companies merged into the United East India Company.

In September 1599, London merchants belonging to various trading companies, especially the Levant Company, formed an association on the model of the successful Dutch companies and petitioned the government to charter a company of London merchants having a monopoly of trade by sea to the East Indies. The charter to the East India Company was granted on December 31, 1600, under the title of the "The Governor, and Company of Merchants of London Trading into the East Indies"; the Levant Company was granted a new charter to distinguish the monopoly areas of the two companies. The governor named in the charter of the East India Company was Sir Thomas Smith (or Smythe). Smith's grandfather, Andrew Judd, had been a principal founder of the Muscovy Company. His father had preceded him as a leading tax collector, and had been a key royal official in erecting the edifice of royal absolutism, high taxation, and economic restrictionism during the Elizabethan era. Smith was governor also of the Muscovy Company and the Levant Company, of which he was a founder, and was also the principal member of the group of London merchants to whom Raleigh had in 1589 assigned his patent for American colonization. Indeed, Smith was the governor of every one of England's privileged companies then interested in foreign commerce and colonization. Smith has been referred to as the greatest "merchant-prince" of his era, but it is clear that his status and wealth arose not from private trade, but from the governmental privileges of tax farming and grants of monopoly.

The first voyage of the East India Company went out under the direction of James Lancaster and John Davis in 1601, and was followed the next year by George Weymouth's second voyage along the coast of North America, sponsored by the East India and Muscovy companies. Meanwhile, Sir Walter Raleigh resumed his interest in the New World in 1602, sending out another futile expedition to search for survivors of the Roanoke Colony. But in the following year, Raleigh's colonizing activities were unceremoniously cut short by the accession of King James I to the throne of England. One of James's first acts was to consign Raleigh to an indefinite imprisonment in the Tower and abruptly to vacate his dominion over Virginia. Among the king's motives was the desire to give Spain a tangible token of the new king's wish to conclude peace between the two warring countries. For Raleigh was now perhaps the most ardent warmonger and plunderer against Spanish shipping and whose colonizing activities sought bases for aggression against Spain; his incarceration was therefore a particularly apt token of peace between the two nations. Indeed, peace was concluded the next year, in August 1604, after which King James cracked down on the formerly lionized captains of piracy and freebooting.

AMERICAN NEOFEUDALISM

The Treaty of London of 1604 provided for freedom of commerce between England and Spain, as it had existed prior to the war. Since England had had the right to sail to Spain and Portugal, England now claimed that its ships could sail to the East and West Indies as well. Spanish America was the source of tobacco, and its use in England increased greatly once trade was reestablished on a regular basis, even though James disapproved of its use as a poisonous weed. Although the London merchants hoped to monopolize the renewed trade with Spain, the protests of the merchants of the West Country ports, especially Bristol and Plymouth, forced the government to backtrack. First it tried to include the West Country merchants in the monopoly, and then it decreed for all English merchants freedom of trade to Portugal, Spain, and the western Mediterranean, a policy that was later to apply to American merchants. At the same time, the privileged merchants of the Levant and Muscovy companies were suffering further losses because of local difficulties, especially foreign invasions of Russia.

While economic pressure was turning the attention of English merchants once again to possible markets and supplies of raw materials in North America, and peace renewed attention to the New World that had been diverted by the war against Spain, the peace treaty also terminated the previously permanent employment of many military and naval officers engaged in the war. In

1605 Weymouth again explored the coast of New England, this time in behalf of a group of soldier-courtiers, including Sir Ferdinando Gorges, the Earl of Southampton, and the latter's brother-in-law, Sir Thomas Arundel. Weymouth's return in July 1605 led to several projects for trade and colonization in America, and in September of that year, petitions were presented to the Privy Council for the formation of companies to engage in these activities. Although the Privy Council was then considering a project to plant English colonists in the lands taken from the Irish in Ulster, the value of North American colonies to English shipowners and to the English navy led the Trinity House Corporation and the Privy Council to approve the petitions. Finally, in April 1606 Raleigh's old dominion over Virginia was granted to two sets of powerful merchants, which included the merchants to whom Raleigh had sold his rights of trade.

The new patent divided the monopoly powers of government over Virginia between two joint stock companies of merchants. The South Virginia Company was to have claim over the land between the thirty-fourth and thirty-eighth parallels, roughly from Cape Fear north to the Potomac River; the North Virginia Company was to rule between the forty-first and forty-fifth parallels, roughly from Long Island to Maine. To stimulate competition and to provide incentive for colonizing, the zone in between was thrown open to settlement by either company, with the stipulation that one could not settle within one hundred miles of the other. Since the South Virginia Company was headed by leading merchants of London, it soon became known as the London Company; while the North Virginia Company, centered around merchants of Plymouth, came to be called the Plymouth Company. Each company was granted powers to allocate its land in any way it wished; the king reserved the then customary royalty of five percent of whatever gold or silver might be mined from the new land. Insisting upon overall royal control and dominion unique to monopoly charters of that era, the king vested supervisory control of the two companies in a Royal Council of Virginia, which was appointed by the king and which in turn was to appoint resident local councils to govern each of the two colonies. The settlers and their descendants were supposed to enjoy all the "liberties, franchises, and immunities" of Englishmen at home - a clause immediately contradicted by the absence of any provision for elections or home rule.

The Plymouth Company for North Virginia was composed of west country merchants, gentry, and soldiers, and was headed by the governor of Plymouth, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, who desired to establish a fishing and fur-trading colony independent of the London merchant-financiers. Also included in the group were Raleigh Gilbert, a son of Sir Humphrey, and Sir John Popham, chief justice of the King's Bench; Sir John had played a leading role in procuring the charter. The Plymouth Company dispatched an exploratory expedition in October 1606, and sent colonists to America in May 1607 under Raleigh Gilbert and George Popham, a relative of Sir John. A settlement was established on the Kennebec River in what is now Maine, but because of a severe winter and poor crops, and the death of the two Pophams, the colony was abandoned in September 1608. Thereafter the Plymouth Company did not attempt further colonization, but concentrated on the Newfoundland fisheries and some fur trade.

The London Company for South Virginia was composed of members of leading political families. The leading member was the ubiquitous Sir Thomas Smith, the leader of the group that had purchased trade rights from Raleigh, and the governor of the East India, Muscovy, and Levant companies. Other leading members were: the Reverend Richard Hakluyt; Robert Rich, Earl of Warwick, a leader in the monopoly-chartered East India, Burma, and Guinea companies; and the leading London merchants involved in the Muscovy, Levant, and East India companies. And just as the Levant Company had been founded by members of the Muscovy Company, and a quarter of the stockholders in the East India Company were members of the Levant Company, so over one hundred members of the East India Company were now investors in the London Virginia Company, a main purpose of which was to provide a source of raw materials, such as tropical products, spices, and furs. Another prominent member in the London Company was Sir Edwin Sandys, a prominent Puritan and friend of a royal favorite, the Earl of Southampton.

The London Virginia Company sent forth its first settlers in December 1606; they were carried then as in succeeding years on ships provided by privileged favorites. The crucial question then becomes: Will the land pass after a time into the hands of the settlers, or will it remain permanently in the hands of privileged overlords dominating the settlers?

England, the major sovereign over the lands of North America, had been subjected to feudalism since at least the Norman Conquest of the 11th century. After the conquest of England in 1066, the conquerors parceled out large tracts of land to the ownership of their leading warlords, and this newly created nobility became the liege lords of the subdued peasantry. Since the overwhelming mass of Englishmen were still engaged in agriculture, feudalism became the crucial fact about English - as well as other European - society. The major attributes of the feudal system were: the granting of huge estates to landowning warlords, the coerced binding of the peasants (serfs) to their land plots, and hence to the rule of their lords, and the further bolstering by the state of feudal status through compulsory primogeniture (the passing on of the estate to the oldest son only) and entail (prohibiting the landowner from alienating - selling, breaking up, etc. - his land). This process froze landlordship in the existing noble families, and prevented any natural market or genealogical forces from breaking up the vast estates.

But after the late 14th century, the serfdom aspect of feudalism began a steady decline in England, as compulsory labor service imposed on the peasants began to be commuted permanently into money rents ("quitrents," which quit or freed one of the onerous obligations of feudal - including military - service). By the early 17th century, however, feudal military service had not been abolished, and the two other aspects of feudalism - primogeniture and entail - remained intact.

An important specific spur to imposing feudalism on the colonies of the New World was England's experience in subjugating Ireland. In the process of conquering Ireland during the 16th century, the English concluded that the "wild Irish" were no better than "Savages" and "unreasonable beasts" and hence could be treated as such - a significant preview of English treatment of the American Indian. As a result, the English decided that, as in Ireland, a colony had to be "Planted" under direction of a central monopoly organization run along military lines; they also decided to favor imposing on a colony a system of feudal land tenure. It was no coincidence that the leaders in the early English colonizing projects in America had almost all been deeply connected with the planting of Englishmen (largely a supposed surplus of poor) and feudal landownership in Ireland. Indeed, many of the active incorporators of the Virginia Company had substantial interests in Irish plantations.^[3]

As recently as 1603, in fact, a crushing defeat of the Irish had spurred renewed colonization in Ulster by the English government. The hapless Irish peasants were declared to have no rights in owning land; instead, their lands were handed over by the Crown in large grants to privileged courtiers and monopoly companies, all enjoying feudal powers over the new domain.

The Irish were deliberately exterminated or driven off their land, and the vacant lands compulsorily planted with an alleged surplus of English poor, who were now little better than serfs. The treatment of the Irish and Ireland provided a directly illuminating model for the gentlemen colonizing in Virginia.

That the first English settlements in the New World were organized not directly by the Crown, but by private monopoly companies, meant that the proprietary company would be interested in subdividing its granted land as quickly as possible to the

individual settlers, in order to reap a rapid gain for its shareholders. The situation was of course *not* that of the free market; if it were, the British government would (a) have refrained from claiming sovereignty over the unused American domain, or especially (b) have granted ownership of the land titles to the actual settlers rather than to the company. The privileges to the chartered companies, however, did not prove disastrous in the long run: the companies were eager to induce settlers to come to their granted land and then dispose of the land to them at a profit. The cleansing acid of profit was to dissolve incipient feudalism and land monopoly. It is true that the fact of the land grant to the company engrossed the land for a time, and raised its price to the settlers, thus restricting settlement from what it would have been under freedom; but the quantitative effects were not very grave.^[4]

Liberty vs Power in Europe and England
by Murray N. Rothbard

Here is a mention of both Smyth and Humphrey. Humphrey was one of the 24 elected.

July 5.— Letter read from Wm. Addames, dated Japan, 12th Jan. 1613, [see No. 630,] an Englishman, who went forth 16 years ago, as pilot—major with the Hollanders, and has continued at Japan ever since, being in great favour with the emperor. He desires to see some English shipping in those parts, and gives an account of the commodities to be bought and sold there, acknowledges the Company's charitable affection towards his wife, which he is ready to repay, and will strive to do the Company service; hopes to procure leave from the emperor to return in some of their shipping. Also letter read from Sophony Cozucke, dated in Succadana, 17th July 1613, with an account of a beneficial trade to be had in the river of Landak for diamonds and gold, by making a fortification in a small island in the river, the only place whence all the principal diamonds are brought. Also letters from Wm. Sheppard, factor, dated from Bantam, 14th Dec. 1613, containing particulars of the sale and delivery of goods to Capt. Best; from Edward Cristian dated at Tecoe, in Sumatra, 27th Oct. 1613, with an account of his voyage to Bantam, the loss of Sir Henry Middleton, the Trades Increase and most of his men, and his intended voyage to the Moluccas; and from Peter Floris, Thos. Essington, and Adam Denton, factors, relating the progress of their voyage, and the settling of two factories, one at Slam and the other at Patani. Sir Thos. Smythe's account of the proceedings of certain grocers as to the purchase of a large quantity of pepper from the Dragon; also of the gallant conduct of Captain Best in fighting, with a ship and a pinnace against four galleons, and as many frigates. Sir Thos. Smythe, excuses himself from being chosen governor, on account of his long service, his age and health; but he, Sir John Watts, Sir Thos. Lowe, Sir Dudley Diggs, and Alderman Cokayne being nominated, is elected governor; Wm. Greenwell, deputy, although he wished to be excused; Wm. Harrison, treasurer, and the following committees:—

Robt. Middleton.	Hump. Basse.
Robt. Offley.	Raphe Freeman.
Robt. Bell.	Reyn. Greene.
Robt. Johnson.	Wm. Burrell.
Morris Abbott.	Wm. Stone.
Thos. Westway.	Jeof. Kirbie.
Lawr. Greene.	Hum. Smyth.
Edward James.	Robt. Bateman.
Hump. Handforde.	Hugh Hamersley.
Christ. Cletherowe.	Nich. Leat.
Robt. Salmon.	Hen. Garraway.
Nich. Crispe.	Wm. Hallyday.

Here is the original group meaning that Humphrey knew all of these people:

1601,
March 21,
to
1602,
April 26. 288. Names of those to whom "Bills of Adventure" have been to sealed in the East India Company, with the date of the bill of adventure and the amount. [Unless otherwise expressed, the sum April 26. subscribed by each adventurer is 240l., which includes the bill and supplies; the total amount is 62,880l.]

Stephen Hodgson.		Henry Poulsteede.
Wm. Angel.	Fras. Barker.	
Roger Hemyng.	Rich. Washer.	
John Eldred, 600l.	John Hodgson.	
Hump. Myllward.	Hump. Basse.	
Richard Hearne.	Wm. Wollastone.	
Robt. Pennington.	Hump. Wallcott.	
Thos. Talbott.	John Newman.	
Roger Ofielde, 360l.	Sam. Armitage.	
John Stoackly.	Henry Bridgeman.	
William Megges.	Wm. Bonde.	
John Couchman.	Thos. Horton.	
William Adderley.	John Swynerton, 360l.	
Bart. Holland.	Robt. Waldoe.	
Richard Humble.	Hump. Style.	
Thos. Boothby.	Thos. Farrington.	
And. Chamberlain.	Wm. Cotton.	

Robt. Offeley.	Edmond Nicholson.
Eliz. Mosley.	Raphe Gore, 360l.
Thos. Southacke.	Oliver Style. 560l.
Wm. Quarles.	Richard Bellca.
Reynolde Greene.	Richard Piott.
Lawrence Waldoe.	Robt. Myldmay.
Raphe Buzby.	John Buzbridge.
Wm. Ferrers.	Robt. Coxe.
Wm. Bonham.	Richard Pierce.
Thos. Juxon.	Richard Ball.
Thos. Shipton.	Robt. Cobbe.
Edw. Barker, 300l.	George Coles.
Geo. Whitmore.	Robt. Bucke.
Thos. Bramby(?)	Richard Hale.
Wm. Hale.	Thos. Cambell, 360l.
Wm. Greenwell.	John Watts, 600l.
Robt. Johnson.	George Bowles, 300l.
And. Bannyng.	Sir John Hart, 600l.
Thos. Hewitt.	Ald. Edw. Holmden, 1,200l.
Robt. Middleton.	Sir John Spencer, 360l.
Wm. Stoane, 600l.	Ald. Robt. Sampson, 360l.
Wm. Cavendishe.	Wm. Offley, 300l.
Samuel Hare.	John Middleton.
Edmund Spencer.	Nicholas Peird.
Morrice Llewelin.	Giles Parsloe.
Nich. Barnesly.	Edmund Scott.
John Hewitt.	Edward Barkham.
John Cornelius.	Anthony Stratford.
James Turner.	Augustine Skinner.
Thos. Barbar.	Ambrose Wheeler.
Rich. Poyntell.	Anthony Mosley.
Jas. Deane, 360l	Thos. Richardson.
Thos. Westwray.	Wm. Burrell.
Rowland Backhouse.	Thos. Lydall.
Barth. Barnes.	Sam. Backhouse.
Ellis Crispe.	Rich. Barrett.
Richard Clarke.	Peter Helinge.
Raphe Hamor.	Nicholas Lynge.
John Hawkins.	Jas. Lancaster.
Thos. Henshawe.	Wm. Hynde.
Thos. Garway.	James Dunkin.
Thos. White.	George Bennett.
Geo. Chandlor.	Edward Walker.
Robt. Bateman.	Robt. Stratford.
Thos. Bostocke.	Gregory Allen.
John Clinche.	Edward Harrison.
Nicholas Leate.	Wm. Turner.
Robt. Sandy, 260l	Thos. Ball.
Rich. Wiseman, 600l.	Edward Latterfeild
Hughe Crompton.	Anthony Gibson.
John Wolstenholme.	Robert Bell.
Robt. Gore.	Rich. Ironsyde.
John Leman.	Nich. Manley.
Alphonsus Fowle.	Wm. Chambers.
Wm. Romney.	Wm. Millett.
John Fletcher.	Wm. Freeman.
Morris Abbot.	Wm. Albany.
Richard Tailbye.	Jeffery Kirby.
John Cason.	Robt. Key.
Thos. Alabaster.	Thos. Symonds.
Nicholas Pearde.	Simon Lawrence.
Thos. Smythe, 360l.	Nicholas Crispe.
Roger Howe "	Bart. Haggett.
John Westwray "	Wm. Smythe.
Edward Leeninge "	Lewis Pope.
Rich. Bowdler.	Jeremy Davers, 200l.
Robt. Ducey.	Wm. Allen, "
Robt. Brooke.	Thos. Heyes, "
Robt. Carrell.	Wm. Palmer, "
Rich. Deane.	Wm. Starkye, "

Richard Cocks.	Thos. Marshe, "
Nicholas Farrer.	Raphe Allen, "
Jas. Cullimore.	Richard Chamberlain.
John Harby.	Richard Champion.
Roger Cotton.	Robt. Chamberlain.
Robt. Bayly.	George Chamberlain.
George Cater.	Francis Evington.
Rich. Wyche.	John Morrice.
Wm. Dale.	Richard Staper, 800l.
Rich. Burrell.	John Jackson.
Leonard White.	Wm. Kellett.
George Holman.	Robt. Robinson.
Henry Archer.	John Watts.
Stephen Harvy.	Christ. Cletherowe.
Joseph Salbanke.	Hugh Hamersley.
John Fryer.	Eliz. Mosley.
Wm. Wastall.	Geo. Dorrington.
Hump. Handford.	Nich. Salter.
Wm. Fysher.	Rich. Wragge.
Henry Robinson.	John Wragge.
Hump. Robinson.	Wm. Jennyns.
Wm. Harrison.	Richard Gosson.
John Greene.	Ald. Leon. Hallyday, 1,440l.
John Humphrey.	Roger Style, 40l.
Hump. Smithe.	Earl of Cumberland, 500l.
Roger Dye.	Countess of Cumberland, 50l.
Wm. Cater.	Rich. Persons, 200l.
Fras. Taylor.	Ald. Leon. Hallyday, assigned to him by the Earl of Cumberland, 230l.
John Coombe.	
Wm. Palmer.	
John Highlorde.	Ald. Moore, 480l.
Robt. Ducey.	Christ. Nicholls.
Henry Butler, 200l.	

—[Four pages. Court Bk., E. I. Comp., Vol. I., pp. 105, 106.].⁴ He left a will on 13 May 1616 at London, England, Will was proved June 6 1616 by his widow Mary Basse, relict and executrix. Mentions children and among others Thomas Hobson.

The will of Humphrey Basse

In the name of God amen the thirteenth daye of
 Maye Anno Domini one thowsand six hundred and sixteene and in the yeres of the
 raigne of oure soveraigne Lorde James by the grace of god of England Scotlande
 Fraunce and Ireland kyng defender of the faith etc that ys to saye of England France
 and Ireland the fourteenth and of Scotland the nyne and fortithe I Humphrey Basse
 citizen and girdler of London beyng at this present somewhat sicke in bodye but of good
 and perfect mynde and memorye (thankes be given to Almightye god) do make and declare
 this my last will and testament in manner and forme folowing that is to saye First and
 principallie I commende my soule into the handes of Almightye god my creator trusting
 and steadfastlie beleving by and thorough the merittes deathe and passion of Jesus Christe my
 Savyoure and Redemer to have free remission of all my synnes: And after this transitorye
 life ended to inherit the kingdom of heaven Item I will my bodye to the earthe to be
 buryed in suche manner and with suche funeralls aswell for mourninge apparrell as other-
 wise in all thinges as my executrix hereafter named shall in her discretion thinke meete
 Item I will that all suche debtes as I shall justlie and trulie owe to any person or persons
 at the tyme of my decease shalbe payed by myne executrix within as shorte tyme after my
 decease as convenientlie may be. Item my will and mynde ys that all and singular my goodes
 chattells leases houshold stufte wares marchandize plate money debtes and all other
 my moveable estate which I shall have or be possessed of at the tyme of my decease shalbe equallie
 parted and devided into three equall partes and portions according to the laudable custome of the
 cite of London One third parte whereof I will and bequeathe to Mary my welbeloved wife
 One other third parte thereof I will and bequeathe to my sonnes Nathaniell Richard Samuell
 Humfrey and Luke And to my daughters Hester Abigall and Sara equallie amongst them to
 be parted and devided And the other third parte thereof I will shall remayne and be reserved
 by payment of suche legaceys and performance of suche other uses as are hereafter in this my
 last will given and appoynted But whereas I have allreadye in my life tyme given
 unto my said sonne Nathaniell Basse the somme of fower hundred poundes for and in parte of such
 portion as is or shalbe due unto hym by the custome of the said cite after my decease¹¹ The margin contains the following
 words, which are to be inserted here: 'my will and minde is that the same some of fower hundred poundes shalbe and shalbe

⁴English Records, online <http://www.british-history.ac.uk/report.aspx?compid=68635&strquery=basse%20east%20india%20company>, <http://www.british-history.ac.uk/report.aspx?compid=68635&strquery=basse%20east%20india%20company>.

reckned as parte and parcell of such ratable parte and portion as shall anie waie accrue or be due unto him after my decease by the custome of the saide cittie'. out

of or by the saied third parte of my sayed goodes and estate so to be equallie parted and devided amongst my saied children as aforesayed And that he the saied Nathaniel Basse shall have only so muche more in money or other valuable substance payed and delivered unto hym by my executrix as shall make up the same somme of fower hundred poundes one full childe parte and as muche as any of my saied children are to have by the custome of the saied citie of or by the sayed third parte and not otherwise And whereas also I have allreadie in my life tyme given unto my sayed sonne Richard Basse the somme of three hundred poundes for and in parte of suche portion as ys or shalbe due unto hym by the custome of the sayed citie after my decease my will and mynde allso ys that the saied somme of three hundred poundes shall be and shalbe reckoned as parte and p[ar]c[el] of suche rateable parte and portion as shall any waye accrewe or be due unto hym after my decease by the custome of the saied citie out of or by the sayed third parte of my sayed goodes and estate so to be equallie parted and devyded amongst my saied children as aforesayed And that he the saied Richard Basse shall have only so muche more in money or other valuable substance payed or delivered unto hym as shall make up the sayed somme of three hundred poundes one full childe parte and as muche as any of my sayed children are to have after my decease by the custome of the sayed citie of or by the sayed third parte and not otherwise And whereas allso I have allreadye in my life tyme given in marriage with Mary my daughter not before named to Mr Luke Walthall her husband the somme of fyve hundred poundes for and towards her advauncement my will and mynde ys neverthelesse that yf it happen or fall out upon the dividend of my estate, that the severall partes or portions of my saied children do or shall come arise or amounte unto a greater somme of money then the somme of fyve hundred poundes That then she the saied Mary shall likewise have so muche more in money or other valuable substance paied or delivered unto her or to the sayed Mr Walthall her husband as shall make up the same somme of fyve hundred poundes one full childe parte and as muche as any of my sayed other children are to have after my decease by the custome of the sayed citie out of or by the sayed third parte of my saied goodes and estate so to be equallie parted and devided amongst my sayed other children as aforesayed And my will and mynde allso is that yf any of my sayed children shall happen to dye before theire portions or legaceys in this my present laste will to them geven and bequeathed shall growe due or be payed That then the parte portion and legacey of hym or her or them so deade shalbe equallie and indifferentlie payed and distributed to and amongst the survivor and survivors of them. Item I give and bequeathe to the governors of the hospitall of Bridewell towards the releife of the poore of or in the same hospitall the somme of tenne poundes. Item I give and bequeathe to the poore of the parishe of St Helens London where I nowe dwell the somme of fyve poundes to be distributed at the discretion of the church wardens of the same parishe. Item I give and bequeathe to the poore of the parishe of Sainct Gabriel Fanchurche London the somme of fyve poundes to be distributed at the discretion of the parson and churchwardens of the same parishe. Item I give unto the poore of the parish of Westham in the countie of Essex the somme of fower poundes to be distributed at the discretion of my executrix hereafter named. Item I give and bequeathe unto the master and wardens or governors of the Arte or Misterie of the Gyrdlers of London and to their successors master and wardens of the same Arte or Misterie the somme of twentie poundes to be bestowed in plate or otherwise employed or disposed of as the m[aste]r and wardens for the tyme being shall thincke fitt. Item I give and bequeath unto my father in lawe M[aste]r Charles ?Pressy and to my mother in lawe his wife to either of them a rynge of gould of the valewe of fiftie shillings. Item I give to me loving freind Mr Thomas Francklen a ring of gould of the valewe of thirtie shillings. Item I give to Mrs Elizabeth [...] widowe a ring of goulde of the valewe of thirtie shillings. Item I give to Abraham Busher and his wife to ether of them a ring of gould of the valewe of thirty shillings Item I give to John Busher and his wife to either of them a ring of gould of the valewe of thirtie shillings. Item I give to Nathaniell Busher a ring of gould of the valewe of thirtie shillings. Item I give to Jeremy Busher a ring of gould of the valewe of thirtie shillings. Item I give to doctor Sampson ?Hussey a ring of gould of the valewe of thirtie shillings. Item I give to Mr Luke Walthall my sonne in lawe a ring of gould of the valewe of fiftie shillings. Item I give to Mr William Willaston a rynge of goulde of the valewe of fiftie shillings. Item I give to Mr Humfrey Browne a ring of goulde of the valewe of fiftie shillings. Item I give to Richard Bogan a rynge of goulde of the valewe of fortie shillings. Item I give to Anthony Errington a rynge of goulde of the valewe of fortie shillings. Item I give to Mary Bradley wife of Henry Bradley felmonger fyve poundes. Item I give to Mary Sumpter the nourse nowe remayning in my house the somme of fortie shillings. Item I give to my nourse James ?at Ham twentie shillings. Item I give and bequeathe to my sonne Nathaniell Basse the somme of thirtie poundes over and besides suche parte and portion as ys hereby before by me willed and bequeathed unto hym or shalbe due unto hym after my decease by the custome of the citie of London. Item I will and bequeathe to my sonne Richard Basse the somme of twentie poundes over and besides suche parte and portion as ys hereby before by me willed and bequeathed unto hym or is or shalbe due unto hym after my decease by the custome of the

sayed citie. Item I will and bequeathe unto the sayed Mary my daughter wife of the
 saied Mr Luke Walthall the somme of tenne poundes over and besides suche parte or portion
 as ys hereby before by me willed and bequeathed unto her or is or shalbe due unto her after my
 decease by the custome of the saied citie. Item whereas my brother Thomas Basse
 late deceased dyed indebted unto me in greate sommes of money as by his bondes and specialties
 thereof remayning in my custodie may appeare my will and mynde ys that my executrix
 shall onlie have and take of thexecutors or administrators oy my saied brother Thomas the
 somme of one hundred and fiftie poundes in full payment of and for all his sayed debtes and
 sommes of money owing unto me And I do hereby remitt and release his saied executors or
 administrators of all the after residue which the sayed Thomas my brother oughte unto me at the
 tyme of his decease So as and uppon condition that the sayed executors or administrators of
 my saied brother doe and shall paye the saied somme of a hundred and fiftie poundes to my executrix
 within twelve monethes next after my decease and not otherwise. Item whereas my brother
 William Basse is indebted unto me in certain sommes of money my will and mynde ys
 that my executrix shall onlie have and take of the somme of thirtie poundes in full payment
 of and for all suche debtes and sommes of money as he dothe or shall owe unto me at the
 tyme of my decease And I doe hereby remitt and forgive to hym all the rest soe as and uppon
 condition that the saied William my brother doe and shall paye the saied somme of thirtie poundes
 to my executrix within twelve monethes next after my decease and not otherwise Item I doe hereby
 freelie remitt and forgive unto my bretheren Robert and Richard Basse theire executors
 and administrators all suche debtes and sommes of money as they or either of them doe or
 shall owe unto me at the tyme of my decease. The rest and residue of all the saied third parte
 so by me herein before willed and appoynted to be reserved for payment of my legaceys and
 performance of other uses as aforesayed I do hereby whollie give and bequeathe to the sayed
 Mary my wife and to my sonnes and daughters Nathaniel Richard Humfrey Luke
 Hester Abigall and Sara equallie amongst them to be parted and devided And I
 do ordayne and make the saied Marye my welbeloved wife my sole and only executrix of
 this my last will and testament And overseers of the same I do make and appoynt
 my sonne in lawe Mr Luke Walthall Mr William Willaston Mr Humfrey Browne
 and my sonne Nathaniel Basse praying them as mucche as in them lyeth to see this my last
 will performed and to be ayding and assisting to my saied wife in the execution and p[er]formance
 of the same. And I do hereby renounce disanull and revoke all former willes or testam[en]tes
 by me at any tyme heretofore made written signed or sealed. In witnesse whereof I the
 sayed Humfrey Basse have to this my present testament and last will set my hand and
 seale the daye and yere first above written. Humfrey Basse. Sealed subscribed declared and
 published by the sayed Humfrey Basse to be his last will and testament in the presence
 of us Edw[ard] ?Lowman Thomas Hobson William ?Percye

Will of Humfrey Basse, Girdler of Saint Gabriel Fenchurch, City of London

06 June 1616 PROB 11/127

Records of the Prerogative Court of Canterbury Prerogative Court of Canterbury and related Probate Jurisdictions: Will
 Registers Name of Register: Cope Quire Numbers: 1 - 67

1 will of many for the catalogue reference

Translation of the probate

The above-written will was proved at London before the venerable master Edward Pope, doctor of laws, surrogate of the venerable master lord John Benet, ?knight, also doctor of laws, master, guardian or commissary of the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, lawfully appointed, on the sixth day of the month of June in the year of the lord 1616 by the oath of Mary Basse, relict of the said deceased and executrix, named in the same will. To whom was committed the administration of the goods, rights and credits of the said deceased, sworn on the holy gospels to administer the same well and faithfully, etc.

Translation of the Latin in the margin on the third page of the will

On the 16th day of the month of December in the year of the lord 1617 there was issued a commission to Mary Walthall *alias* Basse, the natural and lawful daughter of the said deceased, sworn to administer the goods, rights and credits of the same deceased according to the tenor and effect of this will both by Mary Basse, relict and executrix of the will of the aforesaid Humphrey Basse, deceased, and by Luke Walthall, the executor of the will of the said Mary Basse, now also deceased, not fully administrating well, etc.

Here is a synopsis of the will created by Don Floyd:

Notice that some or many of the names appearing in Genevieve's will also appear in Humfrey Basse's will. An abbreviated version of Hump's will follows:

Mary Basse, widow One third of estate
Nathaniell Basse, son One of children sharing a third of estate,
Minus 400 pounds already given. Also 30 lbs extra
Richard Basse, son ` One of children sharing a third of estate
Minus 300 pounds already given. Also 20 lbs extra
Samuell Basse, son One of children sharing a third of estate
Humfrey Basse, son One of children sharing a third of estate
Luke Basse, son One of children sharing a third of estate
Hester Basse, daughter One of children sharing a third of estate
Abigall Basse, daughter One of children sharing a third of estate
Sara Basse, daughter One of children sharing a third of estate
Mary Basse, daughter One of children sharing estate, but only any
amount above 500 pounds realized in
administration of the will, 500 pounds
already given in marriage to Luke Walthall
Also 10 lbs extra
Bridewell Hospital 10 pounds
Poor of the Parish of St. Helens 5 pounds
Poor in the Parish of St. Gabriel Fenchurch 5 pounds
Poor in the Parish of Westham in the County of Essex 4 pounds
Arte or Misterie of the Gyrdlers of London 20 pounds
Mr. Charles Pressy ring of gold worth 50 shillings
Humfrey's mother in law, Genevieve,
wife of Mr. Charles Pressy ring of gold worth 50 shillings
Mr. Thomas Francklen ring of gold worth 30 shillings
Mrs. Elizabeth, widow ring of gold worth 30 shillings
Abraham Busher ring of gold worth 30 shillings
Wife of Abraham Busher ring of gold worth 30 shillings
John Busher ring of gold worth 30 shillings
Wife of John Busher ring of gold worth 30 shillings
Nathaniell Busher ring of gold worth 30 shillings
Jeremy Busher ring of gold worth 30 shillings
Sampson Hussey, doctor ring of gold worth 30 shillings
Mr. Luke Walthall ring of gold worth 50 shillings
Mr. William Willaston ring of gold worth 50 shillings
Mr. Humfrey Browne ring of gold worth 50 shillings
Richard Bogan ring of gold worth 40 shillings
Anthony Errington ring of gold worth 40 shillings
Mary Bradley, wife of Henry Bradley, felmonger 5 pounds
Mary Sumpter, nurse 40 shillings
James, nurse 20 shillings
Wife Mary and all the children Any money left over after all administrative
expenses are paid – to be divided equally.
Thomas Basse, brother Estate of deceased Thomas Basse has to
pay only 150 lbs to the estate
of Humfrey Basse, some debt forgiven
William Basse, brother Has to pay Humfrey estate only 30 lbs,

some debt forgiven
Robert Basse, brother All debts forgiven
Richard Basse, brother All debts forgiven
Edward Lowman, Thomas Hobson, William Percye, witnesses
Don.⁵

⁵Albert D. Bell, *Bass Families of the South*, 1961, State Archives of Georgia.

PARISH REGISTERS OF ST. HELEN'S, Bishopsgate, London.

Baptised 22 Sept. 1576 William son of William Basse
 14 Aug. 1575 Phillipp dau of William Basse
 30 June 1605 Barnaby son of Humphrey Basse, gyrdler & Mary
 14 Dec. 1606 John sone of Humphrey Basse, gyrdlar, & Mary
 15 May 1608 Lidea dau of Humfry Basse, girdlor, & Mary.
 14 Jan. 1609 Abigall dau of Humfry Basse, girdlor, & Mary
 5 May 1613 Luke son of Humfry Basse, girdlor, & Mary
 27 June 1615 Sara, dau of Humfry Basse, girdlor, & Mary
 Buried: 26 Jan. 1628-9 Lidea dau of Humfry Basse, girdlor, & Mary
 * 4 June 1616 HUMPHRY BASSE, Girdler.
 *22 July 1616 Marye wife of Humfry Basse, Citizen & Girdler of London, deceased.

*NOTE: Wills of Humphrey Basse and Mary his widow were proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury (Registered 65 Cope & 80 Cope.)

BRIEF ABSTRACT OF WILL OF HUMPHREY BASSE (see Note above):

Dated 13 May 1616; proved 6 June 1616 by Mary Basse, relict, executrix: Mentions WIFE Mary; SONS Nathaniel, Richard, Samuel, Humphrey and Luke; Daughters Hester, Abigail, and Sarah; and daughter Mary Walthall, wife* of Mr. Luke Walthall; father-in-law Mr. Charles Pressy and his wife; brother Thomas Basse, late deceased; brother William Basse; Abraham Busher, John Busher, Nathaniel Busher, Jeremy Busher, Dr. Sampson Hussey, Thomas Franklin, William Williston, Humphrey Browne, Richard Bogan, Anthony Arrington, Henry and Mary Bradley, Mary Sumpton (nurse), and nurse James. Witnesses Edward Lawman, Thomas Hobson, William Perrye. on 16 Dec. 1617 commission granted Mary (Basse) Walthall, daughter of the deceased to administer according to the tenor of the will, "for that Mary Basse the relict and executrix is deceased and that Luke Walthall executor of Mary Basse is also deceased." - Register 65 Cope.

- - WILL OF MARY BASSE, late wife and sole executrix of Humfrey Basse, etc., mentions debts of late husband - refers to children, but names only son Nathaniel and son-in-law Luke Walthall.* - Register 80 Cope.

*(Marriage License issued by the Bishop of London, 12 Feb. 1610-11: Luke Walthall, Merchant, & Mary Basse, of St. Helen Bishopgate, London, spinster, daughter of Humphrey Basse, of the same, merchant. To marry at St. Giles in the Fields, co. Middlesex.)(Luke and Mary Walthall had two children, William and Mary, of whom the former died young.)

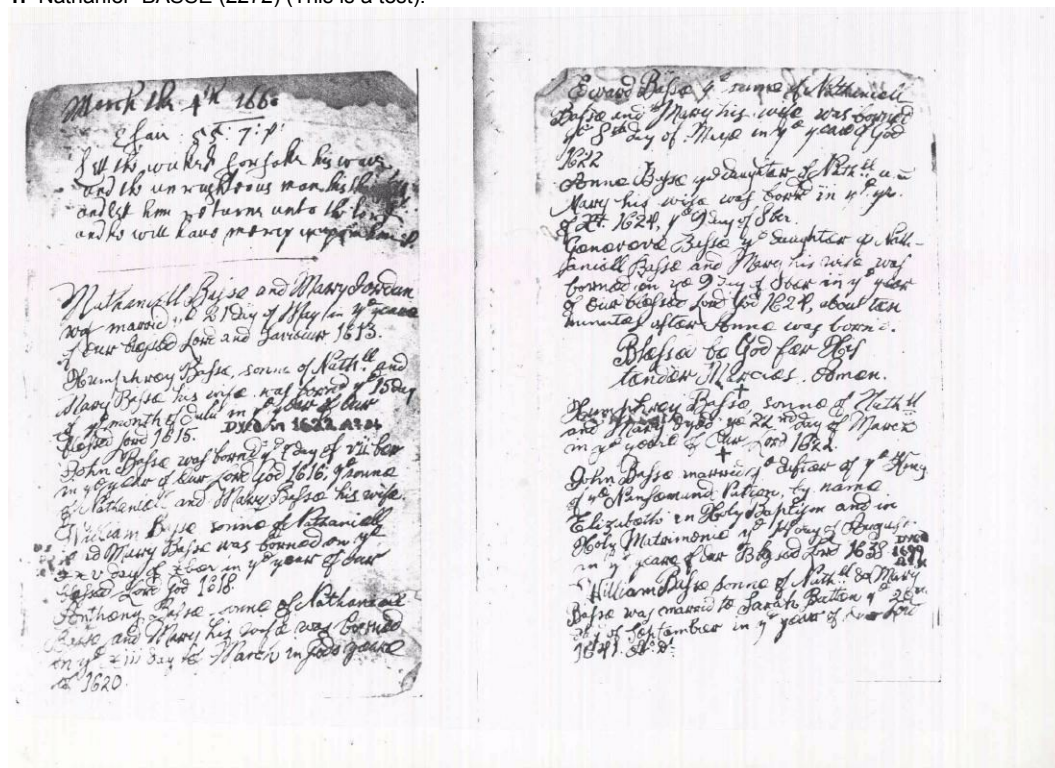
- - WILL IF GENEVIEVE PRESSEY, "heretofore widow of Dominick Buscier, of London, merchant, stranger, deceased, now wife of Charles Pressey, of Bishop's Tonne, co. Wilts, Esquire." - Dated 3 Mar. 1619-20. Proved 10 Apr. 1620. - refers to contract between husband Charles Pressey and son-in-law Humfrey Basse, deceased, dated 2 July 44 Eliz, (1602). Bequests to poor of the French Church in London and to widows of parish of St. Catherine Coleman, London. Nephew John Torchy and his sister Mary Torchy; Mary Pressey, husband's daughter; brother Thomas Pressey; brother John Clerke and wife Suzan, sister of husband; Henry Bradley, wife, their dau. Jane and "other children;" Nathaniel Buschier, his wife, daughter, and his brother Jeremy; Thos. Hehson and wife; Sampson Hussey who was husband of "my daughter Jane;" widow of my son Constantine Buschier; Anne and Jane, daughters of my son Abraham

He died on 4 Jun 1616 at London, England, Here is a note from Don Floyd in 2005: I think I know what Humphrey Basse and Mary Bushier Basse died of: typhus. also called "The New Fever." According to an Internet source, there was an outbreak of typhus in London in 1616, and William Shakespeare died that year, also apparently of typhus. Mary died a little more than a month after Humphrey. Sometimes this happens because of unconsolable grief, but in this case, I think it was infectious disease. She may have caught it from him, or they both may have caught it because they lived in probably the unhealthiest place on earth.

They also could have died of smallpox, the disease that killed Pocahontas in 1617, but to me typhus is a more likely suspect. I also think that Nathaniel Basse possibly or probably died of Bubonic Plague, also called "Black Death." There was an epidemic of this dreaded disease in the United Kingdom in 1654, the year that Nathaniel died in London. Guess who else died in London that year. William Basse the poet. I believe there is a connection between this poet and Nathaniel, possibly cousins, but I have nothing solid on that. William Basse was a devotee of Shakespeare and wrote an opus extolling his merits. If Nathaniel and William Basse did die of Bubonic Plague they both suffered agonizing deaths.

I notice that a serious economic decline began in England in 1620. Do you think Nathaniel Basse and the other early Virginia leaders could read the economic tea leaves in London and that's the reason (or a reason) they headed for the New World? His estate was probated in 1619 Jan. 19. 552. Court Minutes of the East India Company. Letter read from the Lords of the Council, renewing a business which was in question two years since about the suppression of pirates, for which the city proffered 20,000l. a year for two years conditionally, desiring to know what the Company will undertake, as the King intends to have it put in execution this summer. Acquittance read from Sir Jas. Cunningham for losses sustained by himself and company in their Greenland voyage, but no mention made of any release, according to the Lords' promise; to be shown to Mr. Solicitor to get an effectual assignment and release for Sir James to seal. Three ships to be employed for Bantam and two ships and a pinnacle for Surat, "being uncertain of the Portugals' attempts, and therefore to go with a reasonable strength to Surat and so to Jasques." Petition of Richard Giles and John Wilson for some consideration for burning of logwood. Small pearls to be sent back from Surat, as they will not yield the profit expected. Letter read from George Ball from Bantam, 15 June last; also a letter from the Low Countries, both stating that the Hollanders had taken and sunk some ships of the English, near Pooloroon and Bantam, "showing the continuance of their pride and hatred against the English." Petition of Nathaniel Basse concerning his security for bills to the Company for his father. [One page and three quarters. Court Bk. IV., 284-286.].

1. Nathaniel³ BASSE (2272) (This is a test).



From Don

Floyd:

The Floyds and their uniqueness

The Floyd family is a fascinating study, veiled at times with mystery and often muddled by elfish unpredictability. They are unique. They are rare. They are elusive. But persistent research over a span of 35 years has uncovered some amazing stories about them, who they were, and whom they married.

Still, there are gaps in the story, much like missing pieces from a jigsaw puzzle. When the puzzle is assembled to near completion, the viewer can analyze the shape and size of the missing pieces and gain additional clues to what they are by observing the scenery around them. We consider our book, *The Elusive Floyds*, a beginning. Future research will reveal more. The Floyds are elusive, but they can be found.

Their greatest talent, it seems, was the ability to marry well. This suggests that they were a handsome and strong lot and were attractive to women needing safety amid unsafe surroundings. And when we say “marry well” we are talking, for example, about an 1803 wedding in North Carolina where Mourning Bass, a descendant from the high wealth of London, married Frederick Floyd, a man of humble background. Mourning’s earliest Bass ancestor to make a home in Virginia was John Basse (the original French spelling) along with his Nansemond Indian wife. But Mourning’s rich genealogical trail goes back further to London and to the elite of Northern France.

The Basse family were among the few Europeans to settle in Virginia about 1618 and survive the Powhatan Indian Massacre of 1622 when 347 Englishmen were slain. John had memories of London, but he soon found himself adjusting in Virginia to what circumstances required. During this ongoing lifestyle change, he married the daughter of the king of the militant Nansemond Nation (called tribe today) in 1638 and chose to live with the Nansemonds, thereby enjoying the protection afforded to his Nansemond wife.

As we continue our research today we often find family historical nuggets that are nothing short of phenomenal. One such story features Nathaniel Basse, who in 1616 inherited his father’s stock in *The Virginia Company*. But that stock was only a very small portion of Humfrey Basse’s overall wealth. He left a will in London that is one of the longest in English history. The stock most likely brought Nathaniel to Virginia for further investment. Before it was over, however, he most likely suffered financial losses. So did *The Virginia Company* which never turned a profit, and its charter was revoked by King James I.

Beginning about 1622, Nathaniel Basse operated *Basse’s Choice*, a plantation commonly called a *hundred*, south of the James River very near present-day Smithfield. He also served in the House of Burgesses in 1623 and 1629, and in the Colonial Council between 1624 and 1629 and was the chief judicial authority in the area of *Basse’s Choice*. As a member of the House of Burgesses, he was instrumental in developing the model of representation for all future colonies, including Massachusetts. He also traveled, under orders of the governor, to such places as Nova Scotia, Dutch settlements and possibly the West Indies to negotiate trade deals. He was a key figure in early American history but history books have for the most part ignored him.

About 1623, after apparently coming to America from Northern Ireland and possibly having a link to southwestern Scotland, Thomas Floyd lived at *West and Sherlow Hundred* near Jamestown. Living at West and Sherlow suggests that he was an indentured servant working on the plantation. After examining the records of all Floyds of the 17th century in Virginia and surrounding areas between 1618 and 1700, we conclude that this Thomas Floyd most likely was our first ancestor in Virginia, but we have no proof. Our Floyds became centered in Isle of Wight County, Va. Family oral history says we are Irish, but it is possible that we are Scots-Irish, who lived in Northern Ireland and originally were from Scotland.

One factor that impedes Floyd research is our rarity. *The National Geographic’s Genographic Project*, an ongoing five-year DNA study of the migration patterns of humans from northeastern Africa over the past 60,000 years, confirmed that our Floyds possess DNA that places us in Haplogroup G, which makes up about 3 percent of the population, and our Floyds make up a small fraction of that 3 percent. There are some Floyds from Ireland who do not share our DNA. And there is one family of Floyds that is neither Irish nor Scottish. It is Welsh. Their original name was *ap Lloyd, the gray one*, and this name evolved into *Floyd*. In our case, the Gaelic name *Tuille*, was anglicized to *Flood* while under English dominion and evolved into *Floyd* or *Floid* possibly because of the way Irishmen pronounced *Flood*: “flow-id.”

One of the more exciting features of the Floyd story is its link with two men of kinship who put America on a course toward permanency and eventually toward national sovereignty. Nathaniel Basse was one. Another was Basse’s father-in-law Samuel Jordan, who was among a handful of Englishmen involved in saving Jamestown from collapse during its darkest hour about 1610. Three months before *The Mayflower*, Samuel Jordan in June 1609 boarded *The Sea Venture* in Plymouth and set sail for the New World. The recently built state-of-the-art vessel was one of eight ships to set sail that day on a mission called *The Third Supply*, providing new settlers and provisions for a corporation called Virginia.

Six to eight weeks out, the flotilla ran into a powerful storm – assumed to be a hurricane – and was pummeled for almost 48 hours. *The Sea Venture* could not hold up during the storm because it had a major flaw. Its caulking had not been allowed to thoroughly dry before the ship’s departure at Plymouth. The other seven ships survived and proceeded to Jamestown. *The Sea Venture*, meanwhile, was foundering somewhere in the unseen distance. Directly, the ship’s master spotted land – the Bermudas – and ordered the ship in that direction. The ship became snared between two coral reefs – which may have been a saving factor for the passengers and crew. The ship never sank and all passengers and crew were believed to have survived. However, there were some deaths on land weeks to months after the passengers and crew went ashore.

A star in the making in the Bermudas was a possible kinsman of Samuel Jordan. He was *Sea Venture* passenger Sylvester Jourdain, who wrote an account of the storm that bore much similarity to William Shakespeare’s “*The Tempest*,” but Jourdain wrote his account a good year before Shakespeare staged his play in 1611. If Shakespeare used Jourdain’s material, which was published and widely available in London as early as 1610, he did not plagiarize but simply used a journalistic account as a basis for his story. He also could have drawn from at least one other account. Both Jordan and Jourdain originally were from Dorsetshire.

Samuel Jordan and the rest in the Bermudas undertook to build two small ships from *Sea Venture* salvage and from such native resources as cedar. It took 10 months or so to finish the two ships and then set sail for Jamestown in 1610. Samuel Jordan and the others apparently had lived in a healthy environment in the Bermudas. After arriving in Jamestown, they were shocked by what they saw: blank stares, emaciated bodies, disarray, and a seeming desire to flee the misery of life. Of a one-time population of about 500, only 50 or so were left, and they were planning to set sail for England the next day. But Samuel Jordan and his associates were able to revive their spirits, provide food for the hungry and comfort the sick. Within a few days, the 50 were feeling good about staying in Virginia. It was one of the most important developments in American history. Without it, today's America most likely would not exist. Instead, Spain likely would rule. It is reported that Spain had already used spies and poison against Jamestown.

There is much more we are sharing in this book about the Floyds and related families, but above all, we are presenting a human story – a story made up of many human stories. We have, for the most part, shunned lists.

We want to bring you face to face with your ancestors so that you might see who they were and how they lived. After all, when you look in the mirror today, they are there looking back. He was New Tag Don Floyd and I have corresponded for thirty years on the Bass/Floyd family. Here is a thought he presented in 2005:

Margot: I don't remember your sending me anything earlier about Nathaniel Basse being a Puritan. The recent e-mail is the only thing I have a record of in this regard. I'm a little skeptical about it, although I think it's possible that he was a Puritanic supporter or lean-toward. A contemporary of his named Edward Bennett was reported in one source as being a Puritan. But I have my doubts about that, too. Three months after Nathaniel's arrival in the Virginia Colony, the first Council and House of Burgesses met at Jamestown and in 1621, Bennett, a rich merchant from London, received a patent for a plantation upon the condition of settling 200 immigrants. One hundred and twenty new residents arrived in February 1622 and settled along the James River at what was then called Warrosquoyacke, or sometimes Edward Bennett's Plantation. It seems to me that if Bennett were so preoccupied with making tons of money and running a plantation, he would have little time to be an effective Puritan. There may well have been Puritans among his group, probably seeking a more agreeable religious environment in an area somewhat untainted by religious control and/or persecution. What irony that the Puritans turned into holy terrors. That seems to always be the case with religious zealots. But I depress.

Same goes for Nathaniel Basse. It seems that Nathaniel was too busy running a plantation, serving in the early legislature, making trips to London and overseeing Thomas or Thomasine Hall to be a very effective Puritan. His focus, it seems to me, was on making money and rounding up recruits in England to come back to the colony. Too, in his leadership position I don't think he would have done anything to jeopardize his standing in the community and with the powers that be. Attendance in the Church of England was required by British law in Virginia as well as Ireland -- and perhaps other places. I'm sure he was in the Church of England every Sunday along with his family. If he were to skip church and not have a satisfactory reason, he could be fined. I have a record of two other men being fined for such an infraction. If he did have Puritan leanings, they would be on the side, I think. These days, everybody with community standing goes to either the First Baptist Church, the First Methodist Church, the First Presbyterian Church or perhaps All-Saints Hallelujah Episcopal Church. It's expected, and business is often discussed quietly in the halls or outside. Now they may watch Tammy Faye on TV, but that is just a diversion. I don't think it was any different in those days. Nathaniel went to the Church of England, and it was a perfect place for all sorts of conversations. He still could have consorted with Puritans, and probably did. As a leader, he would have to, it seems.

There is one thing about Nathaniel, though, that should be examined to see if it gave cause to possibly flee Virginia. This is all speculation, and it is what-if speculation. If Nathaniel were, indeed, a Puritan or a Puritan lean-toward, and it were found out, he could be in dangerous territory around 1650. Around that time all the Puritans were driven out of Virginia, and I guess they all ended up in Massachusetts, and again that is glorious irony. But guess where Nathaniel went. You got it: London, dying there in 1654.⁶

He was christened on 19 Dec 1589 at London, England.⁷ In 1608 Nathaniel's father, Humphrey Basse was a stockholder in the Virginia Company meaning that Nathaniel was likely to seek his fortune in the new venture of the company, Jamestown.

Nathaniel Basse settled at Bases Choice, 1619

In the early spring of 1608, Captain John Smith, driven by the necessity of obtaining food for the famishing colonists at Jamestown, crossed the river and obtained fourteen bushels of corn from a tribe of Indians called the Warrosquoyackes. Again in December of the same year, Captain Smith, while on his way to visit Powhatan on the York River, spent his first night with this same tribe. In the spring of 1610, the discouraged settlers who were departing Jamestown spent their first night there.

The Warrosquoyackes occupied a village near what is now known as Fergusson's Wharf and their hunting grounds extended along the James River about five miles and inland about twenty. They had a fighting strength of forty to fifty warriors. Captain Smith records that the king of this tribe later furnished him with two guides to accompany a soldier named Sicklemore in searching for the "lost colony" of Sir Walter Raleigh on Roanoke Island, to no avail. The king also warned Smith against the treachery of Powhatan.

The first English settlement in this area was by a group led by Captain Christopher Lawne. In late 1618/early 1619, he and seven associates received a patent from the London Company to establish a plantation in Virginia. On May 21, 1613, Captain Nathaniel Basse (1589-1654) and his wife Mary Jourdan (1591-1630) were married in London, Middlesex, England.

⁶"The Elusive Floyds," Donald Floyd (Griffin, Georgia), to MVW (Florida); MVW file, Margaret V. Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, Pinellas County, FL 33701. Hereinafter cited as "Donald Floyd."

⁷*17th Century Colonial Ancestors*. Hereinafter cited as *Colonial Ancestors*; unknown subject, *International Genealogical Index (IGI)* (unknown repository address: L.D.S. Library), Source Information: Batch No.: Dates: Source Call No.: Type: Printout Call No.: Type: <COLSPAN=7 src="http://www.familysearch.org/ark:/61903/3:1:3Q9M-CSK3-3?i=1571-1709_0394830_Film_6903690_Film">

After their first four children were born in London, the Basses came to Virginia on March 27, 1619. They arrived at Jamestown with one hundred other settlers on the Marygolde commanded by Captain Evans. They immediately settled near the mouth of a creek on the south side of the James which is still known as Lawne's Creek. Captain Lawne and Ensign Washer represented the settlement known as Lawne's Plantation in the first House of Burgesses on July 30, 1619. After Lawne died on November 11, 1619, the Company instructed the remaining associates that, in order to maintain their patent, new settlers must be transported to replace those who had died. They had until midsummer 1625 to bring the census up to 200. The Company also declared that the plantation was to be henceforth known as Isle of Wight. Had this not occurred, we might still be wrestling with the many spellings of Warrosquoyacke, the former name.

On November 4, 1620, the associates submitted a petition to the Company to reconfirm their patent for Isle of Wight Plantation and subsequently renamed Isle of Wight County. On April 2, 1621, Nathaniel Basse shipped to England on the Supply to recruit new colonists for the plantation. On November 21, 1621, Edward Bennett, a rich merchant of London, was granted a patent for a plantation upon the condition of settling two hundred immigrants. On the same day, Arthur Swaine, Nathaniel Basse and others applied for a patent to establish "Basses Choice" plantation and the patent was granted on January 30, 1622. This was a 5,000 (800?) acre site on the west side of the Warrosquoyacke (now Pagan) River near Smithfield, Isle of Wight County, now off State Route 10.

Sadly, while the Basses were in England, many of the settlers on the plantation were killed during the Good Friday Massacre (It being on Good Friday is a myth resulting from the double dating of the time. Actually it was 1622/23.)

The story that two of the Basse children were slain in the massacre is entirely bogus as proved by Stephaun Paul in his "polemic" **"I'm only aware of the legend of Humphrey dying in the massacre. I cannot emphasize this more strongly; the legend of Humphrey dying in the massacre is based on a misunderstanding of double dates. IT IS ABSOLUTELY FALSE! As I prove in the Polemic, it was impossible for Humphrey to have died in the massacre. He died the following year. There can be no doubt that Humphrey died a year-to-date from the massacre, probably in the Plague of the Abigail. I really don't want to see this error further perpetuated. Following is the proof as I've stated it in the Polemic:**

<http://web.me.com/depaul7/Polemic/Welcome.html>

It appears that Mary traveled with Nathaniel since their son Edward was born while they were in London. Their sons John and William may have been with them, but the fate of their other son, Anthony, is unknown. However, some miraculous escapes were reported in the south river settlements. Using guns, spades, axes, brickbats and whatever was available, a small company of thirty inhabitants fought off the Indians. After this, all Warrosquoyacke, from Hog Island down the river for fourteen miles, was abandoned. In the early fall, Sir George Yeardley commanded an expedition which drove out the Warrosquoyackes and the Nansemonds, burned their houses and took their corn. The proprietors of the abandoned settlements took heart, and were allowed to return. The census of 1624 showed 33 living at "Warwick Squeak" and 20 at Basses Choice. [www - Isle of Wight]

Upon returning to Virginia on the Furtherance, Nathaniel was referred to as Captain as well as "Gentleman." On February 16, 1623, on May 10, 1625, and again on October 16, 1629 he was elected to the House of Burgesses for Warrosquoyacke. Basse was commissioned to hold courts in 1623, to try all cases except capital offenses in 1626, and to be Justice of the Peace in 1632. He also was named Commander of Warrasquoyacke County in 1628. In 1631, he was appointed to the Governor's Council of Virginia. "In March 1631, Governor Harvey commissioned Nathaniel Basse to go to New England, Nova Scotia, or the West Indies and invite the inhabitants to Virginia, if any are so inclined, especially if those of New England dislike the coldness of the climate or the bareness of the soil, to offer them Delaware Bay. This is the last appearance of Nathaniel Basse in the Isle of Wight, and his fate is unknown." [Boddie, 92]

Given these choices, it seems logical that he might have gone to the warm climate of the Indies. He reportedly had in his possession a book "The Naturall and Moral Historie of the East and West Indies." Maybe this indicates that the area was of particular interest to him. It also is reported that the surname Bass is very common in the Caribbean, particularly on St. Kitts. There are records of names like Richard Bass and Nathaniel Bass on several of the islands in the 1600s. However, his brother, Samuel, was an early and prominent citizen of Massachusetts, having arrived in Roxbury about 1632. There is some evidence that he first may have gone with Samuel to Massachusetts, and then to the Indies. A 1654 disposition for his sisters in London indicates that he died in "Virginea" before August 30, 1654. He was buried in London on July 3, 1654/55.⁸ In 1608 Here is a historical sketch that serves to illuminate the times.

The first occupants of this county known to history were the Warrascoyack Indians. Their village was seated somewhere on Burwell's Bay, on James river, and their territory extended some five miles along the shore and twenty miles inland. Their fighting strength amounted to forty warriors. They were visited by John Smith in the summer of 1608, and fourteen bushels of corn were supplied by them to the famishing colonists at James- town. When Smith and his party set out in December, 1608, to visit Powhatan at Werewocomoco, on the York, they spent their first night at Warrascoyack. Here they left Michael Sicklemore, a valiant soldier, whom the Indian king promised to furnish with guides to search the country about Roanoke Island for the lost colony of Sir Walter Raleigh, and Samuel Collier, a boy, who was to learn the Indian language. The chief warned Smith to be on his guard against Powhatan, and acted in good faith towards Sicklemore(1) and Collier.(2) The first English settlement in Isle of Wight county was begun by Capt. Christopher Lawne and his associates, Sir Richard Worsley, knight baronet; Nathaniel Basse, gent., John Hobson, gent., Anthony Olevan, Richard Wiseman, Robt. Newland, Robert Gyner, and William Wellis.

(1) On April 27, 1619, Capt. Lawne arrived in person at Jamestown, with one hundred settlers, in a ship commanded by Capt. Evans. Sicklemore was furnished with two guides, penetrated to the Roanoke, but found no trace of the lost colony.

⁸Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail message from frenchwilliams@embarqmail.com to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

(2) Samuel Collier became proficient in the Indian language, and was accidentally killed by a white sentinel at Kecaughtan (Hampton) in 1622.

They settled near the mouth of a creek on the south side, still known as Lawne's creek. This creek, whose name is sometimes written "Lyon's Creek," was made the dividing line between the counties of Surry and Isle of Wight, as early as 1642. Capt. Lawne and Ensign Washer represented the settlement in the first House of Burgesses, which met at Jamestown July 30, 1619. All new settlements are unhealthy, and terrible mortality prevailed among these settlers. Capt. Lawne soon died, and on November 30, 1620, the London Company ordered that "in regard of the late mortality of the persons transported heretofore by the late Capt. Lawne, his associates be granted till midsummer, 1625, to make up the number of persons which they were disposed to bring over." They also declared that the plantation was to be henceforth called "Isle of Wight plantation" -- a name, however, not in use till many years later. It was derived very probably from the place of residence, in England, of the principal patentees. One of them was certainly from Isle of Wight, viz., Sir Richard Worsley, probably the Richard Worley, gent., who went to Virginia in 1608. He was knighted at White Hall February 8, 1611. On November 21, 1621, Edward Bennett, a rich merchant of London, obtained a patent for a plantation conditioned on settling two hundred emigrants. His associates in the patent were his brother, Robert Bennett, and nephew, Richard Bennett, Thomas Ayres,(1) Thomas Wiseman, and Richard Wiseman. And in February, 1622, the Sea Flower arrived with one hundred and twenty settlers, headed by Capt. Ralph Hamor, one of the council; Rev. William Bennett and George Harrison, kinsmen of Edward Bennett, and connected with him in his colonization scheme. Their place of settlement was called "Warrascoyack," and sometimes "Edward Bennett's plantation." On the day this patent was awarded, Arthur Swain, Capt. Nathaniel Basse and others undertook to establish another plantation in the same neighborhood. Capt. Basse came over in person, and his plantation was known as "Basse's Choice," and was situated on Warrascoyack river.

(1) Many of the kinsmen of Thomas Ayers, doubtless, came to Virginia. In Lower Norfolk County records we learn that "John Custis married the relict of Robert Eyres, dec'd" (1652, Feb. 16), and that "Sam. Chew, of Herrington, in Maryland, Esq.," married Anne, "daughter and sole heir of William Ayres, late of Nancemond" (12 Sept., 1672). ----- ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS 207 William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine, Vo., 7, No. 4 Apr., 1899). pp. 205-315. ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS I.⁹ He married Mary JORDAN (2279), daughter of Samuel JORDAN (5333), on 21

⁹"William and Mary Quarterly," *Various*, Isle of Wight County VA - Records; William and Mary College Qrtly, Vol. 7, No. 4, P. 205-249

Isle of Wight County Records

William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine, Vo., 7, No. 4
Apr., 1899). pp. 205-315.

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE
Quarterly Historical Magazine

Vol. VII. April, 1899. No. 4

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

I.

Historical Sketch

THE first occupants of this county known to history were the Warrascoyack Indians. Their village was seated somewhere on Burwell's Bay, on James river, and their territory extended some five miles along the shore and twenty miles inland. Their fighting strength amounted to forty warriors. They were visited by John Smith in the summer of 1608, and fourteen bushels of corn were supplied by them to the famishing colonists at Jamestown. When Smith and his party set out in December, 1608, to visit Powhatan at Werewocomoco, on the York, they spent their first night at Warrascoyack. Here they left Michael Sicklemore, a valiant soldier, whom the Indian king promised to furnish with guides to search the country about Roanoke Island for the lost colony of Sir Walter Raleigh, and Samuel Collier, a boy, who was to learn the Indian language. The chief warned Smith to be on his guard against Powhatan, and acted in good faith towards Sicklemore(1) and Collier.(2)

The first English settlement in Isle of Wight county was begun by Capt. Christopher Lawne and his associates, Sir Richard Worsley, knight baronet; Nathaniel Basse, gent., John Hobson, gent., Anthony Olevan, Richard Wiseman, Robt. Newland, Robert Gyner, and William Wellis. On April 27, 1619, Capt. Lawne arrived in person at Jamestown, with one hundred settlers, in a ship commanded by Capt. Evans. They

(1) Sicklemore was furnished with two guides, penetrated to the Roanoke, but found no trace of the lost colony.

(2) Samuel Collier became proficient in the Indian language, and was accidentally killed by a white sentinel at Kecaughtan (Hampton) in 1622.

206 WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

settled near the mouth of a creek on the south side, still known as Lawne's creek. This creek, whose name is sometimes written "Lyon's Creek," was made the dividing line between the counties of Surry and Isle of Wight, as early as 1642.

Capt. Lawne and Ensign Washer represented the settlement in the first House of Burgesses, which met at Jamestown July 30, 1619. All new settlements are unhealthy, and terrible mortality prevailed among these settlers. Capt. Lawne soon died, and on November 30, 1620, the London Company ordered that "in regard of the late mortality of the persons transported heretofore by the late Capt. Lawne, his associates be granted till midsummer, 1625, to make up the number of persons which they were disposed to bring over." They also declared that the plantation was to be henceforth called "Isle of Wight plantation" -- a name, however, not in use till many years later. It was derived very probably from the place of residence, in England, of the principal patentees. One of them was certainly from Isle of Wight, viz., Sir Richard Worsley, probably the Richar Worley, gent., who went to Virginia in 1608. He was knighted at White Hall February 8, 1611.

On November 21, 1621, Edward Bennett, a rich merchant of London, obtained a patent for a plantation conditioned on settling two hundred emigrants. His associates in the patent were his brother, Robert Bennett, and nephew, Richard Bennett, Thomas Ayres,(1) Thomas Wiseman, and Richard Wiseman. And in February, 1622, the Sea Flower arrived with one hundred and twenty settlers, headed by Capt. Ralph Hamor, one of the council; Rev. William Bennett and George Harrison, kinsmen of Edward Bennett, and connected with him in his colonization scheme. Their place of settlement was called "Warrascoyack," and sometimes "Edward Bennett's plantation."

On the day this patent was awarded, Arthur Swain, Capt. Nathaniel Basse and others undertook to establish another plantation in the same neighborhood. Capt. Basse came over in person, and his plantation was known as "Basse's Choice," and was situated on Warrascoyack river.

(1) Many of the kinsmen of Thomas Ayers, doubtless, came to Virginia. In Lower Norfolk County records we learn that "John Custis married the relict of Robert Eyres, dec'd" (1652, Feb. 16), and that "Sam. Chew, of Herrington, in Maryland, Esq.," married Anne, "daughter and sole heir of William Ayres, late of Nancemond" (12 Sept., 1672).

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

207

The houses were building, when, in March, 1622, occurred the great massacre by the Indians. In the course of a very few hours one-fourth of the white population perished. The mortality in the plantations in Warrascoyack reached a total of fifty-three. Some miraculous escapes are recorded. The Indians came to one Baldwin's house and wounded his wife, but Baldwin, by repeatedly firing his gun so frightened them as "to save both her, his house, himself and divers others." At about the same time they appeared at the house of Master Harrison, half a mile from Baldwin's, where was staying Thomas Hamor, brother of Capt. Ralph Hamor, who also lived near by. The Indians pretended that they came to escort the captain to their king, who was hunting in the woods. The message was sent to the captain, but, he not coming as they expected, they set fire to a tobacco house, and murdered the white people as they rushed out of Harrison's building in order to quench the flames. Many were killed, but Thomas Hamor was saved by a chance delay. He remained to

finish a letter, which he was engaged in writing. After concluding the letter, he went out, but seeing the commotion, and receiving an arrow in his back, he returned and barricaded the house. Then the savages set the house on fire, whereupon Hamor, with twenty-two others, fled to Baldwin's house, leaving their own burning.

In the meantime, Capt. Ralph Hamor was in utmost peril. He was on his way to meet the king, who had invited him, and came upon the savages chasing some of the whites. He returned to his new house, where, armed with only spades, axes, and brick-bats, he and his company defended themselves till the enemy gave up the siege and departed. At the house of Capt. Basse, however, in the same neighborhood, everybody was slain. Basse, who was in England at the time, escaped.

The consternation occasioned by the massacre was such that the determination was taken to abandon all the plantations but seven or eight, viz., Jamestown, the settlements on the opposite side of the river (in Surry), Kecoughtan, Newports News, Southampton Hundred (including Hog Island), Flowerdieu Hundred, Sherly Hundred, and the plantation of Mr. Samuel Jordan, at Jordan's Point. All Warrascoyack, from Hog Island down the river shore for fourteen miles, was abandoned. But vigorous efforts were made by the authorities to dislodge the Indians from the locality. In the fall succeeding the massacre

an expedition was sent out under the command of Sir George Yeardley against the savages down the river. He drove out the Nansemonds and Warrascoyacks, burned their houses, and took their corn.

On May 21, 1623, a commission was given to Capt. Roger Smith, who had served twelve or thirteen years in the wars in the Netherlands, to erect a fort on the shore opposite to Tindall's Shoals, where Capt. Samuel Each had a block-house in building.

In the summer of 1623 the governor sent companies in all directions against the Indians. Capt. William Tucker, of Kecoughtan (Hampton), commanded the expedition against the Nansemonds and Warrascoyacks. On the same day, August 2, 1623, all of these commands fell upon the Indians, slaughtered many, cut down their corn, and burnt their houses. A week after, Capt. Tucker went down a second time against the Nansemonds. The proprietors of the abandoned settlements took heart and were allowed to return to them. The census of February 6, 1623-'24, showed as then living at "Warwicke Squeake" and "Basse's Choice" fifty-three persons; twenty-six had died "since April last." Disease, in fact, proved more destructive to the settlers than everything else combined. Four-fifths of the colonists, including the new emigrants who arrived, died from this cause in the interval between 1619 and 1625. The census of 1624-'25 showed but thirty-one persons alive at Warrascoyack and Basse's Choice. Among those who had died were Mr. Robert Bennett (brother of Edward Bennett), who had come to the colony, and the first minister, Mr. William Bennett, doubtless one of the same family.

After 1625 the colony took a new and more prosperous turn, Richard Bennett and his brother, Philip Bennet, came over also to see about the interests of their uncle, Edward, and their own interests. Capt. John Hobson now arrived, and Basse, Richard Bennett and Hobson were made members of the council. In 1624 the representative from "Basse's Choice" was John Pollington. In 1629 Warrascoyack (which term came to embrace Basse's Choice and all the other settlements in the Isle of Wight) were Capt. Nathaniel Basse, Richard Bennett, Robert Savin and Thomas Jordan. In March following, they were John Upton, John Atkins, Robert Savin and Thomas Burges. In September, 1632, they were Thomas Jordan and William Hutchinson. In Feb-

ruary, 1632-'33, they were John Upton and Robert Savin. All freemen had the right of suffrage till 1671.

In 1634, the plantations in Virginia were divided into eight counties, and "Warrascoyack" was one of these. In 1635 the census showed five hundred and twenty-two persons in the county. In 1658 the tithables amounted to six hundred and seventy-three, which indicated a population of two thousand and nineteen. In 1637 the name of the county was changed to Isle of Wight. The same year the county of New Norfolk was formed out of Elizabeth City county, which extended on both sides of the river. New Norfolk being divided soon into Lower and Upper Norfolk (Nansemond) counties, acts were passed in 1639-'40 and 1642-'43 to determine their respective boundaries. Isle of Wight county was declared to begin at Lawne's Creek, from thence down the river to the plantation of Richard Hayes, formerly belonging to John Howard, including the said plantation, from thence to extend into the woods southerly to the plantation of William Norvell and Robert Pitt, including the said plantations and families. In 1656, the inhabitants of Terrascoe Neck and the "Ragged Islands," formerly in Nansemond, were added to Isle of Wight. Finally, in 1674, "to settle the long disputes which had arisen between the inhabitants of Isle of Wight and of Nansemond," because of the uncertainty attending the true courses of the dividing creeks and branches, the General Assembly enacted that "a southwest by south line be run from the river side at Hayes' plantation (including that plantation in Isle of Wight) to the creek at or near the plantation called Norvell's Oyster Bank, thence up the creek to Col. Pitt's Creek, thence southwest half a point westerly indefinitely extended, provided, nevertheless, that the house and cleared grounds of Capt. Thomas Godwin, who hath been an ancient inhabitant of Nansemond county, be deemed in the county of Nansemond, anything in this act to the contrary notwithstanding." Till March, 1642-'43, the county had but one parish. Rev. Thomas Faulkner was the minister. In that year, it was divided into two, known as the Upper and Lower Parishes, the former extending from Lawne's Creek to the creek on the eastern side of the bay (Pagan's), dividing the plantations of Samuel Davis and Joseph Cobbs, and the latter from Pagan's Point, upon the bay, including all the southerly side of the main river.

In 1680, Mr. Robert Parke was minister in the Upper parish,

and Mr. William Hodsden minister in the Lower. In 1700-1719, Rev. Andrew Monro was minister of the Upper parish. In 1724, Rev. Alexander Forbes, who came to Virginia in 1710, was minister of the Upper parish. He described it as extending on the river twenty-one miles (?), and reaching back sixty miles to the North Carolina line. The number of assessed persons was then seven hundred. The value of his living was L80 currency, or L65 sterling, paid with sixteen thousand pounds of tobacco, "which in this parish very often doth not produce half that sum." There were then private schools in the parish -- no public. In the same year Thomas Baylie was minister of the Lower parish. He was formerly minister of St. John's church, Baltimore county, Md., and came to Virginia in 1719. His conduct was drunkenly and disorderly; quite a contrast to his colleague -- Alexander Forbes. He described his parish as eight miles on the river side and twenty (?) in breadth. It had four hundred families. He officiated at the mother church, and at the chapel, nineteen miles from the former, as well as at Chuckatuck, in Nansemond county. His church was decently provided with furniture, but

it had no font, and he had no surplice. His salary was from L50 to L70, according to the rise or fall of tobacco, in which he was paid. There were in this parish four small public shools, taught by a Mr. Hurst, Mr. Irons, Mr. Gills and Mr. Reynolds.

In 1725-'26, Rev. Mr. Barlow was minister of the Upper parish, then in 1729 Rev. John Gammill was minister. In 1734, the Legislature erected into a separate parish all the country south of the Black Water river, and called it Nottoway parish, and this parish was made into Southampton county in 1748. Such parts of the parishes of "Warwick Squeak" (Upper parish) and Newport as were north of the Black Water were formed into one, and named "Newport parish." In 1736, William Bidgood was clerk of the Upper church, and Joseph Weston clerk of the "Brick church," which seems to show that the present St. Luke's, near Smithfield, was originally in the Lower parish. Rev. John Camm (afterwards President of William and Mary College) succeeded Rev. John Gammill in 1745, and then followed Rev. John Reid from March 8, 1746, to April, 1757; Rev. Mr. Milner from February, 1766, to May 3, 1770; Rev. Henry John Burges(1) from

(1) In the churchyard at Williamsburg is a tombstone to the memory of "Ann Burges, wife of Rev. Henry John Burges, of Isle of Wight, who died Dec. 25, 1771, in giving birth to an infant daughter."

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

211

1773 to 1776; Rev. William Hubbard, who died on the Glebe in 1802; Rev. Samuel Butler, who officiated occasionally in 1780, and Rev. William G. H. Jones, who officiated from 1826 to 1832.

To this list of ministers might be added the names of Robert Bracewell, who died in Isle of Wight about 1667, and of Robert Dunster, who died in 1656.

The Southside counties had many dissenters among their population. Col. Byrd attributed the fact to the low grade of tobacco grown in those counties, which rendered the support of a competent clergy difficult and precarious. At an early day a considerable Puritan party developed, at the head of whom were the brothers, Richard and Philip Bennett, who had settled in Nansemond county. Upon their invitation New England sent to Virginia three Congregational ministers, but Governor Berkeley gave them a dose of the medicine, which they had long been administering to Episcopalians in their own country. He banished them from the colony, and got the Legislature to enact a law against all non-conformists. The consequence of this ill-advised

policy was that there was a considerable emigration to Maryland. From Lower Norfolk county William Durand and Dr. Thomas Harrison, who were in charge of the churches there, carried off quite a number of prominent families -- Lloyds, Marshes, Prestons, etc. They settled along the river Severn, in Maryland, and, after the Puritan spirit, soon tried to dictate to Lord Baltimore.

Richard Bennett, however, though obtaining large tracts of land in Maryland, lived most of his life and died in Nansemond, managing to keep in some sort of conformity with the Church of England, for Puritanism did not necessarily mean Congregationalism, or severance from the Church. His grandson, Richard Bennett, was the richest man in Maryland. His uncle, Edward Bennett, of London, left two daughters, one of whom, Mary, married, first, Thomas Bland, of London; second, Luke Cropley. The other, Silvestra, married Major Nicholas Hill, who came to Virginia, and was one of the leading men of Isle of Wight county. Mary, a daughter of the first-named daughter, Mary Bland-Cropley, married James Day of Isle of Wight, Va., and Mary, a daughter of Silvestra Hill, the other daughter of Edward Bennett, married John Jennings, son of the clerk of the same name.

After the restoration of King Charles II, the Quakers had a strong following, especially in the Upper parish. William Ed-

mundson, a friend of George Fox, visited this neighborhood in 1671, and met General Richard Bennett, "who," he said, "received the truth and died in the same, leaving two friends his executors." The able lawyer and preacher, Thomas Story, of Philadelphia, came in 1699 and 1705, and held many "open and comfortable meetings" in this and other parts of Virginia, viz., at Edward Thomas' house on Queen Creek, York county; at Daniel Akehurst's and Thomas Cary's, on Warwick river; at Robert Perkins', at Martin's Hundred; at John Bates', at Skimeno, York county, and at Chuckatuck, where he met with "his ancient friend," Elizabeth Webb, of Gloucestershire, England, and John Copeland, who at his request showed him his mutilated right ear, being "one of the first of those who had their ears cut by the Presbyterians, or Independents, of New England." (1) There was a yearly meeting at "Levy Neck" (still known by that name), and the chief Quakers were Dr. John Grove, William Bressy, and Thomas Jordan.

Col. Joseph Bridger, Major Thomas Taberer, and General Richard Bennett, and many others of the leading men sympathized with the Quakers, and while the Quakers were sometimes fined for non-conformity, they had their own meeting-houses and practically their own way. After 1699 their houses were regularly licensed, and there is in the Gazette for 1736 an address signed by the leading Quakers of the Colony in which they admit they had nothing to complain of except their being taxed to support the State, or Episcopal Church.

In their address to Lord Botetourt in 1768 they spoke of the "particular indulgence and protection they had enjoyed during the reign of King George III.," which had impressed their minds "with the warmest sense of duty and gratitude."

The records which follow show that the emigrants to Isle of Wight were largely people from Bristol, where, in the civil wars, the Cavaliers were very strong. For attempting to surrender that place to Prince Rupert in 1643, Robert Yeamans and Henry Boucher lost their lives. The former's son, Sir John, emigrated to Barbadoes, and subsequently established a colony in South Carolina. Sir John's nephew, Joseph Woory, lived and died in Isle of Wight county. In 1666, Woory accompanied Robert Sanford on a voyage of discovery along the coast of Carolina.

(1) Friends' Library.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

213

In 1653, soon after Virginia yielded to the authority of the Parliament, the two representatives from the Isle of Wight, John Hammond and James Pyland, were expelled from the House of

Burgesses -- the one because of his "scandalous" character, and "being a frequent disturber of the peace of the country," and the other because of his "abetting Thomas Woodward," a noted loyalist, in his "mutinous and rebellious declaration" against the Parliament. John Hammond, really a fine character, removed to Maryland, where he was a friend of Lord Baltimore, and was the author of "Leah and Rachell," a most interesting tract on the relations of Virginia and Maryland. Woodward, for whom Pyland suffered, had been assay-master of the mint to Charles I., patented in Isle of Wight and in 1665 was appointed the first surveyor of the Province of North Carolina. He appears to have had at least two sons, John Woodward, who died in England, and Thomas, of Virginia.

In 1667, the fleet of merchant ships from Bristol, which traded with the Southside, was suddenly attacked at the mouth of the Elizabeth river by four Dutch men of war, and twenty of the vessels were destroyed. The damage would have been greater, had not Major-General Bennett, in command of the Southside

counties, arrived on the scene, and driven off the invaders.

In 1671, the Dutch came again, with further disastrous results, to the Bristol ships, which, however, were revenged in the end in the seizure of New York by the English.

In Bacon's Rebellion (1676) Isle of Wight was the scene of constant foray. Col. Joseph Bridger⁽¹⁾ headed the followers of Berkeley, and John Jennings, clerk of the court, was the most noted of Bacon's adherents. He was banished from the colony, but died before the decree could be carried into effect.

Among the interesting places, the plantation of Edward Bennett deserves notice. His personal share of land appears to have been fifteen hundred acres of land, and by a deed recorded in the secretary's office, dated April 8, 1663, this land was divided between his daughters, Silvestra, the wife of Major Nicholas Hill, and Mary, the wife of Thomas Bland. Silvestra's share

(1) Sir John Berry names among the eminent sufferers by Bacon's Rebellion Col. Joseph Bridger, "a very Resolute gentleman, who, though forced to fly in the heat of war from his own countrie, yet on his Return was very Active and Instrumental in reducing to their obedience the South parte of James River," &c.

was the upper moiety, and began at a locust post on the river side, and ran for length three hundred and twenty poles southwest into the woods, and for breadth three hundred and seventy-five poles up the river to a marked tree in a valley near a place called "The Rocks" (still known as such). Mary's share was the lower moiety. It began at the locust post on the river side, ran down the river by Felgate's Island, and bounded on Pollington's Point (Day's Point?), three lines of Peter Hull's land to a branch of Hutchinson's Creek. Maj. Hill, in 1674, left this land to his son, George Hill, after the death of his wife, Silvestra. Silvestra Hill by her will left 550 acres of this land to Mary Baker, wife of Major Henry Baker.

Col. Nathaniel Bacon, Sen., had a plantation near by, which fell to his heiress, Abigail Smith, who married Major Lewis Burwell, of Gloucester county. By degrees the Burwells absorbed much of the land in the neighborhood. In the Virginia Gazette, about the latter part of the last century, is an advertisement, which describes the Burwell estate as "ten miles below Hog Island, containing thirty-five hundred acres, whereon are three plantations, cleared and in good order for cropping, sufficient to work thirty-five hands. On the Manor plantation is a handsome brick house, sixty by twenty-six feet, two stories high, well finished and wainscoted, with two brick houses forty feet by twenty, barns, stables and every other necessary house, a handsome garden completely laid off, a hundred and five yards by seventy-five. On the three plantations there are about seventeen hundred apple trees, and a great variety of other fruit. Near the said land is a tract containing eighty-five acres, with a well-accustomed mill thereon, and as fine a stream as any in Virginia."

"Basse's Choce" originally called for three hundred acres, but its acreage was really four hundred, of which two hundred and fifty acres was marsh land. Mr. Peter Knight, who may have married one of Basse's daughters, patented one hundred and fifty acres of the same in 1640, and two hundred and fifty-five in 1643. It was situated on the east side of Pagan Bay. Peter Knight sold the tract to John Bland, the eminent London merchant, and in 1659-'60 the General Assembly ordered Mr. William Drummond as agent of "the coheirs of Basse" to pay Theodorick Bland, of Westover, brother and agent of John Bland, twenty-five hundred pounds of tobacco damages awarded in some suit probably affecting this land. In 1675, Giles Bland, son and

agent of John Bland, sold "Basse's Choice" to Major Thomas Taberer; and Sarah Bland, wife of John, relinquished her dower. In a patent to Taberer in 1681, it was described as "beginning at ye mouth of Polentine (Pollington) (1) swamp, which divides ye sd Taberer's land from ye land of Mr. James Day, thence up the said swamp north 32 degrees west, 80 poles to a locust saplin in John

Munger's line, then by Munger's south west 92 poles to a white oak near ye head of a small gutt, thence down ye sd gutt south 25 degrees westerly 60 poles to Hutchinson's (2) creek, and thence by various courses down ye sd creek and ye Crosse creek to ye Maine Pagan creeke, then northeast by ye Maine creek side 120 poles to ye mouth of said Taberer's own creeke, then up that creek and Jones' hole creek to a locust post in ye marsh, and then north 53 degrees west 40 poles to ye first station."

Major Taberer left the estate to his grandson, Joseph Copeland, probably a relative of John Copeland visited by Thomas Story. "Warrascoyack River" was changed to "New Town Haven Creek," thence to "Pagan Creek," "Pagan" being originally the name of a point of land.

Smithfield was laid out in 1752 by Col. Arthur Smith; and Robert Burwell, Arthur Smith, William Hodsden, James Baker, James Dunlop, James Arthur and Joseph Bridger were the first trustees.

Among the more interesting personages, besides those already mentioned may be named Capt. John Upton, who came to Virginia in 1622, aged twenty-six, and served as a member of the House of Burgesses, and as Mint Master General; Capt. John Moon, Henry King and Mrs. Elizabeth Smith, all three of whom established free schools; Col. Robert Pitt, of Bristol, a member of the council; Col. James Powell, Major George Fawdon, Lt.-Col. John George, Major Henry Baker, Major Nicholas Smith and George Hardy.

The value of real estate in Isle of Wight for 1895 was \$1,457,-043; value of personalty, \$498,420; number of white inhabitants, 6,130; colored 5,183. The soil is generally sandy and

(1) Feb. 16, 1623-'24, John Pollentin, Rachel Pollentin, and Margaret Pollentin were resident at Warricksqueake. In 1626, John Pollington is names has having a patent for 600 acres in Isle of Wight, not not located. In 1624, he was a delegate for Basse's Choice.

(2) William Hutchinson, in 1624-'25, was living at Elizabeth City. He came in 1618. In 1632 he represented Warrascoyack in the House of Burgesses.

216 WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY

thin, but in some parts exceedingly rich. Smithfield has a population of about 1200, and does a large business. It has long been celebrated for its "hams," which commanded the highest price in the market. Windsor, a station on the Norfolk & Western Railroad, is a place of some importance. The courthouse is about eight miles from Windsor, and seven miles from Smithfield. Isle Of Wight has an area of two hundred and ninety-two and one-third square miles, and the land has an average assessed value of \$7.50 per acre.

II.

MASSACRED BY THE INDIANS ON GOOD FRIDAY, MARCH 22, 1622.
TOTAL KILLED IN VIRGINIA, 347, OUT OF A POPULATION OF 1,240

KILLED AT MR. EDWARD BENNETT'S PLANTATION.

Master Th. Brewood, his wife, his childe, Robert Gray, John Griffin, Ensigne Harrison, John Costard, David Barry, Thomas

Sheppard, Henry Price, Robert -----, Edward Jolby, Richard -----, 2 servants, Thomas Ferris, George Cole, Remember Michel, ----- Bullocke, Richard Chandler, Henry Moore, Nicholas Hunt, John Corderoy, Richard Cockwell, John Howard, Mistris Harrison, Mary Dawks, Alice Jones, Thomas Cooke, Philip Worth, Mathew, a maid, Francis Winder, Thomas Conly, Richard Woodward, Humfrey Copen, Thomas Bacon, Euan Watkins, Richard

Lewis, Edward Towse, John Scotchmore, Edward Turner, Mr. John Pountis his men, Edward Brewster, Lieutenant Pierce his men, Thomas Holland, Capt. Whittaker's man, Annie English, Rebecca -----, Master Prowse, Hugh -----, John -----, Edward -----, Mistris Chamberlin, Pamel, a maid, Humfrey Sherbrooke, John Wilkins, John Burton. -- Total, 53.

A LIST OF NAMES OF THE LIVING IN VIRGINIA FEBRUARY
THE 16, 1624, TOTAL, 1,170
AT WARWICK SQUEAK.

John Batt, Henry Pinffe, Wassell Weblin, Anthony Read, Frances Woodson, Henry Phillips, Peter Collins, Chr. Reinold's, Edward Mabin, John Maldman, Thomas Collins, George Rushmore, Thomas Spencer, George Clarke, Rich. Bartlett, Francis Banks, John Jenkins, Thomas Jones, William Denham; Peter, Anthony, Fransc, Margrett, netros; John Bennett, Nicholas Skinner, John Atkins, John Pollentin, Rachel Pollentine, Margrett Pollentin, Mary, a maid, Henry Woodward, Thomas Sawyer, Thomas, a boye. -- Total 33, including 4 negroes.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS.

217

AT BASSE CHOISE.

Capt. Nathaniel Basse, Samuel Basse, Benjamine Simes, Thomas Sherwood, Benjamine Handcleare, William Barnard, John Shelly, Nathaniell Moper, Natha. Gammon, Margrett Giles, Richard Longe, vx Longe, infans Longe, Richard Evans, William Newman, John Army, Peter Langden, Henry, Andrew Rawley, Petter. -- Total, 20

MUSTER OF THE INHABITANTS IN VIRGINIA. TAKEN IN 1625.
TOTAL, 1,095. THE MUSTER OF THE INHABITANTS
AT WARISCOYACK, TAKEN THE 7TH OF
FEBRUARY, 1625.

The Muster of Mr. Edward Bennett's Servants.

Henry Pinke came in the London Marchant 1619, John Bate in the Addam 1621, Peter Collins in the Addam 1621, Wassell Webbling, Antonio, a negro, in the James 1621, Christopher Reynold's, Luke Chappman, Edward Maybank, in the John & Grancis 1622, John Attkins, William Denum, Francis Banks, in the Guifte 1623, Mary, a negro woman, in the Margrett & John 1622.

A MUSTER OF THE INHABITANTS OF BASSE CHOYSE.

Capt. Nathaniell Basse his Muster.

Nathaniell Basse, aged 35, in the Furtherance 1622.
William Barnard, aged 21, in the Furtherance 1622.
Edward Wigge, aged 22, in the Abigall 1621.

The Muster of Thomas Phillipps.

Thomas Phillipps, aged 26, in the William and Thomas 1618.
Elizabeth Phillipps, aged 23, in the Sea Flower 1621/

The Muster of Thomas Bennett.

Thomas Bennett, aged 38, in the Neptune 1618.
Mary Bennett, aged 18, in the Southampton 1622.
Roger Heford, aged 22, in the Returne 1623.

Benjamin Simes,(1), aged 33 in the -----.

(1) Benjamin Syms afterwards settled in Elizabeth City Co., and by his will in 1634 provided for the first free school in America. The funds are still used to conduct the High School in Hampton.

218 WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY

Richard Longe(Lawne ?) His Muster
Richard Longe, aged 33, in the -----.
Alice Longe, aged 23, in the London Marchant 1620.
Robert Longe, a child borne in Virginia.

Richard Evand's His Muster
Richard Evand's, aged 35. in the Neptune 1618.

William Newman His Muster.
William Newman, aged 35, in the Furtherance 1622.
John Army, aged 35, in the Furtherance 1622.

Henrie Woodward His Muster.
Henrie Woodward, aged 30, in the -----.
John Browninge, aged 22, in the Abigall 1621.

Servants.
Ambrose, aged 25, in the Marmiducke 1621.
Peeter, aged 19, in the Margett and John 1620.
Total muster living at Basse's and Warrascoyack, 31.

A LIST OF THE DEAD IN WARISCOYACKE 1624 (25).
John Selley, Nathaniell Haukworth [or Hankworth],
Thomas Sherwood, Benjamin Handcleare, Margrett Synes;
Nathaniell, Thomas, servants; of Mr. Bennett's men slayne by the
Indians, five.

PATENTS GRANTED, ETC., 1626. (1)
Warosquoiacke Plantation contayneing downe ward's from
Hog Island xiiijteen miles by the River side, in weh are these
patents following, vizt.:

John Carter, 100 acres,	
Christopher Daniel, 100,	
Adam Dixon, 100,	
John Berry, 100,	
Thomas Winter, 100	By Pattent.
John Pollington, 600	
Thomas Poole, 100,	
Anthony Barham,(2) 100,	
Capt. Natha. Basse, 300, planted,	
Giles Jones, 150, planted,	

(1) From Hotten's "Lists of Emigrants to America."

(2) Anthony Barham was member of House of Burgesses for Mulberry Island, March, 1629-'30. An abstract of his will has been published in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register. Among other legatees are his mother Bennett, and brother-in-law, Richard Bennett. Charles Barham was justice of Surry county about 1674. See Virginia Magazine, Vol. III, p. 278.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

219

III. ABSTRACTS OF IMPORTANT DEEDS, WILLS AND ORDERS, ON RECORD IN CLERK'S OFFICE OF ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY.

1. Deed and Will Book, transcribed from the old records in
1733 by James Baker, Clerk.

Will of Timothy Fern X mark, dated this last of January,

1651: 200 acres to eldest son, 100 to youngest son; my wife to have the use of the 300 acres, till sons of age; mentions a daughter; lands in Rappahannock to the 3 children; one steer for my funeral; friends Daniel Boucher and John Munger overseers of my will.

Justinian Cooper to Alice Bennett, widow, 150 acres for a cow, calf and one bbl. of corn. 19 Charles I.

Will of Roger Bagnall X mark, Oct. 19, 1647: Land and personalty; names wife Rebecca and son James; cows, corn, tobacco, etc.

Will of Richard Death, dated March 3, 1647: Realty and personalty.

Will of Edward Welmoth, dated Feb. 15, 1647: Names wife Annis, dau. Francis, son John; John Jackson and George Corberaft overseers.

Capt. John Upton, for love and affection, to Christopher Benn (cooper), 50 acres.

Will of Anthony Jones, dated Aug. 16, 1649: Legacy to brother William Jones, if he comes to this country; dau. in-law Ann Smith, the plantation I know live on; sister Catherine Jones 5L sterl.; Thomas and John Smith 2000 acres on The Blackwater, as recorded at Jamestown; wife Ann sole and whole exor. Witnesses: Robert Watson, Edwd Chetwyne, Thomas Braser.

Will of Edward Chetwyne, dated Sept. 7, 1649: Legatees James House, Thomas Attwell, Christopher Holms, John Young, Robert Watson, Henry Pitt, John Inglish, Nicholas Aldred, Mrs. Anne Jones, and all her children; Robert Watson and Henry Pitt, exors. Witnesses: Thomas Brook, and Gulielm. Ruffin.

Will of Wm. Jewry, dated June 1, 1651: Legatees, Elizabeth Penny, dau. of Richard Penny, Robert Ruffin, son of Wm. Ruffin, John Arran, son of John Arran. Witnesses, Richard Penny, R. P. [his mark], William Ruffin X R. [mark], William West-ray [mark].

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

Will of Robert Watson, dated Nov., 6, 1651: Names wife and brothers John and James.

Will of John Vasser, dated Jan'y 16, 1650: "I, John Vasser, the unprofitable servant of God," etc.: Mr. James Pyland and Thomas Walter overseers; children, John Vasser (eldest son), Mildred, Peter and Ann Vasser, eldest dau. Elizabeth Vasser. Witnesses, John Lewis, Richard Ames, Thomas Walter.

Will of John Valentine, planter, X mark: Names eldest son James, duas. Ann and Elizabeth, wife Elizabeth.

Will of John Stiles X mark, Oct. 26, 1652: 200 a. and personalty to son John; godson John Murry; gaddau. Elizabeth Johnson; goddau. Joane Maddin; wife Elizabeth Stiles; friend Humphrey Clark overseer of will.

Deed of Capt. John Vpton and Margaret his wife, M. V., X her mark.

Will of Capt. John Vpton, dated 16 Jan., 1651 -- proved Dec. 16, 1652: "I, Capt. John Vpton, of the Isle of Wight county, in Virginia." To eldest son John Vpton, all that tract of land being part of it in the tenure of John King, James Bagnall, Nicholas Morris, etc., containing in the whole eight hundred and fifty acres, and if the said John Vpton dies before he comes to the age of one and twenty, then I give and bequeath the said land until William, Elizabeth, Sarah and Margaret Vnderood, to be divided as followeth, &c., To said son a mare fole and one cow with calf, being upon the probate of my will sett apart for him

with their increase to be equally shared amongst my daughters-in-

law Elizabeth, Sarah and Margaret Vnderwood. "To William Vnderwood, Elizabeth, Sarah and Margaret Vnderwood 1500 acres near Ambrose Bennett's and allways reserved out of this land Three Hundred acres with Mr. Robert Bracewell hath. To William, Elizabeth, Sarah and Margaret Vnderwood all my land at Rappahannock, &c. All the rest of my Estate, Goods, Chattels, servants, &c., to whatsoever here in Virginia after my Debts, Legacies and funerall rights paid and discharged I give &c. to my Loving and Welbeloved Wife Margaret Vpton, whom I constitute &c. sole executrix of this my last Will and Testament." Loving friends, George ffawdon, William Vnderwood and James Taylor, clerk, my overseers to see my will performed. To each of my overseers a ring 20 shilling sterling apiece. Likewise or-

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS.

221

dains Ann Williamson, the wife of James Williamson equal sharer in my land at Rappahannock with these above named. (1) To Elizabeth Vnderwood one pillion and one pillion cloth at day of marriage. Proved by the oaths of William Vnderwood and Edward Skinner. Witnesses, John Gallins X mark, James Taylor.

Will of Joseph Cobbs X mark, March, 1653: Wife Elizabeth 300 a. and personalty; sons Benjamin Cobbs and Pharaoh; dau. Elizabeth Cobbs. Witnesses, Joseph Dunn, John Childs.

Will of Christopher Reynolds, dated May 1, 1654: Children, Christopher, John, Abbasha, Elizabeth, Jane, child my wife now

goeth with, Richard; wife Elizabeth; a yearling heifer to George Rivers; to son Christopher all my lands on southerly side of the swamp that Richard Jordan now lives upon.

Will of Joshua Taberer: To brother Thomas Taberer all the estate left me by my father William Taberer of the county of Darby, he bestowing as a legacy to my brother William Taberer of the co. of Derby, and the rest of my father's kindred 10 pds. sterling or the value thereof out of my said Estate in England. After my brother Thomas' death, his only dau. and heir, Ruth Taberer to be possessed with all my aforesaid Estate in England; to said Ruth 4 female cattle in Virginia; and the remainder of my whole estate in Virginia to my brother Thomas Taberer. Witnesses: William Lewer, Francis Higgins.

Margaret, relict of Lt. Col. John Upton, deed to Francis

Slaughter 850 a. March 8, 1655.

Will of Hunphrey Clark, Cooper, dated M'rch 3, 1655: Wife Jane, son John, daughter-in-law Jane Brunt. "I do give unto my two kinswomen Jane How and Mary Clarke each of them one Cow Calf to be delivered this Fall; and whereas Mary Clark is a covenant Servant for seven years, I do remitt and give her Three years of her time. Then I do desire and appoint that my servants shall be kept together and that half of the Benefit of

(1) James Williamson married Ann Underwood and removed from Isle of Wight, with the Underwoods, to Rappahannock. John Hammond dedicated to him his tract "Leah and Rachel." It was a tradition that his daughter married William Ball, jr., (see Hayden's Va. Gen., p. 53), and this is proved by a case in Barradall's reports, which recites that "William Ball was gr.son and heir of the mortgagor James Williamson, merchant, residing in Virginia, who mortgaged estate in England by deeds dated 19th and 20th Nov., 1655."

222

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

their Labours shall be made use of for the maintenance of my son John to school; legacies to Thomas Holmes, John Williams, and William Godwin; Robert Bird overseer.

Will of Robert Dunster, recorded May 17, 1656: To wife all cattle, household goods, wearing apparel and books to brother

Leonard Dunster half a crown and to his son William Dunster half a crown; desires to be buried in "the usual burying place in this county."

John Askue [mark] agrees for 2500 lb. tobacco to sell his place with all of its apple, peach and cherry trees, May 10, 1655.

Will of John Oliver, dated April 19, 1652: proved Jan. 16, 1658: Wife Ellen, two daus. and son John; James Pyland and Robert Bird overseers of his will; witnesses, James Pyland, John Burton and John Renney [mark].

Will of "Capt. John Moon, of Isle of Wight county, in Virginia, and Born at Berry, near Gosport, in ye parish of Stoak in Hampshire in England:" To wife Prudence Moon (my debts being paid) one-fourth part of all my movable estate (that is to say) the same to be equally divided between my wife and three daughters Sara, Susanna and Mary Moon. To eldest dau. Sarah Moon my dwelling House near Bethlehem, with ye land and houses from Pagan creek &c.; To second dau. Susannah Moon all the land that Samuel Nichols now liveth on on the Easterly side of Bethlehem Creek, that land now named Bethsaida; To Mary Moon another daughter, all lands and houses wh lyeth on Red Pt. &c. My brew house and land at James Town to be sold for the payment of my debts. Various other devises; Legacies -- "to Joane Garland my wives dau., to William Wilson my wives son, to Peter Garland my wives son-in-law." His land in England by Berry and Alvenstoak in Hampshire, near Gosport and Portsmouth, mortgaged to Mr. Owen Jennings for 200 pounds sterling, to be redeemed if not to be sold outright and the proceeds divided between my three daus. 5 pds sterling to the poor of Berry and 5 pds to the poor of Alvenstoak, the interest thereof to be given to the poor in each place yearly. "Also I give and bequeath four ffemale cattle to remain for a Stock forever for poor Fatherless Children that hath nothing left them to bring them up, and for Old People past their labour or Lane People that are Destitute in this lower parish of the Isle of Wight county; the ffemale from time to time to be disposed of to those that do

keep such persons, to have the milk, provided that those that have them be careful of them they receive and of their Increase. My will is that all ye ffemale Increase from time to time be and remain for a Stock for this use, and the male cattle and old cows to be disposed of for clothing and Schooling and the like necessities for such persons, on condition as is before expressed, and the overseers of the Poor with consent of my children from time to time are to see this my will in this particular really performed as is in my will expressed and not otherways." Recorded 12 August, 1655.

Gift of Major George Fawdon to Isaac George, son of Major John George, 100 acres, Oct. 27, 1654.

Memorandum of Nathaniel Bacon regarding the estate of Major George Fawdon, 1655.

Deed of Charles Barecroft to his wife Magdalen and son William, 10 April, 1657.

Deed of George Fawdon for 1500 acres to Mrs. Ann Smith whom he intends to make his wife, 30 Oct. 1654. Witnesses, Richard Clark, Thos. Woodward.

Memorandum to the deed next above: "All of which above mentioned jointure and Dowry the nuptials being now celebrated, Wee George and Ann ffawdon do oblige ourselves never to alienate, Release or in any way alter without the consent and approbation of our ffather-in-law, Nathaniel Bacon (1) and our Mother Ann his wife with our Brother William Smith." Signed George Fawdon, Ann Fawdon. Witnesses, Thos. Woodward, Richard Clark. Recordature 16 Martii, 1654-5.

(1) Nathaniel Bacon, Sen., was son of Rev. James Bacon and Martha Woodward. He was cousin of Nathaniel Bacon, Jun., the Rebel. He

appears to have married, first, Ann Smith, a widow, who was perhaps Ann Bassett, as Capt. William Bassett calls Nathaniel Bacon brother. He married next Elizabeth Kingsmill, widow of Col. Wm. Tayloe. His grandmother was Elizabeth Honiwood, celebrated for her charities. Nathaniel Bacon's aunt Bridget married Sir Thomas Lyddall, and their son Col. George Lyddall lived in New Kent, Va. So here was a regular net-work of relatives -- cavaliers -- settled at this time in Virginia: Nathaniel Bacon, Sen., Thomas Woodward, assay-master of the mint to Charles I., Sir Philip Honiwood, George Lyddall, Capt. William Bassett, Col. Robert Abrahall, Col. Joseph Foster, &c. See Woodward pedigree in *Familiae Minorum Gentium* IV., p. 1300, Keith's *Ancestry* of Benj. Harrison and *QUARTERLY* II., p. 216, &c.

234 WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

Deed of George Lobb (1) to Richard Jordan 50 a. Dec. 21, 1653.
Deed of Gyles Jones of Elizabeth City co., Gent., to Justinian Cooper and Ann his wife, late relict of James Hrris, for 100 acres on Warwicksqueak Bay, patented by said Jones Dec. 14, 1629. Dated 19 Oct., 4th year of Charles I.

Deed of Justinian Cooper and Anne his wife, relict &c. to Wassall Weblin, and Geo. Fadoine of Warwicksqueak, 28 Sept. 1629.

Justinian Cooper and Ann his wife to John George for two steers and 1500 lb of tobacco the Robert Bennett tract and the Quarter tract of 200 acres, part of a patent of 2000, March 16, 1642. Deed dated April 25th, 21 Charles I.

Edward Bruce to George Stevens, George Hardy and John Watkins April 15, 1646, one water mill at head of Lawn's Creek.

Will of Justinian Cooper, "sick and weak of body," dated 26 March, 1650: To all his godchildren a cow calf apiece; names Brother Richard Cossey, Edward Pyland son of James Pyland; Wife Anne Cooper; friend Capt. William Barnard (2) appointed overseer. "I give unto Capt. William Barnard a piece of plate of ten pounds price, to be paid him the next year 1651." Justinian Cooper, X mark.

2. Deeds, Orders, etc., 1664, &c.

John Jennings, Clerk of the Court, 1667.

Power of atty from Walter Tucker of Lyme Regis in the county of Dorsett, mrchant, to Mr. Samuel Tucker of Bristol to recover the estate of his coz. John Edwards in Virginia, lately deceased. Dated 27 Sept. 1664.

Similar power from Samuel Tucker, of Ratcliffe.

Receipt of Robert Burrige of Lyme Regis in Dorsett, merchant, of a full account of my goods lately in the custody of John Edwards, lately deceased in Virginia, &c., to Samuel Tucker. Dated 27 Sept., 1664.

(1) George Lobbs is referred to by John Ferrar, brother of Nicholas Ferrar, the last deputy of the London Company, as one of the principal silk-raisers in Virginia. Neill's *Va. Carolorum*, p. 241.

(2) Member of the Council, married Lucy Higginson, and described by John Ferrar as "that Stout Colonel."

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS.

225

Power of atty from Wm. Wilson (1) of the city of Bristol, merchant, to friend Mr. John Watson. Dated 26 April, 1666.

Capt. George Hardy's wife was Mary, dau. of Mr. Richard Jackson, late of the county, deceased. 19 June, 1666.

Letter of atty of Capt. William Woolard to Mr. John Cary to make public clayme to the estate of Justinian Cooper, dec. Dated 20 Feb., 1666.

Samuel Davis, of Carolina, province of Albemarle Co., planter, sonne of Samuel Davis, late resident in the Isle of Wight Co., to Nicholas Cobb. Dated 1667.

Receipt of William Addams, of Kenton, in the co. of Devon, brother of Capt. Thomas Adams, late inhabitant in the county of Isle of Wight in Virginia. Dated 1664.

Thos. Pitt 28 years in 1664; and Arthur Skynner 31 yrs. in 1664.

William Ruffin's power to his son Robert Ruffin. 22 Aug. 1667.

Deed noting that Capt. Henry Pitt was deceased. Mr. Thomas Pitt "sonne and Heir." His widow Anne married Capt. James Powell. Before she married Pitt, she was the widow of Mr. Robert Watson. Dated 27 Aug. 1666.

Thomas Harris and Alice X his wife, 1664.

Commissioners ye 9th of february, 1666: Prsent,

Coll. Robt Pitt, Mr. Nich Smith, Lt Coll Jno. George, Capt. ffrancis Hobbs, Capt. Anthony ffulgeham.

Power from William Jennings of the City of Bristol, surgeon, to Thomas Moore of Pagan Creek to receive goods &c. of Arthur Skynner, Gyles Driver, and Joseph Whitson, and by virtue of a power from John Hardiman of Bristol, taylor; 29 June, 1667.

Deed of Francis Hobbs and Mary his wife for land near the land of Coll Nathaniel Bacon, 1667.

Assignment of William Oldis and wife Jane. 1665.

Charles Smyth of the Parish St. Savours, Southwark, in Surry Co. (England), grocer, his power to Gyles Driver on James River to collect debts of George Moore and Henry King. 1663.

(1) This was probably Col. William Wilson, of Elizabeth City, progenitor of the Wilson families of Elizabeth City and Lower Norfolk Cos. His daughter Mary married Miles Cary, of Elizabeth City Co., also from Bristol.

Deed stating that Anthony Spiltimber,(1) of Surry, formerly commences suit against John Jennings before the Govr and Council in Sept. 1665, in right of Mary his wife, dau. of Mr. Robert Harris, formerly of the Isle of Wight, deceased, and sister unto Martha, daughter of the said Robert Harris and late wife to John Jennings, concerning an interest in land which I suppose fell to me by right of marrying the said Mary youngest sister to the said Martha, which the said Jennings in his right to the part of the Land altogether defended; which suit &c. John Spiltimber was father of Anthony &c.

Bill of exchange of Henry Filmer (2) in favor of Mr. Stephen Watts, merchant of Bristol, for 17L 10s, for value received of

John Scott, mariner, of Bristol. Addressed to "Mr. Robt ffilmer Esqr., living near ye Talbott att ye sign of ye Goat, London." "Your loving Uncle Henry ffilmer." Recorded 16 June, 1668.

Capt. Francis Hobbs, aged 40 in 1664. Robert Kae, aged 36.

Rec't of Samuel Tucker of Rotterdam, 1664, to cozen Samuel Tucker of Bristol, for goods in the custody of cozen John Edwards, lately deceased in Virginia.

Valentine Oldis, citizen and apothecary of London, brother of William Oldis of James River in Virginia, merchant. Deed dated June 5, 1668.

Mary Moore of Bristol, late wife of Henry Moore of Bristol, mrchant, deceased, who dyed in Va. 1667.

Conyers Bechinoe of London, mrch't, power of attorney to his Brother Edward Bechinoe of ye Isel of Wight county in Virginia. 28 Aug., 1668.

Deed of George Smyth and Anne his wife. Said George Smyth being a son of Arthur Smith deceased.

Barbadoes, Mary Markes, of the Island aforesaid, appoints Mr. William Stringer of the City of Bristol, mrchant, her agent &c. 4 Sept. 1668.

(1) From Surry Co. records: Anthony Spilltimber made his will March 30, 1672. Names wife Mary, dau. Patty and dau. Martha, brother John. Speaks of a debt due from Capt. Jennings. In the same records Anthony Spiltimber is mentioned as son of Mr. John Spiltimber, dec., who died about 1656, leaving James Mason overseer of his will.

(2) Henry Filmer was one of the justices of Warwick County in 1647; member of the Burgesses for James City Co., &c. His descendants lived for many years in Warwick Co.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

227

Letter of Charles Toplady requesting Robert Kae to prosecute Mr. Richard Izard 1668.

John Banton in the City of Bristol, merchant, resident in Virginia, power to Robert Kee or Thomas Taberer, 17 June, 1669.

Mr. George Hardy aged 37 in 1670.

Edward Gosling, commander of the Ship Coventry of London, power to Mr. Abraham Rouse to implead Capt. Francis Hobbs, planter, late resident in Isle of Wight Co., for a bill 1800b Tobacco and Caske due to me the said Gosling for his passage in the Ship Coventry and for the necessaryes received of me when he was on board the ship. 20 July, 1669.

Deed of John ffulgeham, son and heir of Capt. Anthony, to his Brother Anthony, 19 Oct. 1669.

Thomas Wood, sonne of Arthur Wood and Sarah Wooten, his mother, relict of Arthur Wood dece'd, to Richard Bennett of Blackwater.

Barbadoes -- Sir John Yeamans Barronet, now resident in ye Island aforesaid, who long since adventured goods to Va. by James Powell mrchant now resident in Va., appoints "my friend and nephew Joseph Woory, mrchant, to recover of Ja. Powell." 27 Sept. 1669.

Coll. James Powell and Anne my wife, lately the relict of Captain Henry Pitt deceased &c. 1667. Thomas Pitt was his son and heir, 1667.

John Hassett of Bristol, goldsmyth, to Arthur Grant of Bristol, mrchant, to recover all goods lately belonging to my brother Samll Hassett, late planter in Va. 25 Aug. 1669.

Bristol, the 28th of August, 1669. I do hereby assign unto Capt. Nicholas Tovey of Bristol, and mar. of the good ship called the Samll and Mary, five women servants by names as followeth: Dorcas Willineth, Joan Joyce, Elizabeth Blesby, Margaret, Robert and Grace Davis, to be made sale of in Va. for ye term of four years for ye proper acct of ye said Thomas Grey as witness my hand. Allowing for ye passage of ye servs. nine hundred pounds of Tob. p. head. -- Thomas Grey; testes, Richard Ward, Mathew Stephens.

Cart path mentioned, 1669.

Capt. Arthur Grant mentioned.

228

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

Sisely Selden of Barnestable, in the Co. Devon, admx. of John Selden, late Barnestable aforesaid, mrchant, deceased, apoints Joseph Rudd of Barnestable to recover of William Burke of Chuckatuck, Virginia, merchant, &c., all goods &c. which goods were delivered by order of the sd. John Selden, my late husband, to Thomas Beaple of Barnstable aforesaid Mrchant and Robert Charton of the same mariner and by them left to the sd Wm Burke &c. for the use of my late husband &c. X the mark of Sisely Selden.

Hester Phillips, wife of Wm. Phillips, ordered 30 stripes upon her bare back till ye blood follow, and to ask forgiveness of all her offences, for scandalizing and abusing Mrs. Silvestra Hill. 19 Sept. 1670.

John Beale of London, mrchant, exor. of George Mansfield late planter in Virginia, appoints Major Nicholas Hill in James River &c. July, 1670.

John Nosworthy leases 100 acres to Henry Skynner to plant one orchard of 160 trees, the trees to be "all Apple trees and pare trees," the tyme for their planting to be within two years after the date hereof &c. 1664.

Moses Powell physician. 1671.

William Woolard of the Isle of Wight, mrchant. 1671.

Deed of William Woolard, late of Harwitch in Essex, mariner, but now resident of Isle of Wight Co. Va., heir of Justinian Cooper, long since deceased, to Coll. Nathaniel Bacon Esq. 1671.

Bond of William Luff of the City of Bristol, mariner. 21 M'ch 1663.

Bond of William Hamonds of same place, mariner, to Mr. John Brewer, of Isle of Wight in Va., Gent.

Deed of John Harper of the City of Bristol, lynen draper, to Robert fflake, 1671.

John Seward of Bristol mrchant, his power to Thomas Milner of Nansemond and Mr. Edward Wickins of I. of Wight, 14 April, 1672.

Deed of John Seward of the city of Bristol, mrchant, son and heir of John Seward, late of sd City, mrchant, (and whoe died in Virginia) to William Bressie of Va now resident in Bristoll, for land called "Levy Neck" in the Co. of Warwicksquick, 1672.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

229

Deed of James Seward, of Bristol, to idem.

Power of Joan Gould, of Bristol, widow and admx. of Thomas Gould, to William Bressie of Va., 2 Dec. 1672.

Land belonging to Capt. John Vpton mentioned as escheated for want of legal heirs.

Deed of Robert Pitt Esq., 27 Nov. 1673, to son John Pitt.

Deed of John Perry, son of Phillip Perry, of ye Whitemarsh, to Col Joseph Bridger, 1673.

Deed of Humphrey Marshall of Isle of Wight &c. HM, his mark, and Priscilla Marshall P, her mark.

Robert Bracewell, son of Robert Bracewell, minister, late deceased.

Ja. Minge, surveyor, mentioned.

Bounds between Isle of Wight and Nansemond Co. determined by act of Assembly, 21 Sept. 1674. [Numbered Act VIII. in the printed acts.]

ffrancis Hobbs' now wife Mary was former wife of Nathaniel Floyd deceased.

Richard Bracewell, son and heir of Robert Bracewell Clk, and Sarah his wife & c. 28 June, 1673.

Thomas Greenwood made his will 19 M'ch., 1658. His widow Elizabeth m'd Mr. James Pyland, &c.

Thomas Deacon of the Burrough of Warwick, in the county of Warwick, gent. deceased.

[CONTINUED FROM ISLE OF WIGHT - PAGE 229]

"We the subscribed haveing drawn up a paper in half of ye inhabitants of Isle of Wight Co. as ye greivances of said county," recant all the "false and scandalous" relfections upon Gov. Sir Wm. Berkeley Kt contained ina paper(1) presented to the Commissioners, and promise never to be guilty again of "ye like mutinous and rebellious practices." Ambrose Bennett, John Marshall, Richard Jordan, Richard Sharpe, Antho ffulgeham, James Bagnall, Edward Miller, John Davis X his mark, Richard Penny R. P. his mark. Acknowledged 9 April 1677. Test. Jno Bromfield Cl. Cu.

John Marshall begs pardon in court on his bended knees for

(1) See Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biography, Vol. II, p. 380, where this paper containing the frievances of Isle of Wight is published in full.

230 WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY

"scandalous words" uttered before ye Worpfl Comrs (in accordance with their order) April 9, 1677.

Petition(1) of John Jennings to the Right honorable Herbert Jeffreys, Esq., Governr and Capt Generall of Virga and the honble Council of State; that yor peticonr haveing reced sentence of banishmt and Transportation of this his Maties Colony asks for a longer time for his departure since by reason of the late Rebellion his estate has been so wasted that he has not the money to leave, and because it would peril his life to undergo the said sentence in his "aged, sick and weak condition," having the care also of a poor wife and children incumbent upon him.

Letter of Gov. Herbert Jeffreys dated Swann Point April ye 9th 1677, asking the opinion of his councillors Nathaniel Bacon, Sen., and Col William Cole, as to the case of John Jennings.

Endorsement of Nathaniel Bacon and William Cole approving the Governor's suggestion of a longer respite to Jennings.

Endorsement by Jeffreys dated May 22, 1677, for a respite of time for the departure of John Jennings until the month of September next.

Robert Ruffin (and Elizabeth his wife) of Surry county, ap-parent heir and admr. of William Ruffin dec'd. 6 June, 1677.

Power of John Jennings to his wife Mary to get in his debts, and to let his plantation for three years, and sell either mares, sheep &c. 5 Sept., 1677.

John Bromfield, Cl. of the Court, 1678.(2)

Marriage contract between George Cripps and Joyce England, of the parish and co. of Isle of Wight &c. 1678.

Herbert Jeffrey's warrant(3) to the Justices of Isle Wight and Nansemond counties to meet and proportion the billets, for each house, it being for his majesty's service that one of the companies of foot do march into the counties of Isle of Wight and Nanse-mong; the inhabitants are to receive 2 shillings a week for each soldier's accommodation; Col Joseph Bridger is requested to

(1) See Petition in full and QUARTERLY IV., pp. 113-114.

(2) From an order in Hening's Statutes, it appears that John Bromfield married Bridget, a daughter or granddaughter of Rev. Richard Buck, the minister who opened with prayer the first Legislative Assembly in 1619. A land grant about 1658 describes her as widow of William Davis.

(3) See warrant published in the QUARTERLY Vol. IV., p. 114.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS 231

meet the justices &c. This warrant was presented in court by Capt. Tongue (1) July 19, 1677.

Alexander Culpeper, (2) Esq., surveyor-gen'll of Virginia 1675.

Major George Nosworthy, of Nansemond Co.

Roland Place Esq., member of the Council -- 1677. (3)

Power of John Grascone of London, mrchant, to Dr. George Lee of Surry Co. on James River, doctor in physique, &c. 1678.

Deposition of Francis Wade.

Power of John Bland, merchant in London, acknowledged in London, to his wife Sarah, now bound from hence to Virginia to call to acc't all persons in Va., particularly Mr. Bernard Sykes, and Mr. Codd and alsoe to enter into and take into her custody, &c. the several plantations of Bartletts, Kimerges, Herring

Creek Mill, Jordans, Westeffer, Vpper Chippoakes, Sunken Marsh plantacion, Basse's Choice, Jamestown lot, Lawne's Creek, and all other lands &c. servants, slaves, chattels &c. Likewise to receive &c of ye widow of Theodorick Bland, late of Bartlett [Berkley] upon James River in Charles City Co. in Virginia, Mrchant, deceased &c. Sealed &e in presence of Anthony ffenn, Robt Mitford, Hump. Higginson, Edward Mowntague, Thomas Tanner.

By another deed, Giles Bland was son of John Bland.

Richard Jordan (4) [and Alice his wife], deed of gift to his son John. 1st 9ber, 1678.

Mr. Tho. Merriweather, (5) of London, mrchant, 1678.

(1) Capt. John Tongue was Quartermaster in the Regiment sent over to subdue Bacon's Rebellion, and Lieutenant in the Cold Streams Footguards.

(2) Alexander Culpeper was brother of Lady Frances, wife of Sr. Wm. Berkeley.

(3) Rowland Place was the son of Francis Place, the celebrated painter of York, and Ann Williamson. He married Priscilla, daughter of Sir John Brookes, of Norton, Co. York, Baronet. Rowland Place was born 1642, and died 1713. (See *Familiae Minorum Gentium*, Vo. III., p. 921.)

(4) In the Surry Co. records Nicholas Meriwether was aged about 37 in 1668. At Bristol is the will of Jane Meriwether (1604).

(5) In the adjoining county of Surry was a family of Jordans, viz.: (1)

Col. George Jordan (Atty. Gen. of Va.) m'd. first, "Alice Miles, dau. of John Miles, of Branton, near Herreford, Gent., who died Jan. 7, 1650" (tombstone at "Four Miles Tree" in Surry). Second, Eliz. Coates, wid. of Daniel Coates. (2) Arthur, his brother, born 1626. In 1654 he married Eliz. Barins, had issue George Jordan, James Jordan, River Jordan,

232 WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

Order in reference to the Quakers.

Col. John Dodman's dau. Susanna married (Capt. Robt Massy of Potomack. Col. John Dodman of Mulberry Island, gives all his right and title to certain lands to his dau. Margaret, who has married Appleyard, 28 Jan. 1679

John Pitt's wife was the relict of Mr. Giles Driver, and gave her dau. Hardy five sheep, one young mare &c, warranting the sd mare to her the sd Hardy Driver: Deed 8 July, 1680.

Lt. Coll Nicholas Hill, (1) of Isle of Wight, deceased, father of Ralph Hill. Silvestra Hill, widow of Lt. Coll Nicholas. His youngest son Richard Hill. Deed to Major Samuel Swan. 1678.

Be it known unto all men by these psents that I Wm Bressie of ye Vpper parrish of ye Isle of Wight County in Virginia planter wth Susannah my wife have given granted enfeoffed from

and Elizabeth Jordan. (3) Fortune, his sister, m'd Col. John Flood, interpreter for the Colony, who had issue Christopher Flood and Walter Flood. Fortune Jordan m., 2dly, James Mills, merchant. By a previous marriage Col. John Flood had issue Capt. Thomas Flood, who succeeded him as interpreter, and Jane, w ho married John Cary, a prominent merchant of London (see Surry Records). In the Surry records there is a deed (year 1688) of Lucy Jordan, wife of Mr. Thomas Jordan (the Isle of Wight man), conveying to Phillis Jordan that portion of land "which I hold in partnership with sister Susannah Branch and niece Eliz. Parsons, dau. and sole heir of sister Judith Clay, dece'd, which land descended unto said Susanna, Judith, and Lucy, as daus. and coheirs of Capt. William Corker, dece'd" (son of John Corker). Witness, James Jordan, Richard Washington. In 1685 Lt. Coll. Wm. Browne and Mr. James Jordan presented in Surry as Inventory of the goods of Mr. Thomas Jordan, dece'd. There is in Surry the nuncupative will of Capt. William Corker "made at the house of his dau. Judith Clay in ye Isle

of Wight Co." Feb. 26, 1675-6. Divides his estate between his wife and his three daus: Susanna (who m. George Branch, Jr.), Judith Clay and Lucy Jordan; he confirms a gift to Elizabeth and Mary White, daus. of Capt. John White, of whom Elizabeth md. Capt. Robert Spencer, of Surry. Col. George Jordan names in his will his nephew Edward Bayley. So he had probably a sister who married Bayley. Col. Henry Browne of the Coucil, probably married Anne Flood, a sister of Col. John Flood. The Jordans of Isle of Wight were leading Quakers. In 1728 Samuel Bownas visited the staid with "Old Robert Jordan." In company with Joseph Jordan he called on the Governor, who received him kindly and promised to release from prison certain friends who refused to perform militia duty. "Travels of Rev. Samuel Bownas."

(1) Nicholas Hill, in 1635, patented 100 acres in Elizabeth City Co. for his own importation and a servant's.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

233

us or heires and doe by these prsents ffor evermore give and grant and enfeofe unto Wm Yarrett, John Grove, ffrancis Wrenn, Edward Jones, Thomas Tooke and Henry Wigge and the rest of the sevts of God frequently called Quakers, one house built by ye sd people in ye place called ye Levy Neck Ould feilds neare the creeke side to wo'rp and serve the liveing God, in spiritt and truth wth ground sufficient for a Graveyard and what more may be thought fitt, and shall suddenly be bounded by four corner Trees to be planted with free Egres and regress of ye sd people through any of ye sd Bressies Land in any path that now leads to the sd House, and further that noe Lease neither Sale nor deed of guift that shall hereafter be made by us or either of us William and Susanna Bressie or Heires or Ass contrary to the true Intent and meaning hereof but shall be adjudged and is hereby declared by us to be null and illegall. Witness or hands and seals, and furthermore wee doe declare or intents and meaning to be that the right freedom and liberty herein conteyned shall extend to as many as hereafter shall receive and obey the Gospell and joyn unto the said people.

WILLIAM BRESSIE.
SUSANNA BRESSIE.

Signed sealed and delivered in the prsence of us

DANIEL SANBORNE.
WALTER BARHEM.

This acknowledged in open Court by Mr William Bressie and his wife to be t heir Act and Deed and Ordered to be Recorded ffeb 9th [1679]. Test, John Pitt Cler Cruiaie.

John Marshall's deed to his sons Robert and Hunphry.
1680.

Henry Hunt of Bristoll appointes Humphra Marshall of I. of W. 9 Mch., 1680.

Power of Alice Hardy, A her mark, of the Isle of Wight Co., to her son-in-law Wm Mayo.

John Lear (1) and Anne his wife, of the one pt., to Thomas Pitt

(1) In the Surry records there is a suit entitled "Col. John Lear as marrying exx of Col. John George vs. Thomas Jordan as marrying relict of Capt. Robert Spencer, 1680." Capt. Spencer was born in 1630; was justice of Surry, and made his will March 5, 1678. He married several times. His dau. Anne mar. John Whitson, a violent rebel, hanged in

234

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

of the other all that messuage, late the plantacon of Coll. John George, which he bequeathed to his then wife, the abovementioned Anne, on the south side of Castle Creek and Quarter Spring, which land is now in possession of Lt. Coll. James Powell. Ack. 9th June, 1681, by Coll. John Lear and his wife.

Deed of Joseph Bridger, Esq., for certain land (left by Dr. Robert Williamson to Joan, his wife, for life, and then to his eld-

est son Robert, which lands were found to escheat and were then granted in 1678 to said Bridger) to said Joan, now the wife of Mr. Robert Burnett. 8 Aug. 1683.

Deed of Mrs. Dorothy Bond, widow of Major John Bond, (4) and his son John Bond to Joseph Bridger, 29 July, 1693.

Michael ffulgeham warrants one acre of land to the church wardens and vestrymen of the Lower Parish of the Isle of Wight whereon the church house now standeth by deep Swampe -- with consent of Anne my wife. 6 Sept. 1683.

Will of George Hardy, (2) dated M'ch 16, 1654 -- proved Ap. 14, 1655: After the decease of his wife all his land, housing &c., to be divided between his kinsman George Hardy, Jr. and Christian Wilson, for lack of heirs of G. H. then to fall to Thomas Hardy and Christian Wilson. My seal ring to my said kinsman George, and my wife my other ring: "100 pds of tobacco towards Bacon's Rebellion. They had a dau. Martha Whitson. In 1675 Capt. Spencer married Elizabeth White, dau. of Capt. John White (Gen. Court Records). Then he married Jane, who survived him. He names (in will pr. 1679) children Elizabeth and Ann, which last child was by last wife. Capt. John White, of James City, had, (1) John White (will proved in Surry, 1679). (2) Lucy m. Capt. William Corker. (3) Elizabeth m. Capt. Robert Spencer. (4) Mary m'd probably James Barrett.

(1) Major John Bond had been a burgess during the Commonwealth, and at a time of the restoration he was removed from his office as justice by the House of Burgesses, "because of factious and schismatical demeanor." Hening's Stats. at large, II, p. 39.

(2) George Hardy came to Virginia before 1636, when he is called "Ship-right." In 1644 he patented 300 acres (increased to 500 in 1648), situated upon Lawne's creek and bordering upon Alice Bennett's land (doubtless widow of Robert Bennett, of London), for 6 persons, Thomas Sabin, Thomas Hardy, George Nettleford, James Strong, and John Smith. He had a noted mill, which is still used. From this family of Hardy was descended Hon. Samuel Hardy, a prominent member of the Continental Congress.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS.

235

the Building of the church in this parish in case it be built with Brick." To my kinsman George H. 3000 lbs of tobacco to buy two servants. In case of the return of 27 hds of tobacco I sent Home last year doth come in I then ordain that George Hardy "shall have a feather bed, Rugg, sheets, and Blankets out of the produce of it, also I give him all my wearing apparel. Signed and Sealed in the presence of us Karbry Kigan, Jno. Jennings, George Woodward. John Pit Clk Cur."

Deeds of Ralph Hill and Hannah, his wife, of the Vpper parish of the Isle of Wight, to Henry Baker, mrchant, for land bounded by Lawne's Creek and the cart path that leads to Mr. George Hardy's mill. 16 Jan. 1688.

Will of Karbry Kigan, of the Isle of Wight Co., dated 12 Jan. 1657; pr. 9 Feb. 1657: 1-3 part of all his estate to his wife, Catherine, for life, all the rest of his estate to the child his wife now goeth with, and in case the said child doth not come to perfection or capacity to inherit, all my said lands &c to go to Robert Cowfield (son of Capt. Wm. Cowfield). "To said Robert Cowfield all my Books, my Rapior and my fflowling piece"; to Elizabeth Cowfield a feather Bed and new Cupboard; to Capt. Wm. Cowfield my seal ring, and to his wife 10 shil. to buy her a ring; to Katherine, daughter of John Dew, a cow called Star and six pewter dishes. I bequeath to the church of Isle of Wight one hogshhead of tobacco containing 350 lbs; cow calves to John King and to John Norton's child; 20 shillings to my countryman, John Rogers of Middle Plantation, to buy him a ring. Capt. William Cowfield and my wife Katherine Exors.

Will of James Took, dated Feb. 1, 1659: Daughter Dorothy wife of John Harvey; sons William Took and Thomas -- to

which last I give my Signett Seal Ring.

3. Will Book, commencing in 1666.

Will of Paul Luke, dated 14 Oct., 1666: proved 10 Dec., 1666: wife Sarah; children Richard, Catherine.

Justices in 1667: Lt. Coll. John George, Adjutant Nicholas Hill, Mr. James Boucher, Mr. Nicholas Smith, Capt. Joseph Bridger, Capt. Anthony ffulgeham. 1668, there were also Mr. John Hardy, Mr. Thomas Taberer, Mr. James Powell.

Will of Robert Bracewell, dat. Feb. 1667; pr. May 1, 1667. Daus. Jane Stokes, Rebecca; sons Richard, Robert. Legacy to

236 WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

servant Elizabeth Hall; Mr. Richard Izard and George Gwillin to be guardians, &c., 40 shillings to each for a ring; dau. Anne Bagnall. Sons Robert and Richard "shall be putt to schools until they cann both write and read." Teste, John Jennings, Cl. Cur.

Will of Daniel Boucher, (1) dated 4 Dec., 1667; proved 1st May, 1668: Legacies to kinsman Robert Boucher, Hodges Council, William and Mary, children of William Hunt, Elizabeth Munger, dau. of John Munger, Elizabeth Davis, dau. of John Davis, dec'd. Item I give to the poorest people in the parish to be distributed amongst them, such as my overseers hereafter mentioned shall think fitt, one oxe commonly called Brand, with a good loaf of bread to each of the poor people aforesaid." To dau. Elizabeth all my lands, and in case of her death before age or marriage, my land to my kinsman Robert Boucher, and all the balance to the grandchildren of my wife Elizabeth Boucher equally. John Hardy and Thomas Taberer overseers; and to each of them 20 shillings.

Will of Henry King, of the Isle of Wight county: To my daughters Susanna and Elizabeth my whole dividend of land, nine hundred acres according to patent and former gift given me by my deceased father and confirmed by my mother Elizabeth King, since deceased; my wife Ruth King to have a life interest, &c. "I give one hundred Acres of land lieing and being next adjacent to Mr. England, And being exchanged for land of myne now in the possession of Mr. England, to this parish where I now live towards the maintenance of a free school." Legacies of horses, and mares and cattle. Dated 2 march, 1668, pr. 3 May, 1669.

Will of John Reynolds, dated March 11, 1668; proved 3 May, 1669: brothers George Rivers and Richard Reynolds, sisters Elizabeth Rivers, Jane Reynolds -- sister Rivers' dau. Mary.

Will of John Bond, gent., dated 2 May, 1669; pr. 9 June, 1669: Son William Bond, son John, wife Dorothy Bond; Capt. Francis England. Left. Arthur Smith and Mr. Richard Sharp overseers.

Will of Richard Izard, X his mark: Daus. Mary and Martha Izard, wife Rebecca; legacy to James Bagnall, son of James Bagnall, my son-in-law.

(1) Member of House of Burgesses in 1653.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS.

237

Will of Phillip Perry, aged seaventie yeere or thereabouts; sons Phillip and John under age, wife Grace. Dated 20 Nov., 1667; pr. 9 oct, 1669.

Will of Robert Williamson, Doctr in Physicke: Wife Jane, eldest son Robert; other sons George, Arthur and Francis. Dated 16 Feb., 1669. Mr. Robert Burnett mar. the relict of Robert Williamson before 1672.

Will of Thomas Wotton: wife Sarah W.; her son Thomas

Wood, son Richard Wotton; "After my son Richard's decease, he leaving no issue, I give it to my next kin of name in Northampton Sheire, att a town called Castor (?) neare unto Petersborough." Dated March 15, 1669; proved Nov., 1670.

Will of Thomas Harris: Names 2 sons John and Thomas, wife Alice; names Major Nicholas Hill and John Jennings, dau. Mary and other children. Dated 30 March, 1672 -- proved 24 Oct., 1672.

Marriage contract of Alice Harris in favor of her 5 children by Thomas H., with John Sojourner, 1673.

Deed of Gift of Robert Smith to his godson John, son of Mr. John ffulgeham, of the Blackwater, and to Elizabeth, John's sister. 1674.

Will of "Robert Pitt, (1) merchant": wife Martha, son John,

(1) Robert Pitt and Henry Pitt were sons of William Pitt and Mary Pitt, of Bristol. William Pitt was son of Thomas Pitt, who made his will in May, 1613. Thomas Pitt, who patented lands previous to 1646, on the Appomattox, was probably another brother. Robert Pitt's sister Maud married Dr. Richard Russell, of Lower Norfolk Co., referred to by John Ferrar in his verses as that "learned physician." Russell appears to have removed to New England, as did Mary Pitt, another sister, who married Andrew Newell (Mary Pitt died Sept. 26, 1684). (See New England Hist. and Gen. Mag., Vol. 45, p. 151; and Vol. 49, p. 255.) Robert Pitt was a member of the Council and Lieutenant Colonel. His wife at time of death was Martha, sister of Col. John Lear. He had issue: (1) Robert, dead before 1672, leaving son Robert; (2) Lt. Col. John; (3) Hester m. Col. Joseph Bridger, Esq., of the Council; (4) Elizabeth, m. Nosworthy; (5) Mary m. John Brassuer. His son, Lt. Col. John Pitt, mar. after 1677 Olive Hardy. He appears to have had (1) Robert (?), dead before father, m'd Sarah, dau. of Col Arthur Smith; she mar., secondly, Rev. Andrew Monro, (2) John, (3) Henry, (4) James, (5) Sarah m. Nosworthy, (6) Prudence m. Driver. Capt. Henry Pitt, brother of Col. Robert Pitt, m. Ann, widow of Robert Watson, and she m'd, thirdly, Col. James Powell. Issue: Thomas, born 1636, who m. Mary

238

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

grandson John Pitt, grandson Wm. Pitt, dau. Hester Bridger, dau. Elizabeth Nosworthy, gr. son Robert P., son of Robert Pitt, dec'd, dau. Brasheire. Dated 6 June, 1672; proved June 9, 1674.

Will of (Major) Nicholas Hill, the first day of January, 1674: His body to be buried as near his deceased wife and children as may be; to his wife Silvester for life my plantation in Isle of Wight with all the houses, buildings, orchards, and gardens thereto belonging, being bounded betwixt the cart path that goes from the mill belonging to Mr. George Hardy towards the church and the swamp commonly called the Meadows, with liberty to make use of any timber growing upon the land bought of

Col. Wm. Bernard, deced; after her decease said lands, &c., to my sonne Richard Hill and his heirs, together with all the woodland bounded on the west of the said swamp by Mr. Richard Briggs' and Mr. Edward Beckenoe's land; gives to his sonne Ralph Hill all the land, houses, &c., bounded by the said cart path that goes from the aforesaid mill towards the church to the head of Lawn's creek, and so along the swamp that goes from the head of said creek to said mill, with all the woodland of 70 acres purchased of Mr. Peter Green, deceased, on the north side of said creek in Surry county; to son Ralph Hill, the codd of land at Blackwater between Branch and William Miles, from John Parson's bridge towards Left. George Branch; to son George Hill all my woodland, betwixt the aforesaid branch betwixt Mr. Briggs' and Mr. Beckenoe's plantations, and the old cart path that goes from the River side to Blackwater, being the bounds betwixt the land Col. Bacon bought of Thomas Harris and my land; to son George Hill "after my wife's decease, or sooner, if she please,"

all the plantation, &c., contained in a patent of 750 acres granted to me and my loving wife in the upper parish of Isle of Wight, being at a place commonly called the Rocks, and running for breadth down towards Pagan creek; two negroes to wife Silvester for life, and then to son George; negro to son Ralph; 8,000 pds. of tobacco to dau. Agnes Hill; to dau. Martha one scarlet mantle bought of Mr. Thomas Gould, deced; to wife Silvester my silver tankard, with what money and rings she shall be pos-

Smith, d. of Col Arthur Smith, and had issue: Thomas, Martha, Mary, Elizabeth, Henry, Ann, and Patience. In 1663 the General Assembly rewarded John Pitt, of Isle of Wight, for building a vessel of 28 tons. Robert Pitt was in 1699 Justice of Accomac Co.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

239

sessed of at my death; to said wife one-third part of all goods, chattles, and cattle; residue to my dear and loving children George, Martha, Mary, Anna, Richard, and Elizabeth Hill equally; to son Nicholas 10,000 pds of tobacco to be paid at several payments, &c., to son Ralph 5,000 pds. of tob. to be paid the next shipping, &c.; land at Blackwater not disposed of to be sold to pay his debts; to wife and her six children all my lands, moneys, &c., not mentioned in this will belonging to me in either England or Virginia; my three children by a former wife having an equal proportion of what may fall to me in the Bay; makes his wife exx. for all that part of the estate belonging to her and her six children; friends Major James Powell, Mr. Thomas Taberer, Mr. Wm. Bressie and John Jennings overseers of my will. "I hereunto sett my hand and seal this 19th day of April, 1675 -- Nicholas Hill." Witnesses, John Grayham, John Newman, I. N. his mark, Mary Davis X her mark. Proved by the oath of Mr. John Newman 20 Oct., 1675, and by Mrs. Mary Davis, 21st of same month. Teste, John Jennings, Clerk.

Will of Rebecca Izard: Dau. Rebecca Bagnall, dau. Martha Izard, legacies to Rebecca Bagnall and Mary Bennett, Martha Izard, James Bagnall, son of James Bagnall, Nehemiah Hunt, son of Godfrey Hunt, and Elizabeth Reeves. Son James Bagnall, Henry Reeves, and Ambrose Bennett overseers. Dated 15 Oct., 1675, proved 20 Oct., 1675.

Will of John Clay, C, his mark: pr. 20 Oct., 1675. Eldest son Thomas Clay, son William Clay, Elizabeth dau. of son William, Mary Clay my wife. "And it is alsoe my desire that my executrix shall not bestow any pefuse expense upon my buriall; namely to shoot no Gunnes." 7 April, 1675.

Will of William Clay, dated 10 June, 1675; proved 17 Feb. 1675: Cuzin Thomas, sonn of brother Thomas Clay, Mary, youngest dau. of Henry Reynolds; bro. John and his dau. Elizabeth Clay; my dau. Elizabeth Clay and wife Judith.

Will of Francis England of Blackwater, F.E.: Dau. Anne, wife of Mr. George Branch, daughter's sons: Geo., Francis, and John Branch; wife Joyce. Mr. John Guthridge and John Pearson overseers. Dated 13 May, 1677; pr. 2 June, 1677.

Will of John Hardy, of the lower parish, in the Isle of Wight co., in Va.: Dau. Olive Driver, wife of Giles Driver, dau. Lucy Council, wife of Hodges Councill, dau. Deborah Hardy; gr.

240

WILLIAM AND MARY QUARTERLY.

child Hardy Driver, dau. of Giles D., Olive Driver's two children, Lucy Council's 3 children, wife's grand child of John Johnson; wife Alice Hardy, son-in-law Robert Burnett; to William Mayo all my silver clasps to breeches and shirt. Dated 7 Oct., 167--; pr. 9 June, 1677.

Will of Giles Driver: Sons Robert, Charles, Giles, John: dau. Hardy Driver, wife sole exx. Dated 29 Dec., 1676, pr. 9 June, 1677.

Letter to the court "from yor Reall and faithful friend, John George," reciting: "My dau. Rebecca, relict of Phill. Pardoe,

dece'd, intends this cort to relinquish his estate by reason of her great engagements, and is very willing that Major James Powell administer, on acct of his very great favor to her and her fatherless children, and my tender care of the welfare of Thomas Lewis and his children John and Joyce Lewis, &c." April 9, 1678.

Will of John Vickers: Eldest son John, son Ralph, wife Jane. 1677.

Will of John English: "To loving Dafter Frances Iles, all my Picturs"; 10 sh. to dafter Elizabeth Church; son-in-law John Watts; dau. Alice Watts; dafter Mary English. Dated 13 Aug., 1678; proved 9 Oct., 1678.

Will of Anthony ffulheham: Land I now live on to bro. Nicholas ffulgeham; bro. Michaiil ffulgeham, brother John's son Anthony; kinswoman Martha Fulgeham, dau. to bro. Mitchail. Dated 14 Oct., 1678; pr. 9 Dec., 1678.

Widow and children of Thomas Emson: George, Sarah, Jane, Thomas, Martha, Ann.

Will of [Lt. Col.] John George (1): To son Isaak all that land

(1) The following wills answering to the name of George are recorded at Bristol, viz.: Julian George (1616), Robert (1628), Edward (1633), Richard (1654), Eleanor (1665). In the Surry records there is a suit: Col. John Lear as marrying exx of Col. John George, plt., vs. Thomas Jordan as marrying exx (Jane) of Capt. Robert Spencer. Spencer's first wife was Elizabeth White, dau. of Capt. John White. Lear married, secondly, before 1691 Rebecca, widow of Col. Leonard Yeo, of Eliz. City Co., and, thirdly, Anne Willis, of Ipswich, Mass., widow of Seth Sothell, Gov. of North Carolina. She was dead before 1695. His will was proved in Henrico Co. Dec. 12, 1696 (See Richm'd Critic.) He mentions his "sister Pitt," probably Martha, wife of Col. Robert Pitt. Both Lear and Yeo are west of England names. Peter Lear, of Devonshire, was created a baronet for his loyalty to Charles I., and Leonard Yeo was one of the gentlemen who in 1583 subscribed for the defence of the country against the Spanish Armada.

from the mouth of Castle Creek runing up the Creeke to the Spring called Quarter Spring; "Item I give and bequeath to my son Isaack George my horse Jading, with my Plush saddle and Bridle, with all my wearing apparrell both linen woole or else, with my Rapier and new Speanish leather belt and a long Gunn and also one new feather bed;" grandchild John George a negro, to be delivered to my son Isaac for the child's acc't two years after the finishing of the present crops, and "my will is that said grandchild after he is six years old be brought up to Reading and writing with my wife at her charge and to her best conveniency, soe far as writing and Accounts may here be taught"; legacy to grandchildren Jno. and Joyce Lewis and the children of Philip Pardoe to be paid to their use in 1680; dau. Sarah Peddington's two children she had by my son Morgan Lewis; kinswoman Mary Baugh; wife Anne George, whom he app'ts. sole executrix; to Major James Powell and Thomas Taberer his overseers a legacy of 20s. each "as a token of my love." Dated Aug. 2, 1678; proved 9 Jan., 1678.

Will of John Jennings: Son John, to my s'd son one silver tankard marked I I M, one small dram cupp and one small sack cupp marked I G E, 2 daus. Mary and Martha Jennings, to Mary one small cupp marked I M I, and one silver tumbler marked I I and half a dozen of silver spoones marked I M I, and one salt seller marked I I and one silver sugar dish marked I I, &c.; son-in-law William Seward a sword and belt which was formerly his Father's; legacy to George Seward; wife Mary Jennings; son and three daus. Disposes of much silver. Capt. Edward Wickens Lt. George Moore, Thomas Moore and William Seward to see my will performed. "Further I do give and bequeath my whole library of Bookes to my sonn, my desk, my Gold Rings and silver seals, and every one of my overseers to have 10s. to buy them a

Ring." Dated 19 Oct., 1678; pr. 10 March, 1679.

Francis Ayres' Inventory 1678. (Mention of Jane his wife now wife of Henry Divison, Jane Clarke, Humphrey Clarke, the son of Jno. Clarke.)

Will of Joyce Cripps, X her mark, dated 18 April, 1679, -- pr. 9 June, 1679: "I, J. C., wife of George Cripps." Legacies to my Brothers, sons of my former Husband Francis England, to sister Skinner. Legacies to Sarah Lupo; Geo. Branche's 3 children, Francis, John and Ann; Anthony Lewis; Margaret, wife

242 WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY

of Peter Vasser; Susan Braswell, my sister's dau.; 3 godsons, viz., James Bennet, Nicholas Davis and William Phillips; my mother Flake; beloved husband exor.

Will of Robert Burnett, R his mark: Dau. Ann Burnett; brother William Mayo; brothers, Mr. Arthur Allen and Mr. Jno. Bromfield. Witnesses, William Mayo, Roger Jones. Pro. 17 July, 1679.

Will of Ambrose Bennett: Wife Elizabeth and the child she now goes with; devises plantation to Mary Beale, dau. of Benjamin Beale; Martha Rutter, dau. of Walter Rutter; Col. Arthur Smith and Rich'd Reynolds overseers. Proved 9th Dec., 1680.

Will of Dorothy Bond: Son John; grandson William Watson; son William. 10 July 1684.

Deed of Joseph Bridger disinheriting his son Joseph, in favor of his sons William and Samuel. 9 April, 1685.

Will of Jno. Burnell: John Burnell, his son, and Eles Shepley, the wife of Jonathan Shepley; dau. Susannah Conley. Oct. 20, 1685.

Will of Thomas Parker, aged fifty-six years: Eldest son John; son Thomas; son John to have all the Islands that go in the name of Hughs' Island; son Francis; son George; daus. Elizabeth, Mary, Anne. Dated 16 No., 1685; pr. Feb. 9, 1685.

Will of Will Richardson: Devises to his wife Katherine, to Mary Wisse and her dau. Elizabeth; bro. John Richardson. 9 Feb., 1685.

Will of Coll. Joseph Bridger (1): Personal estate to be equally divided between his wife and sons: Joseph, Samuel and William, and daus. Martha (Godwin), Mary and Elizabeth, share and share alike; except Martha Godwin is to have one hundred pds. less than the rest in respect of what I have already given her husband; and alsoe there mother and my dear wife shall have in the first place and before it be delivered, over and above her proportion at her choice, one Bed covering and furniture to it, halfe dozen chaires, a chest of drawers, table and carpet and looking glasses and Andirons to furnish the chamber and one horse as she shall choose, and one man, and one woman servant white or black

(1) Bridger was born in 1628 and died April 15, 1686. See "The Old Brick Church, Smithfield"; by R. S. Thomas, Va. Hist. Coll., Vol. XI., p. 142. He married Hester Pitt, d. of Col. Robert Pitt.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS.

243

to waite upon her, besides all her apparell, Rings, jewels, and appurtenances for life, and at her decease to go to his heirs; to Samuel Bridger the plantation bought by me of John Gatlin and William Gatlin wherein John Cooke now lives, also one half of my plantation of Curawaock 7800 acres, &c.; to Son William 850 acres granted to me by an escheat formerly belonging to Nathaniel Floyd & c., and another tract part of which is leased to Christopher Wade; his wife to have the tract of land on which he lives, 850 acres formerly belonging to Capt. Vpton, and 300

acres formerly belonging to Mr. Seward, and she keeping the Brick housing and orchard in repaire; after her death they are to go to his son Joseph, as well as half the land at Curawaock for his natural life, and remainder to the heirs male of his body;

also tract at Manokin: to my mother Mrs. Mary Bridger 5 pounds yearly during her life. Lt. Coll. Jno. Pitt, Mr. Tho. Pitt and Coll. Arthur Smith to assist my wife, to whom I give 20 shillings apiece to buy Rings. Wife Hester Bridger Exx. 3 Aug. 1683. By a codicil he disinherits his son Joseph, "who I finde fly out with divers dissolute courses of life and is grown very disobedient to me." Entails the land that went to him on his other sons and divides the personal estate between his children Samuel, William, Martha, Mary, Elizabeth, and Hester. Dated 18 Oct., 1683. Proved May 8, 1686.

Will of Thomas Greene: Sons Thomas, George, William, John; wife Mary, dau. Mary Davis; to wife Mary and William Greene, Prudence G., Sarah G., Bridget G., Elizabeth G., and John G. all my personal estate. Dated 22 Oct., 1685; pr. June 9, 1686.

Receipt of Mr. Tho. Godwin for share of his wife Martha's legacy directed by Coll. Bridger's will: 203 pds. 8s. and 5 pence, one cover of a silver tobacco box and two silver candlesticks, containing 70 ounces; 5836 pds. tob. and caske in bls, 14 cattle, 7 hogs, 3 horses, it being her proportion, except of a sloop not yet appraised and of ninety-two hhds. tob., shipped to London and consigned to Mr. Perry and Lane. Dated 16 July, 1686.

Similar receipt by Capt. Rich'd Tibboth for his wife Mary, the money being 303L 8sh. and 5d., one silver punch Bowl, one small silver dish and one spoon, containing 70 oz.

Similar receipt by Mr. Tho. Lear in behalf of his wife Elizabeth.

Appraisment of Coll. Bridger's estate. Mentions chamber over the store, the store goods, upper chamber of the oulde bricke house. In the next chamber, in the first chamber of the first story, in the next chamber, dining room, children's chamber; uppermost chamber of the new house, middle uppermost chamber, 3rd chamber over the dining room, the gallery, parlor, hall, lower chamber, kitchen chamber, outer chamber, landing, kitchen, cellar, 13 negroes, 4 white servants; total value of goods including a sloop that will carry about 28 hhds., 816L 17s. 04, not counting 105 cows, 46 hogs, 7 sheep, 490 oz. plate, 60L in Spanish money, 42L 10 in English money, 14 horses and mares. [One parcell of Virginia made clothes.] Money due by bills: 155L 13.01. Tobacco debts, 22,216 lb. and 20,455. Bills of exchange, 296L, 15, 05. Several bills of exchange sent to Mr. Perry and sonn as by Journal of April, 1686, appears 502L, 07, 02. Due in porke, 1304lb; wheate, 3 bu.; Beefe, 527lb.

Will of Thomas Parnell, cooper, dated 10 Oct., 1687; proved June 9, 1688: Sons Thomas, Joseph; dau. Susanna; 3 daus; my children shall be brought up in the fear of the Lord and to learne to wright and reade; Sister Jemima Drake. My cloth coate or hayre camlett coat to Mr. John fulgeham; John Drake; Joane Johnson; cozen John Williams; cousen Sarah Williams to have my dau. Jane's best suit of apparell; Boaz Givin.

Will of John Marshall, X his mark: Son Humphrey, dau. Mary; "youngest son;" brothers Humphrey Marshall and Peter Best. Dated 4 Oct., 1687; Proved June 9, 1688.

Will of Geo. Cripps: Devises land to his servant Henry Slater; Edward Bechinoe, son of George Bechinoe, and Mary his wife, Elizabeth Guttridge, dau. of Capt. John Guttridge and Anne his wife; wife Mary Cripps; Capt. Guttridges and Wm. Evans overseers. Oct. 10, 1687.

Will of Thomas Pitt: To deare and loving wife Mary Pitt her first choyce of two of my negroes as alsoe the two diamond rings, her wedding Ringe and inamelled ring with all her wearing apparell and necklace of pearl; seven children, Thomas, Martha, Mary, Elizabeth, Henry, Anne and Patience Pitt; to his wife the plantaiton I now live on as far as the cart path that goeth from John Campion's alias Coll. Bacon's Plantation up

towards the church and soe joyning to Thomas Grosses; to each

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

245

of my daus, 5000 pds. of good tobacco; Mary Pitt whole and sole exx. Dated 21 Aprill, 1687; pr. Aug. 9, 1688. By codicil land left to Thomas Grosse and Francis Grosse, and to Michael Fulgeham. 21 Feb., 1687-8.

Will of Thomas Harris X his mark: Sons, Edward, Thomas, Robert, dau. Jane Jones, dau. Anne Harris; 3 youngest sons George, Martin, and William. 14 March, 1687-8.

Will of Robert Kae: To four grand daus., the daus. of Timothy Fern and Elizabeth his wife, 2 feather beds with their furniture; all the rest of my estate to my son Robert Kae. Pr. December 10th, 1688.

Will of Edward Brantley: Names sons Edward, Phillip, and John; Edward's son James, John's son John, dau. Mary Brantley, Phillip's son Edward. Pr. Jan'y 9, 1688-9.

Will of James Sampson, P mark: Dau. Margaret wife of Nicholas Wilson one silver Bowle and 2 silver wine cupps, one with a foot and the other with a bulge, and three silver spoons with nobbs at the ends, and six pounds sterling to buy her a silver Tankard, one sky colored water tabby gown, two fine holland pillow beeres with Elgin lace and one piece of stuffe strip't with blew, a round black scarfe with a flanders lace, and my best bed with blankets, sheets and coverlid and my cedar chest and cabinet, my horse and mare and filly; my son-in-law Nicholas Wilson a coasting coat and a blew silke sash and half my pewter, and one Gould ringe to his wife. I do likewise give him three of my oldest steeres, and the halfe of my hoggs and four of the best doeskines in the house, and a payre of buck-shoes and silver Buckells in them, &c.; legacy to Mr. George Moore, my red silk sash, &c.; dau. Clarke a large and a small Dram cupp, two silver spoones, &c., Son James my wearing ringe and one silver spoone and all my arms in my house and all my wearing apparell and the second best bed in my house with its furniture, and doeskins; various other legacies. 11 Feb., 1688. My wife's two daus. Elizabeth and Margaret referred to in a codicil. Pr. April 9, 1689.

John Goodrich, aged 37, on April 9, 1689.

Will of William Evans: Son Thomas all my land at King-sale being 400 acres more or less, my bible and all my armes; and remaining estate to be divided between wife and children. Mr. Robert fflake exor. Dated 12 July, 1689, pr. Aug. 19, 1689.

246

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY.

His inventory valued at 43397lb tob.; Libri of Bookes valued at 1400 pds. of tob.; 1 silver Tankard about a quart, 1 dram cup, 4 lignum vitae dram cups tipt with silver, &c.

Appraisement of Mr. Thomas Pitt's estate: Sum total, 43612lb tob. Mentions hall and closet, kitchen, entry, parlor, panthre, Hall chamber, parlor chamber, porch chamber, Vpper entry. One halfe of the sloop Martha, with her sails, and riggin, &c., belonging to Coll. William Cole and said Thomas Pitt worth 7000lb of tob.; a parsall of books in the closet worth 400lb of tob.

Deed of Tristram Nosworthy (1) in behalf of his daus. Sarah and Elizabeth Nosworthy. 1 May, 1690.

Will of Michael ffulgham: To son Anthony ffulgeham plantation where I now live; son Michael plantation on which Mr. William Baldwin lives; rent of the plantation to go towards the schooling of youngest children; dau. Sarah ffulgam, dau. Martha, daus. Mary, Susanna and Ruth; brother Nicholas, wife Anne ffulgeham, bros. John and Nicholas. Dated 17 Feb., 1690-1; pr. March 9, 1690-1.

Will of John Grove (2): John Murrey exor., and the 20 pds. sterling obligation of Arthur Allen I give out of the same to the aforesaid John Murrey 10 pds. and to Thomas proud five pds.

"And all my Bookes and papers and medicines and gally pots and glass bottles and the other five pounds I give to the repairing of our meeting house on Levy Necke field; legacies to Elizabeth Murrey, Susan Bressie, Samuel Newton, William Richards, John Lux, John Murrey's three children John, William and George.

"I doe earnestly desire of the Court that noe swearing should be urged to any about any concerning things of this my will, have-

(1) This family originated with "Lt. Col. Tristram Nosworthy (pronounced Nosory) of ye Ragged Islands in Virginia, gent." Lower Norfolk Co. records, 1656.

(2) A Capt. John Grove or Groves (who came from Bristol) was justice of Surry Co., and died about 1673. The testator above may have been some relation of the Quaker Joseph Groves, who wrote "New England Judged" -- a book containing a full account of the sufferings of the people called Quakers at the hands of the Puritans in New England. A copy is in the State Library. At Bristol are the wills of John Grove (1634), Alice (1630), Foulke Grove (1630), Thomas (1593 and 1693).

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

247

ing desired Thomas proud to send a coppie of this my will to whom I do give my money in England, which I account to be about sixty pounds -- that is, forty pds. to my sister's son Walter Potter and the remainder to my nephew Peter Grove and to Peter Grove aforesaid I give to him and his wife six lbs. of dowlas and six lbs. of canvass. And to theire son John Lewis my darke colored serge Coate, 10th of 10th month, 1689. John Grove. Witnessed by Tho. Taberer, Jno. Carell, Edward Miller, William Wilson, Thomas proud, and proved by the oaths of John Carrell, Edward Miller and William Wilson June 9th, 1691.

Will of Christopher Halliman: Sons Thomas, William, Christopher, son Richard, two daus., Anne, and Mary Atkisson, wife Mary Halliman. 24 Apri. 1691.

Will of Marmaduke Chericholm, late of Virginia, now resident in Charlestown in the county of Middlesex, in New England, Chirurgion: "Imprimis all my just debts to be paid and the residue of my estate I bequeath unto my good friend Bartholomew Greene, of Charlestown, mariner, aforesaid, from whom I have received many obliging kindnesses, and particular all that legacy bequeathed to me by the will of my honored father Thomas Chericholme, late of Wakefield, in Yorkshire, in England, apothecary, deceased." Dated 19 Nov., 1690; proved Novr 16, 1690.

Will of Colonel James Powell (1): Sister Mary my 16th pt. of the ship Anne and Mary, Capt. Tibbotts master; to Nicholas Wilson 5000 pds. of tobo. and my cloth coat with silver buttons and breeches of plate buttons. Margaret Wilson, wife to Nicholas, 10,000 pds of tobacco; to Anne Wilson, dau. of Nicholas Wilson, a negro girl named Franke; James Wilson the produce of sixty odd barrels of porke sent to Antegoe in Capt. Ravenscrafts sloop, and nineteen barrels of Nalles, from No. 1 to 19, and two young negroes; to godson James Baker, a mare filly and to Ambrose Griscoe ye first mare colt that falls this year; Capt. Richard Tibbotts ten pds. sterling, Henry Tooker 10 pds. ster'l, Henry Baker 10 pds ster'l, Richard Stone his debt; to Margaret Wilson 20 pds. ster'l, wife Anne, sole exx. Mr. Henry Tooker and Henry Baker overseers. Dated Jan. 15, 1692-3; pr. Feb. ye 9th, 1692-3.

(1) Col. Powell was a warm friend of Sir Wm. Berkely, and was wounded in the leg when Bacon besieged the Governor at Jamestown in 1676. He is described "as an honest, loyall person -- a great sufferer in his stock and otherwise." (See Va. Mag., Vol. V., p. 681.)

Will of Arthur Smith of Warresquiak in Virginia, Gent.:

Names sons Arthur and Richard Smith, godson Arthur Long; Son George Smith, dau. Jane Smith, son Thomas my seale ring of gold and two cows and two heifers and a bull and two breeding sows, a feather bed with furniture, a gun and all my Bookes, &c.; godson Arthur Virgin, son of Robert Virgin, Arthur Taylor, son of Jno. Taylor: his children "to be brought up in the fear of God and to learn to write and read"; son Thomas Smith, sole exor.; Mr. Peter Hull, Mr. Peter Knight and Mr. Geo. Hardy overseers, 20 shillings apiece to buy them Rings. Dated 1st Oct., 1645. Recorded February 9, 1693. Written by Clk underneath, "The old record being in many places disorderly and deficient; he was father of Col. Arthur Smith." (1)

Estate of Mr. Joseph Woory, (2) dece'd, L374, 7, 01 (year 1694): ffor his booke of Martyrs, one bible, one common prayer booke, Lex Mercatoria, a Lattin Testamant and a parcell of old books in Svo and duo., very inconsiderable, worth 01, 13, 04.

Samuel Bridger married the widow of Mr. Joseph Woory.

Will of Thomas Taberer, (3) dated 14 Jan., 1692: Gives "Basses Choyce," on which he now lives to Joseph Copeland, his grandson; gr.son Thomas Numan, son of John Numan and my dau. Ruth; grson Thomas Webb, son of William and dau. Mary Webb; dau. Christian's children and dau. Elizabeth Copeland's children (and to Elizabeth Wombwell's children); gr.dau. Christian Jordan; my son John Numan to keep Joseph to school till he can write and reade sufficiently. Pr. 9 Feb., 1694. Codicil, wherein he mentions 3 gr. children: Joseph Copeland, Thomas Numan and Isabella Newman. His inventory mentions: A

(1) Mr. Arthur Smith, aged 25, came to Virginia in 1622, in the company of Farrar Flinton. The above was ancestor of Arthur Smith, member of Congress. See his will published in full by R. S. Thomas, Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. VI., p. 113.

(2) Joseph Woory was nephew of Sir John Yeamans, Gov. of Carolina, and was one of the justices of Isle of Wight.

(3) This was probably the Justice Tabener, at whose house William Edmundson staid in 1672, and whose wife was very loving to the Quakers. Mr. Thomas writes his name Taberner, but it was really Taberer. His wife was a legatee under the will of Richard Bennett. See Va. Mag. of Hist. and Biog., III., pp. 53-56. So was Elizabeth Outland, whom Edmundson visited in 1675 at Chuckatuck, where he held "many precious meetings."

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS

249

parcell of Virginia blankets, one seader chest containing wearing apparell, one chest containing all the Books, one Danzick case with bottles; one desk containing writings, one greate trunk containing covering, lining, one riding hood and one silver headed cane; one small trunk, one cubberd Inlaid, one silver ladle, six silver spoones, one silver sack cup and one silver dram cup; one silver tobacco box and two copper boxes and two brass scales, 4 brass candlesticks, one pr. of snuffers, one looking glass, one barber's case with two Razors, one pare of Dogs and And-irons, one cold still and frame; a lining wheel and a wooling wheel, sheets, &c. By John Newman I. N his mark.

Inventory of Mr. Nicholas Smith: Parlor, Hall, Parlor chamber, Hall chamber, porch chamber, over the Parlor chamber, over the Porch chamber; Virginia Pewter spoons, Virginia cloth, plate in same chest, one large tankard, one large salt, one caudle cup, one sack cup and nine spoons in ye closet, &c. Total inventory, 338L:04 : 01-3/4; 81 oz. of plate at 5s : 6d; worth 22: 05 : 06.

Will of John Newman, I N: Wife Ruth, son Thomas, dau. Isabella. Legacy to Wm. Holden. 11 Dec., 1695.

Will of Jno. Goodrich: Sons George, John; daus. Constance Goodrich, Honnor Goodrich, Eliz. Goodrich, Mary Goodrich; 20 shillings apiece for wedding rings; Bro. Robert Kae and Mr.

May 1613 at London, England.¹⁰ He was received land grant Nathaniel Bass acquired Basse's Choise after 1616 and before 1624 as no grant for him appears in the earliest book which begins in 1616 and he is not shown in "Ancient Planters" which ends in 1616.

Basse's Choise is located SE of Jamestown. It is shown on maps prior to the 1622 massacre, but is left off maps starting 1632. The population in 1621 was estimated at 1,200, of which 347 were killed by the Indians. after 1616 at Isle of Wight County, VA. He was in business Nov. 4-6.

184. Court Minutes of the East India Company. Letter read from the Lord Admiral in behalf of James Erwyng to be a captain ; Committee to make excuses to his Lordship. Cannon's business. No further use for Capt. Harris' services. Joshua Bainbridge to be purser in the Moon. Business of Lawrence Waldo to be heard. Hogshead of pepper to be delivered to Guy Wood's widow. 100 barrels of oil to be delivered to [Rich.] Mountney, at 56s. a barrel. Business of Peter Floris heard. Gratuity of 50l. to Wm. Ebert for his services at Patani. 50l. adventure of Nathaniel Basse in the old joint stock to be sold. Minutes of a Meeting of the Committees at Blackwall on the 25th September 1617. Nov. 6.-Employment of Lawrence Potten. Objections against Lawrence Waldo for his behaviour to Rich. Sadler at Surat, "which struck such a grief unto him as that he never recovered it, unto his dying day ;" certificates produced of his honest carriage abroad ; Ambassador Roe's unfavourable opinion of him ; the Company contented to let him have his wages and certain mace free of freight. Propositions of Richd. Fursland for employment ; intention to send him to Acheen ; Nicolls to be brought away from thence, but the manner to be left to Capt. Jourdain, to have it effected quietly, lest he might incense the King to do some mischief. Payment of Joseph Salbancke's wages. Nathaniel Martyn to have his goods upon paying freight. Grant of 200l., upon the account of the sixth voyage, to Capt. Jourdain for his services. Agreement with Giles James to serve the Company seven years, dated 25th Oct. 1617 ; also with John Jourdain to serve the Company five years, dated 5th Nov. 1617. [Five and a half pages. Court Bk., IV., pp. 52-58.] in Nov 1617. He was in business May 19-23.

356. Court Minutes of the East India Company. Christopher Farewell's bonds for "true service" to be cancelled. There being many points unfit to be divulged in the letters from Persia which both the Spaniards and the Hollanders will be ready to take advantage of, the Committee only to be allowed to read them. Letter read from Aleppo, that the delay of Connok's previous letters was caused by his sending them by way of Marseilles; also of the danger of sending the two Arabs according to Connok's advice. Discussion whether in the letter from his Majesty to the King of Persia, the King's kindness in offering to give credit to his Majesty's subjects for 2,000 or 3,000 bales of silk, should not be acknowledged. A pinnacle of 130 or 140 tons, and not to draw more than 11 feet of water and of extraordinary length, to carry good ordnance "for offence," to be built for the coast of Persia. A Committee to appear before the Privy Council concerning Sir James Cunningham's business. Request of Mrs. Walthall to sell 100l. of her husband's adventure in the first joint stock, referred. Petition of Nathaniel Basse about brokerage. Petition of divers poor men of Blackwall, Ratcliffe, and Limehouse for employment and to be relieved from the opposition of the porters of London. Petition of Eliza, wife of John Noble and a prisoner with the Turks, for payment of certain debts. The lease of Leadenhall to be sealed by the Company. May 23.-Permission to Mary Walthall to pass over 100l. of her late husband's adventure in the first joint stock to the account of Humphrey Browne. [Two pages. Court Bk., IV., 175-177.] in 1618. He lived on 11 Feb 1618 at London, England (Citizen and Girdler lodging near Puddle Wharf according to Blackmansbury, Volumes 6-8). In 1619 The first occupants of this county known to history were the Warrascoyack Indians. Their village was seated somewhere on Burwell's Bay, on James river, and their territory extended some five miles along the shore and twenty miles inland. Their fighting strength amounted to forty warriors. They were visited by John Smith in the summer of 1608, and fourteen bushels of corn were supplied by them to the famishing colonists at Jamestown. When Smith and his party set out in December, 1608, to visit Powhatan at Werewocomoco, on the York, they spent their first night at Warrascoyack. Here they left Michael Sicklemore, a valiant soldier, whom the Indian king promised to furnish with guides to search the country about Roanoke Island for the lost colony of Sir Walter Raleigh, and Samuel Collier, a boy, who was to learn the Indian language. The chief warned Smith to be on his guard against Powhatan, and acted in good faith towards

Ja. Day overseers. Dated 9 June, 1695; pr. 10 Aug., 1696.

Will of Tho. Moore: Names Edward Champion, Jr., Orlando Champion and their father Edward Champion, Sen., (1) Alice Champion, dau. of said Edward Champion; Benjamin, son of Edward Champion, Sr., wife Elizabeth Moore and bro. George Moore, niece Magdalen Carter, Priscella Champion; wife and bro. exors., and Charles Champion and Mr. Carrell overseers. Proved 9, 10br, 1696.

Will of George Hardy: Son Richard Hardy, youngest son Thomas, gr.children Richard and George Jarett; two daus. Marg. and Sarah; gives his son Richard his part of a vessel and

(1) Champions and Traveses intermarried. See Vol. V., p. 16, VI., pp. 60-61. There is in the Surry Co. records a power of attorney from Edward and Elizabeth Travis, his wife, witnessed by John Champion and William Harrison, dated 1678. At Bristol are the wills of Kath-ering Champion (1616), William (1636), John (1705).. Hereinafter cited as "William and Mary."

¹⁰*Colonial Ancestors*; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrugh, Feb 2004; unknown compiler, compiler, "North Carolina State Archives"; *Ancestral File* Department of Cultural Resources - Archives and Records Section, NC Archives, 109 E. Jones Ave, Raleigh, NC 27611. Hereinafter cited as "NC State Archives."

Sicklemore(1) and Collier.(2)

The first English settlement in Isle of Wight county was begun by Capt. Christopher Lawne and his associates, Sir Richard Worsley, knight baronet; Nathaniel Basse, gent., John Hobson, gent., Anthony Olevan, Richard Wiseman, Robt. Newland, Robert Gyner, and William Wellis. On April 27, 1619, Capt. Lawne (and N. Basse) arrived in person at Jamestown, with one hundred settlers, in a ship commanded by Capt. Evans. ...

On the day this patent was awarded, Arthur Swain, Capt. Nathaniel Basse and others undertook to establish another plantation in the same neighborhood. Capt. Basse came over in person, and his plantation was known as "Basse's Choice," and was situated on Warrascoyack river.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS 207

The houses were building, when, in March, 1622, occurred the great massacre by the Indians. In the course of a very few hours one-fourth of the white population perished. The mortality in the plantations in Warrascoyack reached a total of fifty-three. Some miraculous escapes are recorded. The Indians came to one Baldwin's house and wounded his wife, but Baldwin, by repeatedly firing his gun so frightened them as "to save both her, his house, himself and divers others." At about the same time they appeared at the house of Master Harrison, half a mile from Baldwin's, where was staying Thomas Hamor, brother of Capt. Ralph Hamor, who also lived near by. The Indians pretended that they came to escort the captain to their king, who was hunting in the woods. The message was sent to the captain, but, he not coming as they expected, they set fire to a tobacco house, and murdered the white people as they rushed out of Harrison's building in order to quench the flames. Many were killed, but Thomas Hamor was saved by a chance delay. He remained to finish a letter, which he was engaged in writing. After concluding the letter, he went out, but seeing the commotion, and receiving an arrow in his back, he returned and barricaded the house. Then the savages set the house on fire, whereupon Hamor, with twenty-two others, fled to Baldwin's house, leaving their own burning.

In the meantime, Capt. Ralph Hamor was in utmost peril. He was on his way to meet the king, who had invited him, and came upon the savages chasing some of the whites. He returned to his new house, where, armed with only spades, axes, and brick-bats, he and his company defended themselves till the enemy gave up the siege and departed. At the house of Capt. Basse, however, in the same neighborhood, everybody was slain. Basse, who was in England at the time, escaped. He immigrated on 27 Mar 1619 to Jamestown, VA, Nathaniel, Mary and four children arrived at Jamestown Virginia on the Marygolde commanded by Captain Evans. They immediately settled near the mouth of a creek on the south side of the James which is still known as Lawne's Creek. Captain Lawne and Ensign Washer represented the settlement known as Lawne's Plantation in the first House of Burgesses on July 30, 1619. After Lawne died on November 11, 1619, the Company instructed the remaining associates that, in order to maintain their patent, new settlers must be transported to replace those who had died. They had until midsummer 1625 to bring the census up to 200. The Company also declared that the plantation was to be henceforth known as Isle of Wight. Had this not occurred, we might still be wrestling with the many spellings of Warrosquoyacke, the former name. Location. 37° 0.832? N, 76° 38.053? W.

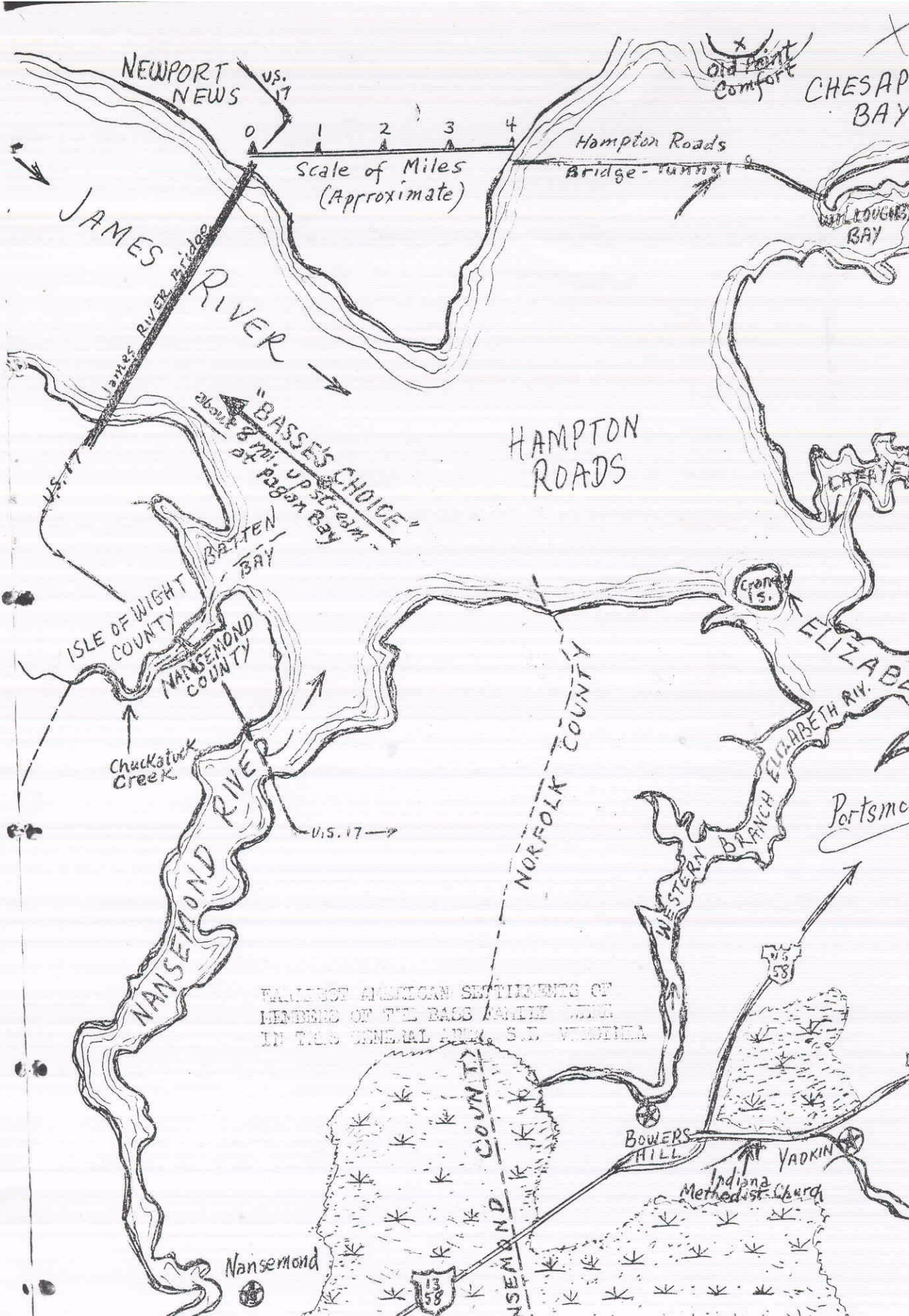
Here is another account by Colonel E. M. Morrison in "Isle of Wight County, 1608-1907" (the difference in dates can be explained by the change in calendar.

The first English settlement in Isle of wight County was made by Captain Christopher Lawne and Sir Richard Worsley, knight, baronet and their associates, viz Nathaniel Basse, gentleman; John Hobson, gentleman and (husband of Nathaniel's sister); Anthony Olevan, Richard Wiseman, Robert Newland, Robert Gyner, and William willis. On April 27, 1619 they arrived at Jamestown with one hundred settlers in a ship commanded by Captain Evans. They immediately settled near the mouth of a creek on the south side of the James River still known as Lawn'e Creek. Captain Nathaniel Basse and others undertook to establish another plantation in the same neighborhood -- and his plantation was known as "Basse's Choice" and was situated on Warrosquoyacke (now Pagan) River. He was on a trip Nathaniel Basse shipped to England on the supply ship to recruit new colonists for the plantation. on 2 Apr 1621.¹¹ He was received a patent Edward Bennett, a rich merchant of London, was granted a patent for a plantation upon the condition of settling two hundred immigrants. On the same day, Arthur Swaine, Nathaniel Basse and others applied for a patent to establish "Basses Choice" plantation and the patent was granted on

¹¹Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrrough, Feb 2004.

January 30, 1622. This was a 800 acre site on the west side of the Warrosquoyacke (now Pagan) River near Smithfield, Isle of Wight County, now off State Route 10. on 21 Nov 1621 at Isle of Wight County, VA.¹²

¹²Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

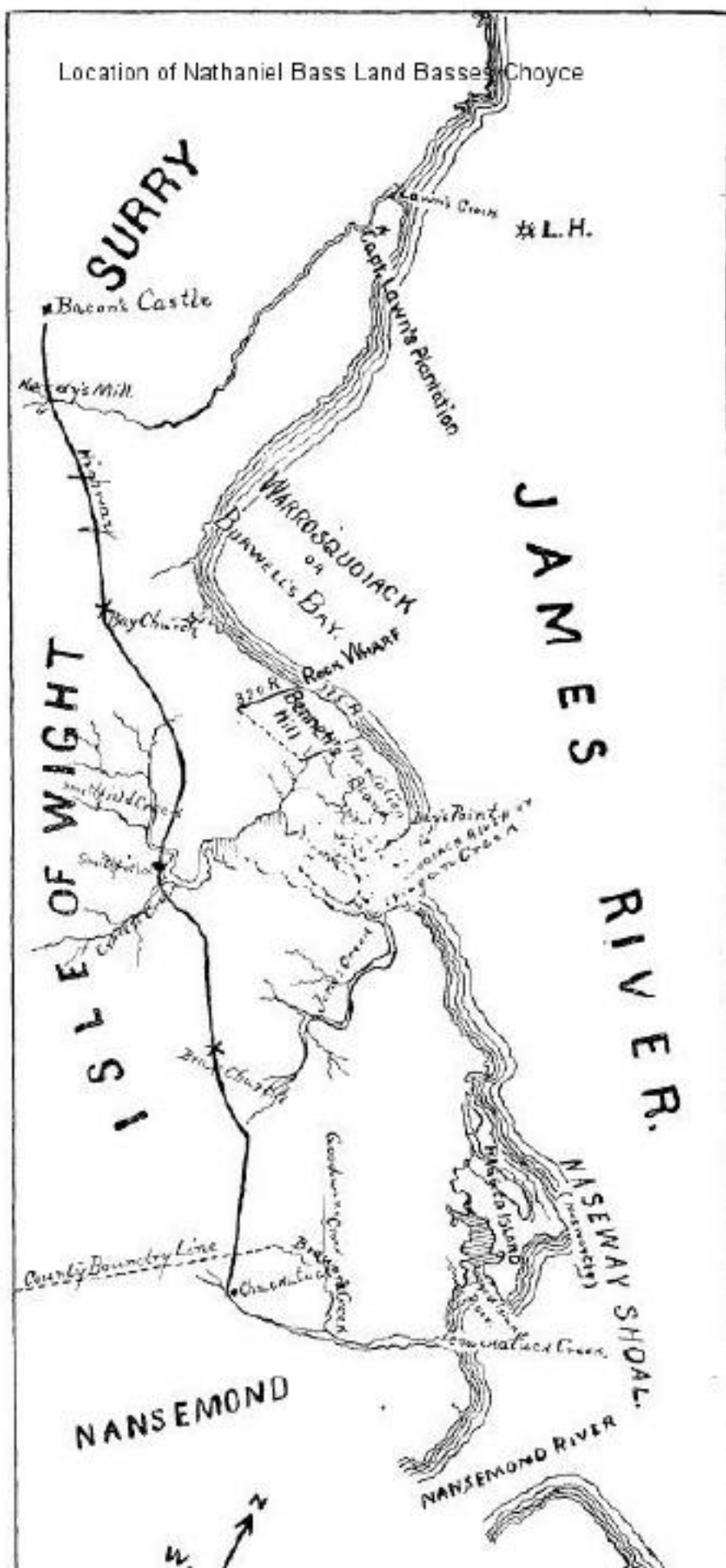


He was New Tag A muster(census) was taken following the Indian Massacre of 1621/22 to determine who was living and who died as a result of the attack.

Here is a list of the inventory of Basses choyse Corne 40 bushells;Pease 6 bushells;Fish 500 ct centum meaning hundred;Sows 1;Houses 2; Armes: corsletes, 4;Swords,6; Coates of Male, 7;peeses, 7; pistoles,2;petrenell, 1; Murderer, 1; powder, 12lb; lead, 300 lb. in 1622 at Basse Choise, Isle of Wight County, VA.¹³

¹³*Adventurers of Purse and Person to Virginia 1607-1624* . Hereinafter cited as *Adventurers of Purse*.

Location of Nathaniel Bass Land Basset Choyce



Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine, Vo., 7, No. 4 Apr., 1899. pp. 205-315. ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS II Historical Sketch

The houses were building, when, in March 22, 1621/22, occurred the great massacre by the Indians. In the course of a very few hours one-fourth of the white population perished. The mortality in the plantations in Warrascoyack reached a total of fifty-three. Some miraculous escapes are recorded. The Indians came to one Baldwin's house and wounded his wife, but Baldwin, by repeatedly firing his gun so frightened them as "to save both her, his house, himself and divers others." At about the same time they appeared at the house of Master Harrison, half a mile from Baldwin's, where was staying Thomas Hamor, brother of Capt. Ralph Hamor, who also lived near by. The Indians pretended that they came to escort the captain to their king, who was hunting in the woods. The message was sent to the captain, but, he not coming as they expected, they set fire to a tobacco house, and murdered the white people as they rushed out of Harrison's building in order to quench the flames. Many were killed, but Thomas Hamor was saved by a chance delay. He remained to finish a letter, which he was engaged in writing. After concluding the letter, he went out, but seeing the commotion, and receiving an arrow in his back, he returned and barricaded the house. Then the savages set the house on fire, whereupon Hamor, with twenty-two others, fled to Baldwin's house, leaving their own burning. In the meantime, Capt. Ralph Hamor was in utmost peril. He was on his way to meet the king, who had invited him, and came upon the savages chasing some of the whites. He returned to his new house, where, armed with only spades, axes, and brick-bats, he and his company defended themselves till the enemy gave up the siege and departed. At the house of Capt. Basse, however, in the same neighborhood, everybody was slain. Basse, who was in England at the time, escaped. The consternation occasioned by the massacre was such that the determination was taken to abandon all the plantations but seven or eight, viz., Jamestown, the settlements on the opposite side of the river (in Surry), Kecoughtan, Newport News, Southampton Hundred (including Hog Island), Flowerdieu Hundred, Sherly Hundred, and the plantation of Mr. Samuel Jordan, at Jordan's Point. All Warrascoyack, from Hog Island down the river shore for fourteen miles, was abandoned. But vigorous efforts were made by the authorities to dislodge the Indians from the locality.

In the fall succeeding the massacre an expedition was sent out under the command of Sir George Yeardley against the savages down the river. He drove out the Nansemonds and Warrascoyacks, burned their houses, and took their corn. On May 21, 1623, a commission was given to Capt. Roger Smith, who had served twelve or thirteen years in the wars in the Netherlands, to erect a fort on the shore opposite to Tindall's Shoals, where Capt. Samuel Each had a block-house in building. In the summer of 1623 the governor sent companies in all directions against the Indians. Capt. William Tucker, of Kecoughtan (Hampton) (Elizabeth City), commanded the expedition against the Nansemonds and Warrascoyacks. On the same day, August 2, 1623, all of these commands fell upon the Indians, slaughtered many, cut down their corn, and burnt their houses. A week after, Capt. Tucker went down a second time against the Nansemonds. The proprietors of the abandoned settlements took heart and were allowed to return to them. The census of February 6, 1623-'24, showed as then living at "Warwicke Squeake" and "Basse's Choice" fifty-three persons; twenty-six had died "since April last." Disease, in fact, proved more destructive to the settlers than everything else combined. Four-fifths of the colonists, including the new emigrants who arrived, died from this cause in the interval between 1619 and 1625. The census of 1624-'25 showed but thirty-one persons alive at Warrascoyack and Basse's Choice. Among those who had died were Mr. Robert Bennett (brother of Edward Bennett), who had come to the colony, and the first minister, Mr. William Bennett, doubtless one of the same family. After 1625 the colony took a new and more prosperous turn, Richard Bennett and his brother, Philip Bennet, came over also to see about the interests of their uncle, Edward, and their own interests. Capt. John Hobson now arrived, and Basse, Richard Bennett and Hobson were made members of the council. In 1624 the representative from "Basse's Choice" was John Pollington. In 1629 Warrascoyack (which term came to embrace Basse's Choice and all the other settlements in the Isle of Wight) were Capt. Nathaniel Basse, Richard Bennett, Robert Savin and Thomas Jordan. In March following, they were John Upton, John Atkins, Robert Savin and Thomas Burges. In September, 1632, they were Thomas Jordan and William Hutchinson.

A 1622 passenger list for the ship "Furtherance," from London, arrived in Virginia, lists Nathaniell Basse, age 35. (This seems to support the idea that he was in England at the time of the massacre.)

Feb. 16. 2. List of names of the living in Virginia. At College Land there were 29 persons; at the Neck of Land, 41; West and Sherlow Hundred, 45; Jordan's Journey, 42; Flourdien Hundred, 63, including 11 negroes; West and Sherlow Hundred Island, 24; Chaplain's Choice, 24; James City, 182, including 3 negroes; in the Main, 88; James Island, 39, including 1 negro; the Neck of Land, 25; over the river, 33; at the plantation over against James City, 77, including 1 negro; at the Glass House, 5; Archer's Hoop, 14; Hogg Island, 31; Martin's Hundred, 24; Warwick Squeak, 33, including 4 negroes; at Indian Thicket, 11; Elizabeth City, 319, including 2 negroes; Buckrow, 30; Bass' Choice, 20; at the Eastern shore, 76. Total 1,275, including 22 negroes. Also list of names of the dead in Virginia. Total 370, including 15 "killed" and two "lost." [?] Sent by Davison to Ferrar. See ante p. 43, No. 28.]¹⁴ He was shown on a deed in 1623 at Isle of Wight County, VA, Here appears to be the metes and bounds description of Basse's Choice. I beleive that the title Bassetts Choice is a typo. This information taken from "Direct Line Software Site.

typ patent ref VPB 7 p71 dat 23 Apr 1681 to Maj'r Tho. Taberer re 400a of high Land & Marsh Neer the Mouth of !the Pagan Creeke ! in the upper parish of the !Isle of Wight county & Comonly Called Bassetts Choice !150 part thereof being granted granted by !patent dated unto Mr Peter Knight (Peter married Nathaniel's daughter Genevieve) in !Ao. 1640 & by the sd Knight sold & Conveyed to !Mr John Bland of London m'rht & by Mr Giles Bland !his sonn & Attorney of the sd John Conveyed to the !said Taberer the 4th of December 1675 together !with a Confirmacon of the said Sale & a !relinquishment of Dower by Mrs Sara. Bland wife !& Genll. Attorney of the aforesd John 6 Oct 1679 !the remaineing 250 Acres being the greatest part !Marsh land Adjoyning to the former & due to the con Transportacon of 5 persons [8 listed] !The whole being thus bounded loc 118764 -46801 F127 L0 P255 pt A) at the Mouth of Palentines/Polentines swamp !wch swamp devideth the sd Taberers land from !the land of Mr James Day Im n32w; 80p; up Palentines Sw. pt B) a Locust saplin in John Mungoes line In SW; 92P; John Mungoe pt C) a white oake Neer the head of a small Gutt Im s25w; 60p; down a small Gutt

¹⁴John Basse Surmon Book (London: no publisher, 1616). Hereinafter cited as *Basse Sermon Book*.

frm Neer the head pt D) Hutchins Creeke Im s; 100p; guess, dwn Hutchins Cr. pt E) & the Crosse Creeke to Im ese; 100p; guess, down Crosse Cr. pt F) the Maine pagen Creeke Im ne; 120p; by the Maine Pagen Cr. pt G) the Mouth of the sd Taberers owne Creeke Im n; 50p; guess, up Taberers Cr. pt H) & Jones hole Creeke to Im ; ; up Jones hole Cr. pt I) a Locust post in the Marsh lc N53W; 40P; fm the Marsh. He was living on 16 Feb 1623 at Basse Choise, Isle of Wight County, VA (He had 300 acres planted at Warosquojacke Plantation. Here is a note from Stephaun DePaul that refutes the statement. The idea that he had "300 acres planted" comes from the document mistakenly read as Nathaniel receiving an additional patent in 1626 for 300 acres of land. This was a mistake of the W&MQ that has been perpetuated. You will find the original document on my website under the "Sermon Book" link at the top. The document actually reads "Capt. Nathl. York, 300 planted" and not "Nathaniel Basse."

January.

Virginia. 35. Musters of the inhabitants of the college land in Virginia; of the neck of land in the corporation of Charles City; West and Shirley Hundred; Jordan's Journey; Chaplain's Choice and the Truelove's Company; Peirseys Hundred; Pasbehaighs and the Maine belonging to the corporation of James City; James City and Island; of a neck of land near James City; Hog Island; Martin's Hundred; Mulberry Island; Wariscoyack; Bass's choice; Newport News; Elizabeth City; and of the Eastern shore over the Bay; taken between the 20th Jan. and 7th Feb. together with the names of the ships in which the people arrived in the colony, and a list of the provisions brought by each; also a list of the dead in the several plantations. 116 pages).¹⁵ He appeared on the census of 16 Feb 1624 (2. List of names of the living in Virginia. At College Land there were 29 persons; at the Neck of Land, 41; West and Sherlow Hundred, 45; Jordan's Journey, 42; Flourdien Hundred, 63, including 11 negroes; West and Sherlow Hundred Island, 24; Chaplain's Choice, 24; James City, 182, including 3 negroes; in the Main, 88; James Island, 39, including 1 negro; the Neck of Land, 25; over the river, 33; at the plantation over against James City, 77, including 1 negro; at the Glass House, 5; Archer's Hoop, 14; Hogg Island, 31; Martin's Hundred, 24; Warwick Squeak, 33, including 4 negroes; at Indian Thicket, 11; Elizabeth City, 319, including 2 negroes; Buckrow, 30; Bass' Choice, 20; at the Eastern shore, 76. Total 1,275, including 22 negroes. Also list of names of the dead in Virginia. Total 370, including 15 "killed" and two "lost." [? Sent by Davison to Ferrar. See ante p. 43, No. 28.]). He was elected on 16 Feb 1623/24 at Isle of Wight County, VA (On February 16, 1623, on May 10, 1625, and again on October 16, 1629 he was elected to the House of Burgesses for Warroquoyacke. Basse was commissioned to hold courts in 1623, to try all cases except capital offense, and to be Justice of the Peace in 1632. He also was named Commander of Warroquoyacke County in 1628. In 1631, he was appointed to the Governor's Council of Virginia.s in 1626).¹⁶ He witnessed A commission to Nath Bass with three others to try all cases in a plantacion (sic) except capital offences. Capt. Nat Basse to ransom Englishman prisoners of Nansemund Indians. (sic) in 1626.¹⁷ He witnessed Nath. Basse of Basse's Choice is member of House of Burgesses in 1629 at Isle of Wight County, VA.¹⁸ On 8 Apr 1629 **Here are some examples of the type of civil matters that Nathaniel had to wrestle with:**

H[enry] R[ead] Mcllwaine (1864-1934), ed, *Minutes of the Council and General Court of Colonial Virginia, 1622-1632, 1670-1676, with Notes and Excerpts from Original Council and General Court Records, into 1683, Now Lost* (Richmond : The Colonial Press, Everett Waddy Co., 1924).

[*193]

8 daie of Aprill A^o Dmi 1629

A CO^{RT} at James City the 8th daie of Aprill A^o Dmi 1629 present

John Pott Esq^r Gouverno^r & c Cap^t: Smyth.

At this Court was heard a difference dependene *Gilbert Whitefeld* p^t against *Rob^{te} Poole* defend^t and it appeared that *Rob^{te} Poole* was indebted unto the said *Gilbert* in the some of 194¹¹ of tobaccoe and nyne barrells of Eares.

Whereuppon it was agreed betweene them and the co^{rt} have thought fitt that the said *Rob^{te} Poole* shall give security to the said *Whitefeld* for the paym^t of the said *Tobaccoe* at the next cropp and to paie the Come at or before the first of *May* next.

A comission was graunted unto *Rob^{te} Poole* to goe a trading for Come to the *Easterne Shore*.

At the Co^{rt} a Controversie depending between *Musick*[?] *William*[?] and *Richard Bennett*[?] was . . . Concerning a granting of a leafe of Certaine land in *Warroquoaiche*[?] and for that there was not witnes produced to prove anything on eyther partes the Co^{rt} hath referred the examinacon of the Contest to Cap^t *Baffe*[?] and hath retourned to same to the Gouverno^r and Councell at the next Quarter Co^{rt} heare holden.

George Vnwise aged thirty yeares or thereabouts sworne and exaied sayth that *Dorcas Howard* his maide being at worke in the grounde on *Monday* the two and twentieth daie of *March* last past, as this exaite taketh it, shee began to complaine that she was not well and being come into the howse shee fell very sick Whereuppon this dep^t demaunded of her what shee ayles who answered *I am very ill in my body*, and wished that her dame were wth her for her dame could give her ease, then this dep^t demaunded of her if she were wth Childe to wch she answered noe whereuppon this dept threatened to beat her if shee would not tell him the truth why she was so payned and then presently she confessed she was wth Childe and that *Rob^{te} Gage* was the ffather And [then] this exaite bade her goe to bed and asked her [to] call some weomen to her, but shee intreated [that] hee would not And in the morning (the said *Dorcas* being in bed) this exaite demaunded of her how shee did who answered *I have had a mischance*, And then presently hee came to his wife and told her of it and asked her what hee should doe who bade him goe backe and call some weomen to view the Child. Whereuppon this dep^t sent for one *Moorecocks* wife who came and looked uppon it but whether it were borne alive or deade this dep^t knoweth not, nor more to this matter cann hee depose.

Elizabeth Moorecocke the wife of *Reignald Moorecocke* of the age of thirty yeares or thereabouts sworne and exaied sayth that *George Vnwin* came to this exaiats howse and told her that her [his] maide was broughte a bed and had Carried out the Childr but had not buried it and desired this dep^t to come and view it whereuppon this depon^t went wth him and looked uppon

¹⁵Hotten, *Original Lists of Persons of Quality - 1600 to 1700* (No place: no publisher, no date).

¹⁶Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁷"*Virginia Magazine of History*, 7 p. 49.

¹⁸"unknown short article title."

the Childe w^{ch} was a boy, and the mould of the head was bruised, but for anyother thing this dep^t could perceave the Childe might bee borne alyve, and this is all this dep^t can depose in this matter.

This Re was continued till *March Q^{ter} Co.*

At this Co^t *George Vnwin* planter did acknowledge to owe unto our soveraigne Lord the King 40¹¹ soveraigne *englishe* wth condicon *Dorcas Howard* shall appeare at the Quarter Co^t to Holden at *James Citty*

At this Co^t the Church wardens of the parishe of the lower partes of *Eliz Citty* did present that *William Capps* and *John Sipse* parishioners there doe not repaire nor frequent the said parishe Church to hear dyvine service according to the lawes and orders of this Colony in such cases provided, *It is therefore ordered* that for soe long tyme as it shall be proved that the said *Capps* and *Sipse* have been absent from the said Church, that they shall pay such fines as by an actte therefor made are provided to be paid: the said fines to be levied at the next Crop by way of distresse.

The issue below became the historical novel "The Captain and Thomasine" published in 2010 by Don Floyd at Lulu.com.

[*194]

Exaicons taken before *John Pott* Esq^r gouerno^r the 25th day of *March A^o* [1629]

ffrancis England of the age of twenty yeares or therabouts sworne and exaied faith That *Thomas Hall* (being exaied by Cap: *Basse* wether hee were man or woeman (as himselfe did confesse to this exaite) toulde this exaite that hee answered Cap^t: *Basse* that hee was both man and woeman And this exaite further sayth that the said *Hall* being at *Atkins arbor* one *Nicholas* . . . asked him why hee went in woemans aparell the said *Hall* answered in the hearing of this dep^t *I goe in woemans aparell to gett a bitt for my Catt* And he further sayth that there was a Rumor^t and Report that the said *Hall* did ly wth a maid of M^r *Richard Rodes* being at the upper plantacon after it had beene rumored that the said *Hall* was a man and that hee was put in mans apparell the said *Hall* being then there with them, the said *Rodes* tould *Hall* *thou hast beene reported to be^e a woman and now thou art proved to bee a man, I will see what thou carriest*, Whereuppon the said *Rodes* laid hands uppon the said *Hall*, and this exaite did soe likewise, and they threw the said *Hall* on his backe, and then this exaite felt the said *Hall* and pulled out his members whereby it appeared that hee was a perfect man, and more hee cannot depose. *John Atkins* of the age of 29 yeares or thereabouts sworne and exaied deposeth and sayth That M^r *Stacy* having reported that *Hall* now a servante unto this exaite was as hee thought a man and woeman, not long after, the said *Hall* (being then servante to Rob^{te} *Eyros* and *John Tyos*) and being at *Nicholas Eyros* his howse *Alice Longe* *Dorothee Rodes* and *Barbara Hall* being at that tyme in the said howse, uppon the said Report did search the said *Hall* and found (as they then said) that hee was a man but the said *Tyos* swore the said *Hall* was a woeman (as the said *Dorothee Rodes* did often affirme unto this depo^t Whereuppon Cap: *Basse* exaied the said *Hall* in the presence of this dep^{te} whether hee were man or woeman, the said *Hall* replied hee was both only hee had not the use of the mans parte . . . was a peece of fleshe growing at the . . . belly as bigg as the topp of his little finger [an] inch longe whereuppon Cap^t: *Basse* Commanded [him] to bee put in woemans apparell, but the aforesaid searchers were not fully resolved, but stood in doubte of what they had formerly affirmed, and being (about the twelveth of *february*) at this exaiates howse the said *Hall* dwelling then wth him, and finding the said *Hall* asleepe did againe search him and then allsoe found the said *Hall* to bee a man and at that present[ly] called this exaite to see the proof therof, but the said *Hall* seeming to starre as if shee had beene awake this exaite lefte him and at that instant Could see nothing But the *Sunday* following, those serchers being againe assembled and the wife of *Allen Kinaston* and the wife of *Ambrose Griffen* being in Company wth them were againe desirous to search the said *Hall*, and having searched him in the prnce [presence] of this Deponent did then likewise finde him to bee a man Whereuppon this exaiat asked him if that were all hee had to w^{ch} hee answered *I have a peece of an hole* and thereuppon this dep^t commanded him to lye on his backe and shew the same And the said woemen searching him againe did againe find him to bee a man Whereuppon the s^d exaite did Comaunde him to bee put into mans apparell And the day following went to Captaine *Basse*, and tould him that the said *Hall* was founde to bee a man and desired that hee might be punished for his abuse And this dep^t further sayth that the said *Hall* (as this dep^t hath heard) did question the said *Alice Long* for reporting that hee had layen wth a mayd of M^r *Richard Bennetts*, to w^{ch} shee answered *I reported it not*, but *Penny* [?] *Tyos* his man reported soe much And this is all this exaite can say.

[*195]

Thomas Hall exaied saith that hee being borne at or neere *Newcastle uppon Tyne* was as hee hath beene often tould Christned by the name of *Thomasine* and soe was called and went Clothed in woemans apparell there untill the age of twelve yeares at w^{ch} age the said Exaiats mother sent him to his Aunte in *London* and there hee lyved ten[?] ye[ares] untill *Cales* Accon, at w^{ch} tyme a brother of his being pressed for that service this exaite Cut of his heire an Changed his apparell into the fashion of man and went over as a souldier in the *Isle of Ree* bing in the habit of a man, from whence when he was retorne hee came to *Plymouth*, and there hee changed himselfe into woemans apparell and made bone lace and did other worke wth his needle, and shortly after Shipping being ready for a voyage into this Country hee Changed againe his apparell into the habit of a man and soe came over into this Country.

It was thereuppon at this Co^t ordered that it shall be published in the plantacon where the said *Hall* lyveth that hee is a man and a woeman, that all the Inhabitants there may take notice thereof and that hee shall goe Clothed in mans apparell, only his head to bee attired in a Coyfe and Crosclouth[?] wth an Apron before him And that hee shall finde suerties for his good behavio^r from Quarter Co^t to Quarter Co^t untill the Co^t shall dischardge him and Cap^t *Nathaniel Basse* is ordered to see this order executed accordingly.

ffor as much as Edward Waller did at this Co^t comence his suit against *John Johnson* about the sale of a sowe and the taking away of a peece, and because *Johnson* testified to this Co^t that hee sent a pigg in parte of satisfaccon and the peece by *Richard Dolphenby* to the said *Edward Waller* the w^{ch} the said *Waller* affirmed hee never received And for that the said M^r *Waller* hath dyvers wintesses to examine in this Cause w^{ch} at this Co^t were not present *It is ordered* that the Captain *Smyth* shall examine the said *Dolphenby* uppon his oath Concerning the same, and the Cause is referred to bee determined at the next Quarter Co^t

It is ordered that every comaunder wth in the severall plantacons of this Colony shall take a generall muster of all the inhabitants men woemen and Children as well *Englishe* as Negroes inhabiting wth in the same and Retorne a lift of their names to the Governo^r and Councell at the next Quarter Co^t to bee here holden.

John Virgo being bound by Recognizance to appear this Co^t hath made default whereby hee hath forfe[yted] to the Kings Ma^{tie} 40^l sterling.

Charles Waller being bound by Recognizance to appear at this Co^t hath made defaulte whereby hee hath forfeited 40^{li} sterling to the Kings Ma^{tie}

. In 1631 In 1631 Nathaniel was sent to New England to try to entice settlers to come to the warmer climate of Virginia. After this he does not appear in records. Possibly he returned to England, possibly the records are lost. Interestingly though, there was an earlier Bass in New England who married an Alden of the John Alden family. I find it interesting that a number of southern Bass families chose to name a son "Alden". Possibly there is a connection here that has yet to be discovered. MVW Nov. 1999.

His plantation Basse Choise disappears from the maps of 1632. Possibly he sold the land. However, there are several mentions of people receiving land in 1639 and 1642 with the description of their land as "adjoining or near the land of Captain Bass.

Note too that some of the Basse family may have been either settlers to or traders with the Carribean Islands - possibly Barbados.

Here is another note on the topic:

On 6 Mar 1631/32 Nathaniel was commissioned to "trade between 34 and 40 N Latitude, England, Nova Scotia and West Indies to invite inhabitants hither". (If they were tired of cold and damp!) Nathaniel was also commissioned to trade to the Dutch Plantation and Canada. He was given power of Justice of Peace. (Virginia Council & General Court Records 1626-1634)

Dec. 20 1631Dec. 20.

James City. [Virginia.] 34. Accord between the Governor and Council of Virginia; concluding and silencing by a peaceable period all those "unhappy differences which have interrupted all good proceedings" for the benefit of the plantation. Signed by Sir John Harvey, Fras. West, Sam. Mathews, Wil. Claybourne, Wil. Tucker, Wil. Ferrar, Hen. Finch, Nath. Basse, John Utie, Thos. Purvisse, Hugh Bullock, and Wil. Peirce.[Copy].¹⁹ He witnessed Sr. John Harvey Kn't Gov'r signs a com'con to Nat. Basse to trade with New England etc. Same commission listed stating that Basse was to go to "New Engand, Nova Scotia or ye West Indie Islands with instruction to invite the inhabitants to Va. if any so inclined, especially if those of New England dislike the coldness of the climate or bareness of the soil, to offer the Delaware Bay. on 6 Mar 1631 at Isle of Wight County, VA.²⁰ He was living on 20 Apr 1641 at Isle of Wight County, VA (Evidently Nathaniel was still living in 1641 as a land grant to Thomas Morrey says that the Morrey land adjoins that of Captain Nathaniel Basse).²¹ He witnessed the Nathaniel BASSE (2272) on 1 Jul 1643 (Ordered, That Mr. Alexander Hampden shall have Leave to go to Captain Basse's House at Hackney (outside London), for the Recovery of his Health: And that Captain Basse do take care, that his Keepers be continually with him).²² He died in 1655 at St. Alphage, Cripplegate, London, England, Old Basse family notes say that ffather (sic) Nathaniel Basse departed this life in Middlesex (illegible) a Google search reveals that Middlesex is the city of London, in 1654. St. Alphage was located in the city wall. The following from the William and Mary Quarterly should put to rest the idea that Nathaniel died without heirs. "Basse's Choce" originally called for three hundred acres, but its acreage was really four hundred, of which two hundred and fifty acres was marsh land. Mr. Peter Knight, who may have married one of Basse's daughters, patented one hundred and fifty acres of the same in 1640, and two hundred and fifty-five in 1643. It was situated on the east side of Pagan Bay. Peter Knight sold the tract to John Bland, the eminent London merchant, and in 1659-'60 the General Assembly ordered Mr. William Drummond as agent of **"the coheirs of Basse" to pay Theodorick Bland, of Westover, brother and agent of John Bland**, twenty-five hundred pounds of tobacco damages awarded in some suit probably affecting this land. Note that the Govonor's name was Sir John Harvey Knight.²³

¹⁹Cavaliers and Pioneers - Abstracts of Virginia Land Patents and Grants 1623-1666. Hereinafter cited as Abstracts of Virginia.

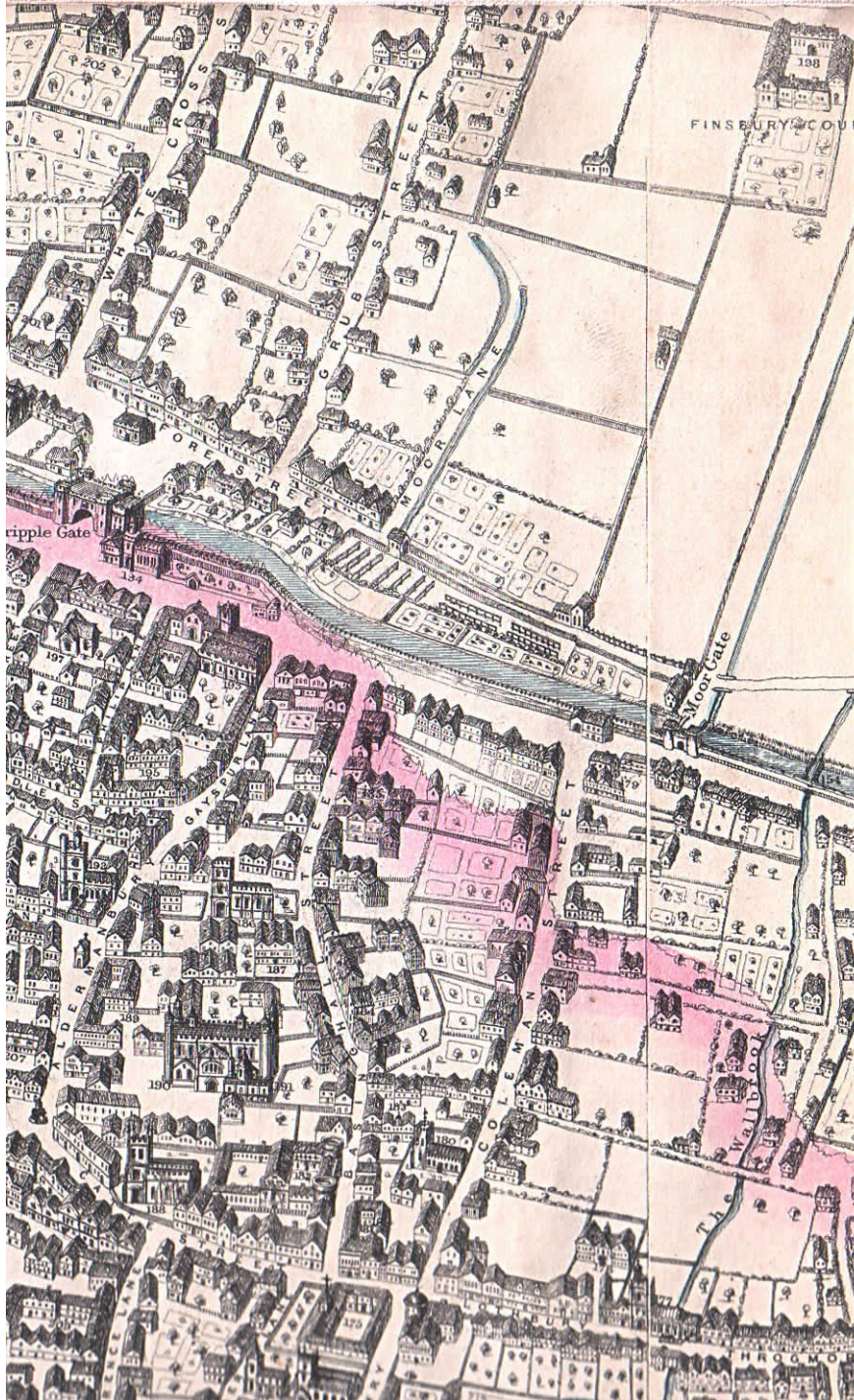
²⁰"unknown short article title."

²¹John Bennett Boddie, editor, *Seventeenth Century Isle of Wight County Virginia* (No place: no publisher, 1938). Hereinafter cited as *17th Century Isle of Wight*.

²²unknown subject unknown record type, by unknown photographer.

²³*Colonial Ancestors*.





He was buried on 3 Jul 1655

One last point, you have referenced Albert Bell's mistaken date for the burial of Nathaniel Basse. It's the only mistake he made that I know of, but it is without question a mistake. He places Nathaniel's burial on 3 July 1654 when it actually occurred on 3 July 1655. As I have stated in the Polemic, I have corresponded directly with the Guildhall Library's Keeper of Manuscripts:

I have received a transcription of the burial record for Nathaniel Bass (sic) from St. Alphage Church, "The parish register of St. Alphage London Wall (Guildhall Library Ms 5746/1): 'July 3rd Nathaniel Bass [sic] in the Church.' The burial took place in 1655" --Guildhall Library Manuscripts Section, Aldermanbury, London EC2P 2EJ, Tel: 020 7332 1863. The statement that the burial took place in 1655 is that of the Keeper of Manuscripts: Stephen Freeth. He states, "Having re-examined the microfilm of burials in St. Alphage London Wall 1613-1678 (Guildhall Library Ms 5746/1), I can confirm that the transcription is correct and that the burial of Nathaniel Bass took place July 3rd 1655. As I am sure you are aware, the old system of dating meant that the new year occurred at the end of March, as opposed to the end of December as it is now. **It is possible that the**

confusion arose as the page displaying this entry is headed 1654. However, the margin clearly shows the beginning of 1655 at the end of March. I hope this has clarified the matter for you."²⁴ He witnessed the Nathaniel BASSE (2272) on 30 Aug 1655 at England (a deposition was taken in London. It is a highly controversial document. MVW ordered an original and below is a transcription copied from the original located in the Corporation of London Records Office filed in the Mayor's Court Deposition Box 5
The 30th day of August 1654/55

"Major Edward Basse citizen & mercer of London aged sixty years or thereabouts, & Dame Mary Poole the wife of Sir John Poole of Bromley in the county of Middlesex Barronett (written over the word knight which is crossed out) aged 57 years or thereabouts sworn & examined at the instance & request of Hester Hobson of Bromley aforesaid widow, Abigail Thorpe of Chissell Hampton in the county of London widow and Thomas Hastler citizen & barber surgeon of London and Sarah his wife Depose & say upon their corporal oaths Severally that the said Hester Hobson Abigail Thorpe & Sarah Hastler were are the sisters & coheirs of Luke Basse who died a bachelor (written over the word unmarried which is crossed out) & was late brother & heir of Nathaniel Basse their brother also of the whole blood lately also deceased in Virginea without issue as these deponents have understood: And that the said sisters & deceased brother were all of them the legitimate children of Humphrey Basse of London merchant & Mary his wife long since deceased And that no brother or other sister (than the three before named) of the said deceased brother are now surviving The said deponents giving for reason of their knowledge in the premises that they had long acquaintance with the said parents & children and much & familiar conversation with them. Sworn in court Ed: Basse, Mary Pole

And we the said London Mayor & Aldermen do further certify that the said Hester Hobson & Abigail Thorpe present in court did declare that they have appointed their said brother-in-law Thomas Hastler their true and loyal attorney to recover & receive all estate real and personal due or accruing unto them as heirs of the aforesaid brother or otherwise after their decease in Virginea, and for such further end & purposes as in & by their letter of attorney hereunto annexed is more fully mentioned and expressed."

Note: that there has been an enormous amount of speculation about this document. I personally believe that it was either falsely sworn or is being misinterpreted due to lack of punctuation. MVW 2-02.

Here are my (MVW) thoughts: One can read it as saying that Luke the bachelor was without issue. After all the deposition was for the heirs to secure property from Luke and they were testifying that he left no heirs. The part about his brother already deceased was only to identify Luke with certainty. In 1659/60 the General Assembly of Virginia ordered William Drummond as agent of "the coheirs of Basse" to pay a sum to Tehdorick Bland of Westover for some suit affecting the Basse land.

The continuing controversy over the lineage of Nathaniel Bass and the veracity of the Albert D. Bell Book "Bass Families of the South" has caused me to try to define the problems and look for possible answers. I do this for my own understanding and offer it to others for consideration. I welcome definitive challenges to my suggestions as long as they are substantiated by more than simple allegations. Let me define the problems I see:

What do we make of the August 30th 1654 deposition by Major Edward Basse age sixty and Dame Mary Poole regarding the whereabouts of Nathaniel Bass at the time of their brother Luke's death?
When and how did the name "Keziah" enter into the Bass family?
What do current researchers say about the Basse family?

First, lets examine the 1654 deposition. I read a transcript of the deposition in the NITA (Nansemond Indian Tribal Association) booklet, but just to be certain I ordered an original copy from the London Records Office. The NITA transcript is accurate however lack of punctuation can alter the meaning. One sentence of the deposition troubled me. The deponents, Maj. Edward Bass age 60 and Dame Mary Poole age 57 are testifying that three sisters of Nathaniel and Luke Bass (Hester, Abigail and Sarah) are the sole living heirs of Luke and therefore entitled to his estate. The sisters are represented by Sarah's husband, Thomas Hastler as their attorney "to recover and receive all estate real and personal due or accruing unto them as heirs of the aforesaid brother or otherwise after their decease in Virginia..."

The deposition is valid up through the point where Major Edward Bass and Dame Mary Poole declare that they know the three sisters as well as the family and testify "that they are the sisters and coheirs of Luke Basse who died a bachelor".

The deposition dissolves into hearsay with the next phrase that states: "and was late brother and heir of Nathaniel Basse their brother also of the whole blood lately also deceased in Virginea without issue as these deponents have understood". I am troubled by the phrase "without issue as these deponents have understood." It does not say they knew it for a fact from their own knowledge, but merely that they "understood" it. Understood from whom? Unless I know something for sure I can only offer hearsay evidence that someone else told me.

If the sisters were seeking to get clear title to the estate of their brother Luke they certainly had a big interest in making sure that the deponents Major Edward Basse and Dame Mary Poole "understood" that the only threat to their claim, namely their "lately also deceased in Virginia brother Nathaniel" left no heirs to challenge them.

²⁴Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

Think for a moment what you might say in the circumstances. You need clear title, the people who might challenge your claim are far away and you are asked what you know. How simple just to say "best we know there are no other heirs". Its not a lie, but its also not first hand knowledge. I think that is exactly what happened.

Nathaniel was buried in London just six weeks before the deposition. He would have been about sixty four at the time of his death. By then his heirs and any family that he left in Virginia were grown and scattered and probably had no contact with England, and even if they did how could they possibly afford the time or money to bring a lawsuit?

For whatever reason, Nathaniel had returned to London late in life and died and was buried there. Then his brother Luke died leaving only the three women one of whom had a husband to represent the group, and they seek to get clear title to Luke's estate by declaring that Nathaniel had no issue. Clean as a hounds tooth!

Where is either Luke's or Nathaniel's will? Perhaps finding one would clarify the situation. Until such time I suspect the deposition was an expeditious way of clearing title.

Much has been made about the name Keziah relative to Nathaniel's son John. It is quite true that the John Bass sermon book does not use the word Keziah in connection with John's wife, Elizabeth. BUT, page 12 of Albert D. Bell's book "Bass Families of the South" says, "Keziah Basse beloved wife of John Basse departed this life the 4 days of Xber in the Yeare of our Blessed Lord and Savr 1676. Elsewhere on the same page is: John Basse married Keziah Elizabeth Tucker daughter of Robin the Elder of ye Nansimuns kingdom..." Where did Bell get this information and where is it now?

Page four of Dr. Bell's book states "I visited the late Jesse L. Bass, chief of the Nansemonds, at his home in the Portsmouth General Hospital where he passed away in 1960 at the age of 85...his mind and memory were clear. Without his help it would have been almost impossible to find the answers to many questions that had puzzled me. Because he was sympathetic, various members of the Bass families of Norfolk County (and their relatives of other names) allowed me to copy their precious ancient family documents containing important information that is not available elsewhere. (pp 11-16) of this section."

The various papers were and perhaps still are with family members. Bell saw them and recorded them without comment. He had no reason to lie or fabricate. The name Keziah which by the way persisted in the Georgia branch of the family into the mid 1800's was legitimately taken from Bass family papers.

Were there two sermon books? I do not think so. I believe there was one sermon book and "A Holy Bible bound with the Book of Common Prayer 1725 that was recently in the possession of Justin Bass of the Yadkin community." As Dr. Bell recorded in his book. Fortunately Dr. Bell saw these and numerous other records recorded on "loose papers – brittle and faded" and made a record. Where are the originals today? Likely they are stashed in the attic or archives of a descendant living in the Smithfield area.

Recent authors (1993) have opined on the Basse family. The following is taken from "Historic Isle of Wight" by King: "By 1631 Nathaniel Basse left Virginia on a mission to seek settlers from New England. For a long time his disappearance from the Virginia scene was a mystery; now we know he returned to England where he died on July 3, 1654/55." And, on page nine of the same book we find: "The Bible (obtained by Oliver Perry) documented the 1638 marriage of Englishman John Basse to Keziah Elizabeth Tucker." (Remember, there is both a Bible as well as a Sermon book.)

For me, the preponderance of the evidence points to Nathaniel Basse son of Humphrey and father of John married to Keziah Elizabeth as our connection with history, the Indians and the merchant Basse family of London. Prove me wrong by finding a will, letter of administration etc. for Nathaniel or Luke. Until then I find it a bit amusing to think of the three sisters and the attorney husband being clever enough to get clear title to Luke's estate through the use of a deposition containing the nebulous phrase "without issue as these deponents have understood" or in today's parlance – "Well, if you say so..."

May 2008 - I am now absolute positive that the Nathaniel Basse in Virginia is in fact only one person and he is our ancestor. Boyd's Inhabitants of London and Boyd's Family Units states: "Nathaniel, son of Humphry Basse, went to Virginia where some of his children settled. It is believed he returned to England." Stephane Paul points out that Boyd's is a modern compilation of records which is true however there is a statement that supports this record. In addition a statement dated May 17 1797 regarding a William Basse (which William is unknown) states that "all the Bases of this county descent from Captain Nathaniell Basse, as satisfactorily proved by the records preserved." Test William Portlock. A copy is at the North Carolina State Archives (which makes one think that above William left Virginia for North Carolina)).²⁵ He witnessed the Nathaniel BASSE (2272) in 1659 at Isle of Wight County, VA (The General Assembly ordered Mr. William Drummond as agent of the co-heirs of Basse to pay to Theodorick Bland of Westover, brother and agent of John Bland, 2500 lbs. of tobacco, dowages awarded in same suit affecting the land. n In 1675 Giles Bland, son and agent of John Bland, sold Bases Choice to Maj. John Taberer. Sarah Bland, wife of John, relinquished her dower. Note from MVW - this should put to rest forever the notion that Nathaniel Basse left no heirs as the Nansemond Indians would have us believe).²⁶ In 1659 Historical Sketch: Soon after Virginia yielded to the authority of the Parliament, the two representatives from the Isle of Wight, John Hammond and James Pyland, were expelled from the House of Burgesses -- the one because of his "scandalous" character, and "being

²⁵ unknown author, "Isle of Wight County Records," *William and Mary Quarterly*, VII (April 1899): P. 215. Hereinafter cited as "Isle of Wight Records;" Boyd, compiler, *Boyd's Inhabitants of London and Boyd's Family Units* (No place: no publisher). Hereinafter cited as *Boyd's*.

²⁶ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

a frequent disturber of the peace of the country," and the other because of his "abetting Thomas Woodward," a noted loyalist, in his "mutinous and rebellious declaration" against the Parliament. John Hammond, really a fine character, removed to Maryland, where he was a friend of Lord Baltimore, and was the author of "Leah and Rachell," a most interesting tract on the relations of Virginia and Maryland. Woodward, for whom Pyland suffered, had been assay-master of the mint to Charles I., patented in Isle of Wight and in 1665 was appointed the first surveyor of the Province of North Carolina. He appears to have had at least two sons, John Woodward, who died in England, and Thomas, of Virginia.

In 1667, the fleet of merchant ships from Bristol, which traded with the Southside, was suddenly attacked at the mouth of the Elizabeth river by four Dutch men of war, and twenty of the vessels were destroyed. The damage would have been greater, had not Major-General Bennett, in command of the Southside counties, arrived on the scene, and driven off the invaders. In 1671, the Dutch came again, with further disastrous results, to the Bristol ships, which, however, were revenged in the end in the seizure of New York by the English. In Bacon's Rebellion (1676) Isle of Wight was the scene of constant foray. Col. Joseph Bridger(1) headed the followers of Berkeley, and John Jennings, clerk of the court, was the most noted of Bacon's adherents. He was banished from the colony. but died before the decree could be carried into effect. Among the interesting places, the plantation of Edward Bennett deserves notice. His personal share of land appears to have been fifteen hundred acres of land, and by a deed recorded in the secretary's office, dated April 8, 1663, this land was divided between his daughters, Silvestra, the wife of Major Nicholas Hill, and Mary, the wife of Thomas Bland. Silvestra's share was the upper moiety, and began at a locust post on the river side, and ran for length three hundred and twenty poles southwest into the woods, and for breadth three hundred and seventy-five poles up the river to a marked tree in a valley near a place called "The Rocks" (still known as such). Mary's share was the lower moiety. It began at the locust post on the river side, ran down the river by Felgate's Island, and bounded on Pollington's Point (Day's Point?), three lines of Peter Hull's land to a branch of Hutchinson's Creek. Maj. Hill, in 1674, left this land to his son, George Hill, after the death of his wife, Silvestra. Silvestra Hill by her will left 550 acres of this land to Mary Baker, wife of Major Henry Baker. Col. Nathaniel Bacon, Sen., had a plantation near by, which fell to his heiress, Abigail Smith, who married Major Lewis Burwell, of Gloucester county. By degrees the Burwells absorbed much of the land in the neighborhood. In the Virginia Gazette, about the latter part of the last century, is an advertisement, which describes the Burwell estate as "ten miles below Hog Island, containing thirty-five hundred acres, whereon are three plantations, cleared and in good order for cropping, sufficient to work thirty-five hands. On the Manor plantation is a handsome brick house, sixty by twenty-six feet, two stories high, well finished and wainscoted, with two brick houses forty feet by twenty, barns, stables and every other necessary house, a handsome garden completely laid off, a hundred and five yards by seventy- five. On the three plantations there are about seventeen hundred apple trees, and a great variety of other fruit.

Near the said land is a tract containing eighty-five acres, with a well-accustomed mill thereon, and as fine a stream as any in Virginia". "Basse's Choice" originally called for three hundred acres, but its acreage was really four hundred, of which two hundred and fifty acres was marsh land. Mr. Peter Knight, who may have married one of Basse's daughters, patented one hundred and fifty acres of the same in 1640, and two hundred and fifty-five in 1643. It was situated on the east side of Pagan Bay. Peter Knight sold the tract to John Bland, the eminent London merchant, and in **1659-'60 the General Assembly ordered Mr. William Drummond as agent of "the coheirs of Basse" to pay Theodorick Bland, of Westover, brother and agent of John Bland, twenty-five hundred pounds of tobacco damages awarded in some suit probably affecting this land.**

(1) Sir John Berry names among the eminent sufferers by Bacon's Rebellion Col. Joseph Bridger, "a very Resolute gentleman, who, though forced to fly in the heat of war from his own countrie, yet on his Return was very Active and Instrumental in reducing to their obedience the South part of James River," &c. William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine,

Vo., 7, No. 4 Apr., 1899. pp. 205-315.

ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY RECORDS V. Nathaniel Basse was active in the early years of English settlement. Basse's Choice was one of the first three settlements in Isle of Wight County and was probably the first to hold a court. Colonel Morrison tells us that Basse was in England at the time of the great massacre and, of course, escaped being killed along with all the others in his house. He returned from England in 1622 and lived on his grant. Records show that he held court on his plantation in 1626 and represented it in the House of Burgesses in 1629. In 1631 he was sent on a mission to New England to seek colonists for Virginia. His name is not mentioned again in local records after he left on the mission to New England.

Here is a brief history that is interesting:

It is believed that Nathaniel Basse brought his children back to London after the 1622 Indian Massacre; however, Nathaniel continued making trips to the colonies.

The first English settlement in the area known by the Indians as Warrosquoake (Isle of Wight Co., Virginia) was made by Captain Christopher Lawne, Sir Richard Worsley, Knight & Baronet, and their associates NATHANIEL BASSE, Gentleman, John Hobson, Gentleman, Anthony Olevan, Richard Wiseman, Robert Newland, Robert Gyner and William Willis.

They arrived at Jamestown with one hundred settlers on 27 April 1619 in a ship commanded by Captain Evans. They immediately settled on the south side of the Warrosquoake River (James River) and established the plantation "Warrosquoake", to be known as "Lawne's Creek". When their patent was confirmed it was to become known as the "County of Isle of Wight".

NATHANIEL BASSE and others undertook to establish another plantation in the same neighborhood, to the east, known as "Basse's Choice" situated on the Warrosquoake River (James River) and Pagan Creek. His patent was received 21 Nov 1621 for 300 acres plus 100 acres of marshland. The houses on Captain Basse's plantation were being built when at midday on 22 Mar 1622/23, (note this was not Good Friday as many sources say. The discrepancy came about because of the double dates.) the Indians attacked the settlers killing 347 of the 1240 English inhabitants in the 80 settlements on the north and south sides of the river (James) 26 at Isle of Wight were among those killed. The settlers made a valiant defense of themselves with guns, axes, spades and brickbats. Nathaniel and his wife, Mary, were in England at the time, and some of the children were at "Basse's Choice" with a nurse. The story is told that five-year old JOHN was one of the children that

escaped and was rescued by some friendly Nansemond Indians! A 1622 passenger list for the ship "Furtherance," from London, arrived in Virginia, lists Nathaniell Basse, age 35. (Many ships at that time considered passengers as cargo and did not list their names. Some ships listed the names of the men on board but did not list women and children.)

A census taken 16 Feb 1623/24 shows a total of 53 persons living at "Worwicke-Squeak" and "Basse's Choice". Nathaniel Basse and Samuel Basse were among those listed. Capt. Nathaniel Basse, Samuel Basse and William Basse are also found living among the list of 1,033 Early Pioneers of 1624. They are listed as living at Basse Choise, sndx no. B200. Nathaniel was appointed to the House of Burgesses at the first Legislative Assembly representing Warrosquoake (Isle of Wight) for 1623/24. He was again a member of the House of Burgesses in Oct 1629 and 1631, appointed to Harvey's Council 1631/32 and a member of the Great Council 1631/32. On 6 Mar 1631/32 Nathaniel was commissioned to "trade between 34 and 40 N Latitude, England, Nova Scotia and West Indies to invite inhabitants hither". (If they were tired of cold and damp!) Nathaniel was also commissioned to trade to the Dutch Plantation and Canada. He was given power of Justice of Peace. (Virginia Council & General Court Records 1626-1634)
Basse's Choice originally called for 300 acres but its acreage was closer to 400.

Mr. Peter Knight married to Nathaniel's daughter Genevieve, patented 150 acres of the same in 1640 and 255 acres in 1643. Peter Knight sold the tract to John Bland, an eminent London Merchant.

Nathaniel Basse was buried 3 July 1654 in the Church of St. Alphage, Cripplegate, London. Mary, his wife, had died 17 Jan 1630, with the birth of a stillborn son. After Nathaniel's death in 1654, the General Assembly of Virginia in 1659/60 ordered Mr. Wm. Drummond as agent of the Co-heirs of Nathaniel Basse to pay to Theodorick Bland of Westover, 2500 lbs tobacco in settlement of a suit affecting the land. (This statement should once and for all put to rest the concept that Nathaniel Bass had no heirs.)

Pp. 545-552, (March, 1659-60---11th of Commonwealth) WHEREAS Mr. Theodorick Bland petitioned...for damages in a case...against Mr. William Dromond who was attornie of the Coheires of Basse...

<http://vintagegold.topcities.com/knight1.html>.²⁷

a) Samuel⁴ BASSE (2289) was born on 15 Jul 1615 at London, England, Stephaun Paul doubts that this person exists.²⁸ He died in 1622 at Jamestown, VA. Apparently his parents were in England at the time of the Massacre. He was New Tag I have since spotted a family tree writeup (can't remember where) indicated that Humphrey and Samuel were, indeed, twins.

The name Algonquins was sometimes used in referring to a variety of tribes living in the area. The term Algonquin referred more to common or similar languages than it did anything else. Most of them were part of the Powhatan Confederation, which attacked the plantations in 1622 and killed 347 people. Algonquins and Powhatans are sometimes used interchangeably. The Nansemonds were part of the Powhatan Confederation. Although some romantics want to say that friendly Nansemonds rescued young John Basse from being killed, it is more likely that they were in on the killing. However, just as Pocahontas had helped bring peace by her marriage to the Rolphe guy, I am speculating that Keziah's marriage to John Basse helping bring peace in 1638. The marriage -- coincidentally or not -- came about the same time that a period of peace began -- this following attacks by colonists against the Nansemonds and Warrosquoyackes. I have read of another colonist marrying an Indian -- in addition to the Basse who married Mary Tucker -- so it is possible that these marriages were either arranged or tacitly suggested (if that makes any sense). I am only speculating. But I don't buy into the idea that John Basse married Keziah because there were no white women available. I think he may have been more interested in maintaining his scalp. However, Keziah may have had his scalp later. in Feb 2001.²⁹

b) Humphery⁴ BASSE (2290) was born on 15 Jul 1615 at London, England.³⁰ He died on 22 Mar 1623/24 at Jamestown, VA, aged 8 **Note from Stephaun Paul whom I respect tremendously. - I cannot emphasize this more strongly; the legend of Humphrey dying in the massacre is based on a misunderstanding of double dates. IT IS ABSOLUTELY FALSE! As I prove in the Polemic, it was impossible for Humphrey to have died in the massacre. He died the following year. There can be no doubt that Humphrey died a year-to-date from the massacre, probably in the Plague of the Abigail. I really don't want to see this error further perpetuated. Following is the proof as I've stated it in the Polemic:**
<http://web.me.com/depaul7/Polemic/Welcome.html>.³¹ He was New Tag

The name Algonquins was sometimes used in referring to a variety of tribes living in the area. The term Algonquin referred more to common or similar languages than it did anything else. Most of them were part of the Powhatan Confederation, which attacked the plantations in 1622 and killed 347 people. Algonquins and Powhatans are sometimes used interchangeably. The Nansemonds were part of the Powhatan Confederation. Although some romantics want to say that friendly Nansemonds rescued young John Basse from being killed, it is more likely that they were in on the killing. However, just as Pocahontas had helped bring peace by her marriage to the Rolphe guy, I am speculating that Keziah's marriage to John Basse helping bring peace in 1638. The marriage -- coincidentally or not -- came about the same time that a period of peace began -- this following attacks by colonists against the Nansemonds and Warrosquoyackes. I have read of another colonist marrying an Indian -- in addition to the Basse who married Mary Tucker -- so it is possible that

²⁷Helen Haverty King, *Historic Isle of Wight* (No place: no publisher, 1993). Hereinafter cited as *Isle of Wight*.

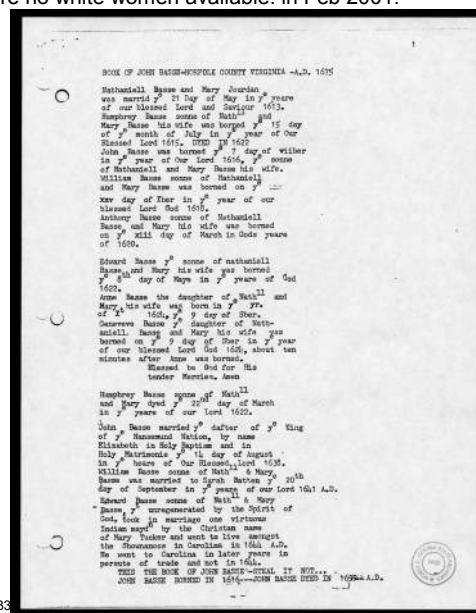
²⁸Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

²⁹Floyd, "Donald Floyd," Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁰*Basse Sermon Book*.

³¹*Basse Sermon Book*; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Stephaun Paul, "Stephaun Paul Polemic," e-mail message from Stephaun De Paul [StephaunNY@aol.com] (unknown address) to MVW, august 2010. Hereinafter cited as "Polemic."

these marriages were either arranged or tacitly suggested (if that makes any sense). I am only speculating. But I don't buy into the idea that John Basse married Keziah because there were no white women available. In Feb 2001.³²



c) John⁴ BASSE Sr. (2277) (He is called "Sr." in the Sermon Book)³³ was also known as John (A) BASS (2277).³⁴ He was born on 7 Sep 1616 at England John Bass, third son of Nathaniel Basse and Mary Jordan was born September 1616, presumably in England, and came as an infant with his mother and father to the new world of Virginia. According to the Basses of the Bowers Hill community in Nansemond County, Virginia, John was the only survivor at Basse's Choice of the Good Friday massacre in 1622. John's father, Nathaniel had returned to England as presumably had his mother since she died in 1630 in England. John was rescued from the carnage by Nansemond Indians and was taken to raise by them. [Please note that this is either a clarification or a conflict with the account in the previous section.] On August 14, 1638, John married a Nansemond Indian girl with the unusual name (for an Indian) of Keziah Elizabeth Tucker (1625-1676). Keziah's father was Robin The Elder. He was "King" or "Chief" (Weroance) of the Nansemonds.³⁵ In 1622 According to the Basses of the Bowers Hill community, John was the only survivor at Basse's Choice of the Good Friday massacre. John's parents were in England at the time. There are stories that John was rescued from the carnage by Nansemond Indians and was taken to raise by them. This seems plausible since he married an Indian girl.³⁶ He married Elizabeth Keziah TUCKER (2278), daughter of Robin the elder TUCKER (2891), on 14 Aug 1638 at New Norfolk, Nansemond, VA, "John Bass married ye dafter of ye King of ye Nansemond Nation, by name Elizabeth in Holy Baptism and in Holy Matrimonie ye 14 day of August."³⁷ He died on 2 Apr 1699 at Norfolk, VA, aged 82.³⁸ His estate was probated on 19 Sep 1699 at Norfolk, VA, Estate of John Basse. Inventory - mentions Bible and sermon book among personal possessions. The sermon book is housed in Virginia archives. The Bible was said to be in possession of Justin Bass a son of Late Jesse L. Bass, Yadkin, Va. (1961). No one seems to know the whereabouts of the Bible. The Bible that was printed in 1725 would of course bear information that was at least seventy years old so it's reasonable to suppose that the older bible entries were copied from the more contemporary Sermon book that bore the Name of Nathaniel Bass and Thomas Jordan. In 1999 The Bass family that descended from John who married Keziah, an Indian, mostly married whites and became part of the white community. However, descendants of their son, William married African Americans and became part of that community.

<http://files.usgwarchives.net/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt>

The above site says that John inherited the Bible that belonged to Nathaniel Basse.³⁹ Oliver L. Perry, Sr. has provided summaries of his research on the Basse family and the Nansemond Indians to the Isle of Wight Museum. He has proved conclusively that several of Nathaniel Basse's sons (John, who married a Christianized Nansemond Indian; William, who married Sarah Batten and had a son, William; Edward, who went to Chowan County, North Carolina; and George Basse, born in 1628 and died in 1683 and Genevieve and Anne, twin daughters who married Peter Knight and Thomas Burwell

³²Floyd, "Donald Floyd."

³³*Basse Sermon Book*.

³⁴John Bass, Documents, MVW file, Margaret V. Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, Pinellas County, FL 33701.

³⁵*Basse Sermon Book*; John Bass, Documents MVW file; unknown compiler, "NC State Archives," *Ancestral File*.

³⁶Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁷*Basse Sermon Book*; John Bass, Documents MVW file; Barb Clayton, compiler,

"<http://files.usgwarchives.net/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt>"; Documented completely in "Book of John Basse of Norfolk Virginia housed in North Carolina State Archives, *Ancestral File* (January 1998), unknown repository, unknown repository address.

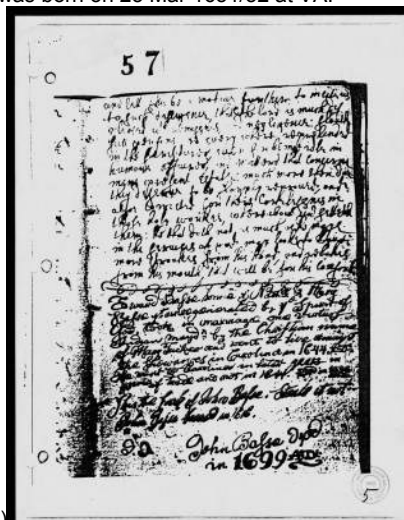
Hereinafter cited as "usgwarchives."

³⁸*Basse Sermon Book*; unknown compiler, "NC State Archives," *Ancestral File*.

³⁹Free African Americans of VA, NC, SC, MD and DE, online www.freeafricanamericans.com. Hereinafter cited as Free African Americans.

of Isle of Wight County, lived in this area. There are many descendants of John Basse and Keziah Elizabeth.⁴⁰ In 1999 According to a History of Isle of Wight County Virginia, "The Nansemond Indians live again. They never really died out but it took Oliver L. Perry, Sr. two years to verify things he had been told as a child. The trail began with his great grandmother's death certificate and led to a fragile old family Bible. Helen C. Rountree, an Old Dominion University anthropologist, helped Perry find the Bible. The Bible documented the 1638 marriage of an Englishman, John Basse to Keziah Elizabeth Tucker, daughter of the King of the Nansemond Indian Nation. Stuck in the Bible was a copy of a Norfolk County Circuit court paper certifying that William Bass is of English and Indian descent and is not a Negroe (sic) nor a Mulatto as by some falsely and maliciously stated. His late mother was a vertuous woman of Indian descent lawfully begotten.⁴¹" He was New Tag I have since spotted a family tree writeup (can't remember where) indicated that Humphrey and Samuel were, indeed, twins. The name Algonquins was sometimes used in referring to a variety of tribes living in the area. The term Algonquin referred more to common or similar languages than it did anything else. Most of them were part of the Powhatan Confederation, which attacked the plantations in 1622 and killed 347 people. Algonquins and Powhatans are sometimes used interchangeably. The Nansemonds were part of the Powhatan Confederation. Although some romantics want to say that friendly Nansemonds rescued young John Basse from being killed, it is more likely that they were in on the killing. However, just as Pocahontas had helped bring peace by her marriage to the Rolphe guy, I am speculating that Keziah's marriage to John Basse helping bring peace in 1638. The marriage -- coincidentally or not -- came about the same time that a period of peace began -- this following attacks by colonists against the Nansemonds and Warrosquoyackes. I have read of another colonist marrying an Indian -- in addition to the Basse who married Mary Tucker -- so it is possible that these marriages were either arranged or tacitly suggested (if that makes any sense). I am only speculating. But I don't buy into the idea that John Basse married Keziah because there were no white women available. I think he may have been more interested in maintaining his scalp. Don Floyd in Feb 2000.

- (1) Nathaniel⁵ BASSE (2298) was born on 29 May 1640 at VA.⁴² He died on 30 Dec 1652 at VA aged 12.⁴³
- (2) Keziah⁵ BASSE (2300) was born on 4 Sep 1643 at VA.⁴⁴
- (3) Elizabeth⁵ BASSE (2299) died at VA.⁴⁵ She was born on 12 Jul 1645 at VA.⁴⁶
- (4) Jordan⁵ BASSE (2297) was born on 27 Jun 1648 at VA. He died on 2 Nov 1651 at VA aged 3.⁴⁷
- (5) Samuel⁵ BASSE (2296) was born on 23 Mar 1651/52 at VA.



- (6) William⁵ BASS Sr. (1805) was also known as William (A) BASS (1805).⁴⁸ He was born on 29 Mar 1654 at VA. He married Catherine LANIER (1806) on 6 Nov 1671.⁴⁹ He left a will on 1 Oct 1740 at Norfolk, VA, Will proved September 17, 1742 Sons William, Edward, Joseph and Thomas were given token bequests. Grandson William given my little gun. Daughter, Mary Bass, residuary legatee and executrix. She was willed all remaining money and personal property and "my land if she can save it after my death." Note that our ancestor, John Bass m. to Love Harris, is not mentioned in will as he died before his father. He died on 13 Aug 1741 at Norfolk, VA, aged 87 Will on file at North Carolina State Archives. It was originally filed in Chesapeake Va. Will Book H, page 8.⁵⁰

(a) Edward⁶ BASS (1807) was also known as Edward (B) BASS (1807) The (B) is not part of his name. Used only for identification.⁵¹ He was born on 19 Oct 1672 at Norfolk, VA.⁵² He married Lovewell (--?--) (1808) circa

⁴⁰King, *Isle of Wight*.

⁴¹King, *Isle of Wight*.

⁴²Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁴³Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁴⁴Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁴⁵Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁴⁶Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁴⁷Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁴⁸John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁴⁹John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁵⁰Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Barb Clayton, "usgwarchives," *Ancestral File*.

⁵¹John Bass, Documents MVW file.

1696.⁵³ An Edward Bass of the Parish of Elizabeth in Norfolk County, Virginia purchased land on January 30, 1720 from Abraham Hill of Nansemond County, North Carolina. The land was 100 acres situated near the head of Horsepool Swamp in Chowan County, North Carolina. (Chowan later became Bertie Countie, North Carolina). This purchase is recorded as item # 1352 on page 114 of Deed Book C #1 of Chowan County, North Carolina which are abstracted in: Abstracts of Wills of Edgecomb County. It is interesting to note that Edward and his brother, John, Sr. both bought land on the same day from the same individual. Perhaps this indicates the relocation of the family from Virginia to North Carolina.

Both Edward and his brother John Bass, Sr. owned land on and near Uraha Swamp not far from present town of Rich Square, N.C.

His "Mark" was a sideways "B" with the straight side up that looked like a pair of glasses. He died on 25 Jul 1748 at Northampton, NC, aged 75. His estate was probated in 1750 at Northampton, NC.

i) John⁷ BASS (1815) was also known as John (D) BASS (1815) The (D) is not part of his name. Used only for identification purposes.⁵⁴ He was born in 1710.⁵⁵ He died say 1748.

ii) Katherine⁷ BASS (1820) married George ANDERSON (1821).⁵⁶ Her married name was ANDERSON (1820). She was born in 1712.⁵⁷

iii) Diana⁷ BASS (1824) was born in 1717.⁵⁸

iv) Keziah⁷ BASS (1822) was born in 1720.⁵⁹

v) Benjamin⁷ BASS (1813) died at Granville, NC. He married Mary (--?--) (4896).⁶⁰ He was born in 1725.⁶¹ He Received the plantation on Quarter Swamp in his father's will. in 1748 at Northampton, NC. He was executor Served as executor of his father's will. apparently he then moved to Granville County North Carolina. in 1748 at Northampton, NC.

vi) James⁷ BASS (1818)⁶² was born in 1727.⁶³ He married Mary Lanier (--?--) (4897) circa 1734 at Bertie, NC.⁶⁴

(a) Thomas⁸ BASS (4898)⁶⁵ is still living.

⁵² *The Bass Book*.

⁵³ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁵⁴ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁵⁵ Sidney Polley, "Sidney Polley," e-mail message from Sidney POLLEY [sidneyj@swbell.net] (unknown address) to MVW, November 2007. Hereinafter cited as "Polley."

⁵⁶ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁵⁷ Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁵⁸ Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁵⁹ Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁶⁰ Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁶¹ Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁶² unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁶³ Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁶⁴ Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁶⁵ Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007, **Thomas Bass/Mary Clark** [Great (4) grandparents]

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Linda Clements clements@775.net

Thomas Bass Birth: 1737 Death: 1786 in Brunswick County, Virginia

Father: James Bass b: 1710

Mother: Mary Lanier b: 1715

Marriage: Mary Clark b: 1739

Married: 25 Apr 1781 in Brunswick County, Virginia

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Richard Cardell gen32207@yahoo.com

Thomas Bass Birth: 1739 in NC

Father: James Bass b: Bef 1715 in Norfolk Co., Virginia

Mother: Mary Lanier b: 1713 in St Andrews Parish, Brunswick Co., VA

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books, Volume 2, Will Books 4 and 5 [in part] 1761-1780, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library* 929.3755 B811B, [Page 65]: "278-(448) Will Book 4, Pt. 2 Will of **George Clack** (Clark) 9 Oct 1773 24 Sept 1775 To my daughter Mary Bass, Securities Elisha Clack with Thomas Bass and Thomas Gholson." Article in possession of Sidney Polley.

Virginia Tax Payers 1782-87 Other Than Those Published by the United States Census Bureau by Augusta B. Fothergill and John Mark Naugle; *Gladys Harrington Library Plano* 929.3755 FOT; [Pg. 7] lists **Thomas Bass** on the 1782 tax roll, from Brunswick County, VA.

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books Volume 3, Will Book 5 1780 - 1795, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library* 929.3755 B811B [Page 12]: Will Book 5, "53-(168) Will of **Thomas Bass** 7 Apr 1786 24 Apr 1786 To my wife Mary [Clark]..... I wish my son [1] Hartwell then this land to descend to my son [2] John..... To my son [3] James..... To my daughter

[4] Tempey Warren [Benjamin Warren]..... To my daughter [5] Elizabeth Green [James William Green]....To my daughter [6] Nancy Stainback [Fancis Stainback].. Ex. James Green, Benjamin Warren, Hartwell Bass, Thomas Gholson. Copy of article and of original will in possession of Sidney Swinney Polley.

Brunswick County Virginia, Will book 5, [Page 168] Will of **Thomas Bass** Proved at Brunswick County Court, April 24, 1786. Wife: Mary Bass; Sons: Hartwell Bass, John Bass, James Bass; Daughters: Tempey Warren, Elizabeth Green, Nancy Stainback

Virginia Historical Magazine, Volume 22 [Page 72] **Bass, Thomas** 1786, Book 5, Page 168

Climbing The Family Tree by Bessie Lamar Anderson Calvert, Copy of book in possession of Clara Lewis 300 Sewell Ct., Irving, Texas 75038; Page 26-2 states that "we believe that **Thomas Bass**, who served in the Revolution from Brunswick County, Virginia, descends from Nathaniel Bass [Basse] who was born about 1581."

Calendar of Virginia State Papers and Other Manuscripts, 1652-1781, Arranged and Edited by Wm. P. Palmer, M.D., Volume 1, *Dallas Public Library* 975.5 V817Zc:

[Page 319] "We whose names are hereunto subscribed, do promise to appear May 17th (1779) whenever we may be called for by Genl. Matthew, or any other officer commanding His Majesty's Forces & do further engage, on our Word and honor, till then, to remain peaceably at home..... May 17, Head Quarters, Nansemond Co. " Twenty one men have signed their names - among them **Thos Bafs** (Thomas Bass)

Volume 6: [Page 106, 109] Persons who gave aid to the American Revolution. At a court held for Brunswick County, by adjournment, on Tuesday the 25th day of February, 1782.

Court 23 April 1782: **Thomas Bass** is listed.

Tyler's Quarterly Magazine, Vol. 6, *Dallas Public Library*, [Page 106-109] Brunswick County, Persons who gave aid to the American Revolution. Order Book, No. 13, pp 417, 425, 436, 437, 468, 488, 527. At a court held for Brunswick County, by adjournment, on Tuesday the 25th day of February, 1782. An act of Assembly, entitled "an act for adjusting claims for property - impressed or taken for public service," **Thomas Bass** was certified as giving supplies.

Virginia Revolutionary Publick Claims Volume I, in three volumes, Compiled and Transcribed by Janice L. Abercrombie and Richard Slatten [Page 156] Brunswick County, (p. 1) A return of the proceedings of the county Court of Brunswick under the Act entitled "An act for adjusting claims for property impressed or taken for the public service."

Thomas Bass - 80 meals, 7 bushels corn, pasturage 30 cattle - 30 days £20-14

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Linda Clements clements@775.net

Mary Clark Birth: 1739

Title: Menikos, Linda; lmnikos@poetworld.net

Father: George Clark

Mother: Prudence

Marriage: Thomas Bass b: 1737

Married: 25 Apr 1781 in Brunswick County, Virginia

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books, Volume 2, Will Books 4 and 5 [in part] 1761-1780, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library* 929.37555 B811B, [Page 65]: "278-(448) Will Book 4, Pt. 2 Will of **George Clack** (Clark) 9 Oct 1773 24 Sept 1775 To my daughter Mary Bass, Securities Elisha Clack with Thomas Bass and Thomas Gholson." Article in possession of Sidney Polley; Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007, **Thomas Bass/Mary Clark** [Great (4) grandparents]

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Linda Clements clements@775.net

Thomas Bass Birth: 1737 Death: 1786 in Brunswick County, Virginia

Father: James Bass b: 1710

Mother: Mary Lanier b: 1715

Marriage: Mary Clark b: 1739

Married: 25 Apr 1781 in Brunswick County, Virginia

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Richard Cardell gen32207@yahoo.com

Thomas Bass Birth: 1739 in NC

Father: James Bass b: Bef 1715 in Norfolk Co., Virginia

Mother: Mary Lanier b: 1713 in St Andrews Parish, Brunswick Co., VA

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books, Volume 2, Will Books 4 and 5 [in part] 1761-1780, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library* 929.37555 B811B, [Page 65]: "278-(448) Will Book 4, Pt. 2 Will of **George Clack** (Clark) 9 Oct 1773 24 Sept 1775 To my daughter Mary Bass, Securities Elisha Clack with Thomas Bass and Thomas Gholson." Article in possession of Sidney Polley.

Virginia Tax Payers 1782-87, Other Than Those Published by the United States Census Bureau by Augusta B. Fothergill and John Mark Naugle; *Gladys Harrington Library Plano* 929.3755 FOT; [Pg. 7] lists **Thomas Bass** on the 1782 tax roll, from Brunswick County, VA.

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books Volume 3, Will Book 5 1780 - 1795, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library 929.37555 B811B* [Page 12]: Will Book 5, "53-(168) Will of **Thomas Bass** 7 Apr 1786 24 Apr 1786 To my wife Mary [Clark]..... I wish my son [1] Hartwell then this land to descend to my son [2] John..... To my son [3] James..... To my daughter

[4] Tempey Warren [Benjamin Warren]..... To my daughter [5] Elizabeth Green [James William Green]....To my daughter [6] Nancy Stainback [Fancis Stainback].. Ex. James Green, Benjamin Warren, Hartwell Bass, Thomas Gholson. Copy of article and of original will in possession of Sidney Swinney Polley.

Brunswick County Virginia, Will book 5, [Page 168] Will of **Thomas Bass** Proved at Brunswick County Court, April 24, 1786. Wife: Mary Bass; Sons: Hartwell Bass, John Bass, James Bass; Daughters: Tempey Warren, Elizabeth Green, Nancy Stainback

Virginia Historical Magazine, Volume 22 [Page 72] **Bass, Thomas** 1786, Book 5, Page 168

Climbing The Family Tree by Bessie Lamar Anderson Calvert, Copy of book in possession of Clara Lewis 300 Sewell Ct., Irving, Texas 75038; Page 26-2 states that "we believe that **Thomas Bass**, who served in the Revolution from Brunswick County, Virginia, descends from Nathaniel Bass [Basse] who was born about 1581."

Calendar of Virginia State Papers and Other Manuscripts, 1652-1781, Arranged and Edited by Wm. P. Palmer, M.D., Volume 1, *Dallas Public Library 975.5 V817Zc*:

[Page 319] "We whose names are hereunto subscribed, do promise to appear May 17th (1779) whenever we may be called for by Genl. Matthew, or any other officer commanding His Majesty's Forces & do further engage, on our Word and honor, till then, to remain peaceably at home..... May 17, Head Quarters, Nansemond Co. " Twenty one men have signed their names - among them **Thos Bafs** (Thomas Bass)

Volume 6: [Page 106, 109] Persons who gave aid to the American Revolution. At a court held for Brunswick County, by adjournment, on Tuesday the 25th day of February, 1782.

Court 23 April 1782: **Thomas Bass** is listed.

Tyler's Quarterly Magazine, Vol. 6, *Dallas Public Library*, [Page 106-109] Brunswick County, Persons who gave aid to the American Revolution. Order Book, No. 13, pp 417, 425, 436, 437, 468, 488, 527. At a court held for Brunswick County, by adjournment, on Tuesday the 25th day of February, 1782. An act of Assembly, entitled "an act for adjusting claims for property - impressed or taken for public service," **Thomas Bass** was certified as giving supplies.

Virginia Revolutionary Publick Claims Volume I, in three volumes, Compiled and Transcribed by Janice L. Abercrombie and Richard Slatten [Page 156] Brunswick County, (p. 1) A return of the proceedings of the county Court of Brunswick under the Act entitled "An act for adjusting claims for property impressed or taken for the public service."

Thomas Bass - 80 meals, 7 bushels corn, pasturage 30 cattle - 30 days £20-14

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Linda Clements clements@775.net

Mary Clark Birth: 1739

Title: Menikos, Linda; lmnikos@poetworld.net

Father: George Clark

Mother: Prudence

Marriage: Thomas Bass b: 1737

Married: 25 Apr 1781 in Brunswick County, Virginia

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books, Volume 2, Will Books 4 and 5 [in part] 1761-1780, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library 929.37555 B811B*, [Page 65]: "278-(448) Will Book 4, Pt. 2 Will of **George Clack** (Clark) 9 Oct 1773 24 Sept 1775 To my daughter Mary Bass, Securities Elisha Clack with Thomas Bass and Thomas Gholson." Article in possession of Sidney Polley; Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007, **Thomas Bass/Mary Clark** [Great (4) grandparents]

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Linda Clements clements@775.net

Thomas Bass Birth: 1737 Death: 1786 in Brunswick County, Virginia

Father: James Bass b: 1710

Mother: Mary Lanier b: 1715

Marriage: Mary Clark b: 1739

Married: 25 Apr 1781 in Brunswick County, Virginia

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Richard Cardell gen32207@yahoo.com

Thomas Bass Birth: 1739 in NC

Father: James Bass b: Bef 1715 in Norfolk Co., Virginia

Mother: Mary Lanier b: 1713 in St Andrews Parish, Brunswick Co., VA

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books, Volume 2, Will Books 4 and 5 [in part] 1761-1780, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library 929.37555 B811B*, [Page 65]: "278-(448) Will Book 4, Pt. 2 Will of **George Clack** (Clark) 9 Oct 1773 24 Sept 1775 To my daughter Mary Bass, Securities Elisha Clack with Thomas Bass and Thomas Gholson." Article in possession of Sidney Polley.

- vii) Sampson⁷ BASS (1816) died at Warren, N.C., N.C.⁶⁶ He was born in 1727.⁶⁷
- viii) Edward⁷ BASS (1817) was also known as Edward (C) BASS (1817) The (C) is not part of his name. Given only for identification.⁶⁸ He was born in 1729.⁶⁹ He Received fifty acres of land in father's will. in 1748 at Northampton, NC. He died circa 1800 at Granville, NC.⁷⁰
- ix) Joseph⁷ BASS (1814) died at SC.⁷¹ He was born in 1732.⁷²
- x) Reuben⁷ BASS (1819) was born in 1735.⁷³ He He received his father's "mannor plantation" in will in 1748. He appeared on the census of 1790 at Granville, NC.⁷⁴

Virginia Tax Payers 1782-87 Other Than Those Published by the United States Census Bureau by Augusta B. Fothergill and John Mark Naugle; *Gladys Harrington Library Plano* 929.3755 FOT; [Pg. 7] lists **Thomas Bass** on the 1782 tax roll, from Brunswick County, VA.

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books Volume 3, Will Book 5 1780 - 1795, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library* 929.37555 B811B [Page 12]: Will Book 5, "53-(168) Will of **Thomas Bass** 7 Apr 1786 24 Apr 1786 To my wife Mary [Clark]..... I wish my son [1] Hartwell then this land to descend to my son [2] John..... To my son [3] James..... To my daughter [4] Tempey Warren [Benjamin Warren]..... To my daughter [5] Elizabeth Green [James William Green]....To my daughter [6] Nancy Stainback [Fancis Stainback].. Ex. James Green, Benjamin Warren, Hartwell Bass, Thomas Gholson. Copy of article and of original will in possession of Sidney Swinney Polley.

Brunswick County Virginia, Will book 5, [Page 168] Will of **Thomas Bass** Proved at Brunswick County Court, April 24, 1786. Wife: Mary Bass; Sons: Hartwell Bass, John Bass, James Bass; Daughters: Tempey Warren, Elizabeth Green, Nancy Stainback

Virginia Historical Magazine, Volume 22 [Page 72] **Bass, Thomas** 1786, Book 5, Page 168
Climbing The Family Tree by Bessie Lamar Anderson Calvert, Copy of book in possession of Clara Lewis 300 Sewell Ct., Irving, Texas 75038; Page 26-2 states that "we believe that **Thomas Bass**, who served in the Revolution from Brunswick County, Virginia, descends from Nathaniel Bass [Basse] who was born about 1581."

Calendar of Virginia State Papers and Other Manuscripts, 1652-1781, Arranged and Edited by Wm. P. Palmer, M.D., Volume 1, *Dallas Public Library* 975.5 V817Zc:
 [Page 319] "We whose names are hereunto subscribed, do promise to appear May 17th (1779) whenever we may be called for by Genl. Matthew, or any other officer commanding His Majesty's Forces & do further engage, on our Word and honor, till then, to remain peaceably at home..... May 17, Head Quarters, Nansemond Co. " Twenty one men have signed their names - among them **Thos Bafs** (Thomas Bass)
 Volume 6: [Page 106, 109] Persons who gave aid to the American Revolution. At a court held for Brunswick County, by adjournment, on Tuesday the 25th day of February, 1782.
 Court 23 April 1782: **Thomas Bass** is listed.

Tyler's Quarterly Magazine, Vol. 6, *Dallas Public Library*, [Page 106-109] Brunswick County, Persons who gave aid to the American Revolution. Order Book, No. 13, pp 417, 425, 436, 437, 468, 488, 527. At a court held for Brunswick County, by adjournment, on Tuesday the 25th day of February, 1782. An act of Assembly, entitled "an act for adjusting claims for property - impressed or taken for public service," **Thomas Bass** was certified as giving supplies.

Virginia Revolutionary Publick Claims Volume I, in three volumes, Compiled and Transcribed by Janice L. Abercrombie and Richard Slatten [Page 156] Brunswick County, (p. 1) A return of the proceedings of the county Court of Brunswick under the Act entitled "An act for adjusting claims for property impressed or taken for the public service."
Thomas Bass - 80 meals, 7 bushels corn, pasturage 30 cattle - 30 days £20-14

<http://www.learnwebskills.com/family/worldpractice01.html>

Linda Clements clements@775.net

Mary Clark Birth: 1739

Title: Menikos, Linda; imenikos@poetworld.net

Father: George Clark

Mother: Prudence

Marriage: Thomas Bass b: 1737

Married: 25 Apr 1781 in Brunswick County, Virginia

Brunswick County, Virginia Will Books, Volume 2, Will Books 4 and 5 [in part] 1761-1780, Abstracted by Dr. Stephen E. Bradley, Jr. *Dallas Public Library* 929.37555 B811B, [Page 65]: "278-(448) Will Book 4, Pt. 2 Will of **George Clack** (Clark) 9 Oct 1773 24 Sept 1775 To my daughter Mary Bass, Securities Elisha Clack with Thomas Bass and Thomas Gholson." Article in possession of Sidney Polley.

⁶⁶unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁶⁷Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁶⁸John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁶⁹John Bass, Documents MVW file; Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

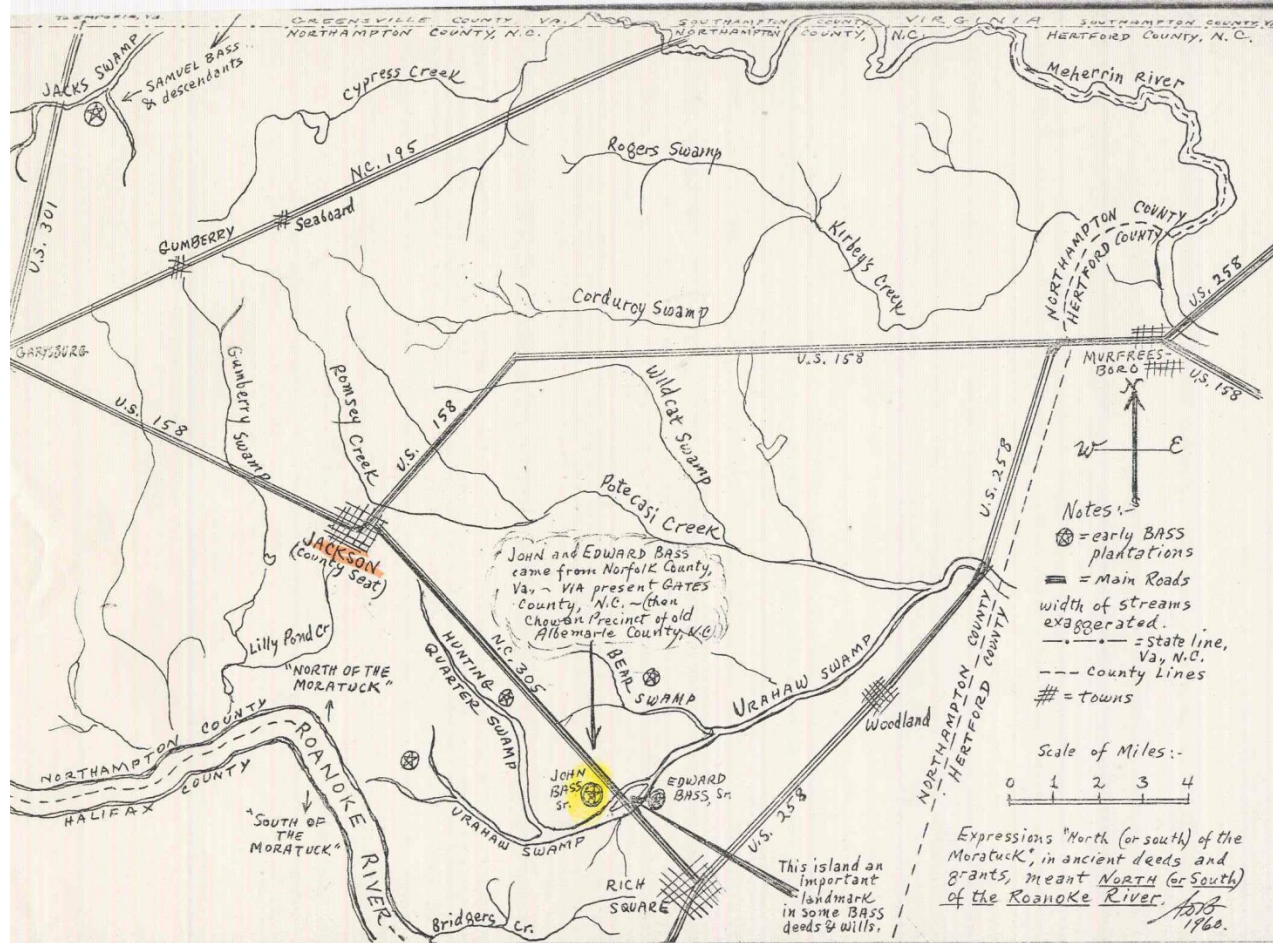
⁷⁰Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁷¹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁷²Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁷³Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

- xi) Mary⁷ BASS (1823) was born in 1737.⁷⁵
 (b) John⁶ BASS (1809)



was also known as John (C) BASS (1809).⁷⁶ He In response to a question from another researcher I received this reply from Al Bass, an authority on the family:

Margot,

Glad to hear from you again.

I see nothing here that I did not reference in my *John Bass of Virginia*.

I am 100% convinced that John Bayes was not the father of the John Bass who married Love Harris. I am 98% convinced that John Bayes was not even closely related to said John Bass.

I know it is not interesting reading, and I know that my *John Bass of Virginia* does not PROVE that John Bass was the son of William Basse, but it does demonstrate that all of the documentary evidence is consistent with same, and that there is not a shred of evidence that is consistent with the contrary contention that John Bass was a son of John Bayes.

Al Bass. He was born on 4 Dec 1673 at Nansemond, VA.⁷⁷ He married Love HARRIS (1825), daughter of Richard HARRIS (1826) and Ann (--?--) (1827), on 8 Jan 1696 at Nansemond, VA, Married in either Nansemond Co., VA or Perquimans Co., VA. Albert D. Bell says they were both of Nansemond County and parish and were married by Major Samuel Swann Esq. Bell then goes on to say: "Exactly as it appears in "Perquimans Precinct, Births, Marriages, Deaths and Flesh Marks, 1659-1739, p 16, folio 4 (Seen and handled by A.D. Bell, at Dept of Archives and History, Raleigh, N.C)

On the next page of Bell's book "Bass Families of the South" is a curious note. Apparently he stuck note at bottom of page because there was room left.

EXPLANATION AND APOLOGY FROM THE COMPILER:

I sincerely regret the disorderly manner in which these odd bits and pieces of information had to be presented.

Return trips to some courthouses, etc., sometimes resulted in the addition or correction of material already printed.

On the off chance that one of these items may be the very one that someone needs, I decided to try to get them

⁷⁴U. S. Dept. of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, First Census of the U.S., 1790; Poulation Schedule, Micropublication M637, National Archives, Washington, DC; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1790). Hereinafter cited as 1790 Census.

⁷⁵Sidney Polley, "Polley," e-mail to MVW, November 2007.

⁷⁶John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁷⁷unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; Bass Book.

in, somehow, at the very last minute. The oldest Bass item in N.C., the marriage bond of John Bass and Love Harris had to be reprinted, anyhow, because all printed versions of it are "translations" or restatements of the document, rather than literal copies. (Hathaway, Winslow, et al.) The fact of the marriage seemed more important than anything else until certain questions arose concerning descendants of John Bass and his brother Edward. Then it became very important to confirm the Nansemond connections of John. The Perquimans County items required little space. So, the rest of the items could be included. Please accept my sincere apologies for being unable to put them in alphabetical order; but it could not be done without reprinting more pages than we could afford. MVW has no idea what this means, but seem worthy of inclusion in view of the John/Edward controversy of 1999.

John Bass and Love Harris was Married ye 8th day of Janewary 1696 both of Nanse Mum County and Nanse Mum Parresh by Mager Samuel Swann Esqr. [Haun, Old Albemarle County North Carolina, 62].⁷⁸ He was mentioned in the minutes John Bass born 4 December 1673, was living in Norfolk County on 15 October 1701 when a case against him brought by Thomas Hodges, Surveyor, for being delinquent "from the high wayes" was dismissed on his paying costs [DB 6:220]. He was not mentioned in his father's will because he predeceased him. His marriage was recorded in Perquimans Precinct, North Carolina. on 15 Oct 1701 at Norfolk, VA.⁷⁹ He purchased land in 1720 The land of John Bass, Sr. was located near Uraha Swamp near the present town of Rich Square, North Carolina. Here are some excerpts from N.C. land records: January 30, 1720 for 15 Pounds Abraham Hill of Nansemond County, Virginia sold 200 Acres to John Bass of Chowan precinct (Chowan County later became Bertie County, North Carolina). The land was located near the head of Horsepool Swamp and adjoined land of Thomas Speight. This is described in *Abstracts of Wills of Edgecomb County* and is contained in Deed Book C #1 of Chowan County, North Carolina item #1353 page 116. February 12, 1722 for 15 Pounds William Whitehead and wife Rachel sold 300 Acres of land to John Bass which was located on south side of Urah (Swamp) adjoining James Field. This land was part of a patent surveyed by Richard Washington and lapsed. (Patent of 600 acres dated March 30, 1721). This transfer is noted in *Colonial Bertie County 1720-1757* which abstracts Deed Book A 124. January 13, 1728 for 25 Pounds John Bass sold 310 acres to James Field. This was the land he bought from Thomas Speight on July 14, 1719. The land was located then in the precinct of Perquimans. This sale is referenced in History of Perquimans which abstracts from Deed Book C #2 of Perquimans County (where? Va. or N.C.). He purchased land on 16 Jul 1722 at Bertie, NC.⁸⁰ He married Mary (-- ?--) (1828) after 1724 at Perquimans, NC, I infer this date as it follows the birth of a supposed date of last child Patience. Patience is listed as being John's daughter, and evidently Mary had been married before and brought some children to the marriage who John called "my last wife's children - unnamed".

Mary married a man named Staples before Nov 21 1748 as she sold her right of dower and thirds of property to John Bass, Jr.⁸¹ He purchased land on 14 Apr 1727 at Land Patent, Bertie, NC, Land joined Yourha swamp, James Hutchinson and Robert Newsam.⁸² His estate was probated on 18 Jan 1732 at Bertie, NC, His 18 January 1732 Bertie County will named his children, gave his wife Mary "the liberty of the plantation ... for bringing up my small children," referred to "my sd last wife's children," and left 50 acres to his friend, Daniel Wharten Burbegg [SS 876/3:305].⁸³ He died on 18 Jan 1732 at Bertie, NC, aged 58 The will of John Bass reads as follows (the print is small and difficult to read making a number of gaps): In the name of God amen I John Bass being sick and weak of body Butt of Sound Senses and memory Thanks be to God Do make and Ordain this to be my Last will in manner and form following -- First and Imprimis I give and Bequeath to my son Edward Bass my manor plantation whereon I now live to him and the heirs of his body lawfully begotten for Ever But except that the use and liberty of said plantation for my loving wife Mary for her lifetime for use in bringing up my small children. I give William Bass my land at ye Beaver Dam south through the swamp ___ to a dividing line. Item I give to my Grandson Aaron Johnson one hundred acres of land more or less north side of Urah Swamp if it is not (?Pote ye Broad wock north Jake in away of ye swamp?) Item I give unto my Loving Daughter Joudath Canady 100 acres of land more or less lying on ye south side of Urah Swamp adjoining James Hutchisons line to her and he heirs of her body lawfully to be begotten forever. Item I give to my loving friend Daniel Wharten Burbogg fifty acres of land lying on ye north side of ye Quater Swamp and Beginning at Toney's path south down ye said swamp across the first Branch to him and his heirs forever. Item I give unto my loving daughter Sarah Anderson one hundred acres of land more or less lying on ye north side of Urah Swamp the most convenient land to the plantation whereon she now lives but not any part of ye said swamp but only ye tract toward Hutchinson line for ye complement as far as ye Branch to her and ye heirs of her obdy Lawfully begotten forever. Item I give to my loving Daughter Loucy Bass one hundred acres of land more or less lying on the north side of Urah Swamp bounded by Nowsoms line and so down betwixt Two Branch to ye said swamp but not into ye said swamp. Item I give to my loving daughter Mary one hundred acres of land more or less lying on North side of Urah Swamp bound by my own line Newsoms and down a branch to ye said Swamp including a island on the lower side of ye said swamp. Item I give unto my son Aaron Bass my plantation on ye south side of Baird Swamp whereon he lives and all ye high Land from my

⁷⁸unknown subject, Department of Cultural Resources - Archives and Records Section, NC Archives, 109 E. Jones Ave, Raleigh, NC 27611; unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁹Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁸⁰Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁸¹*Bass Book*.

⁸²Margaret Hofmann., *Province of North Carolina Abstracts of Land Patents* (Roanoke News Company), p. 225 states that John Bass received 460 acres on the north side of Moratock River in Bertie precinct, joining Yourha swamp.

⁸³unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

uper line and to down to the Great pine Branch. Item I give unto my Daughter Patience Bass my plantation on the south side of Baire Swamp that I bought of William Johnston and all the land for the Great Branch above ye plantations down to ye lower line to her and the heirs of her body lawfully to be begotten for ever. Item I give unto my son Moses Bass all my land that lyeth on the north side of Baire Swamp which is adjoining to my brother Edward's line including all the swamp to my son. My will is further that if my loving wife should again marry and my son disturbed then my sons Edward and William Bass to have half the benefir of my orchards on my manor plantations. Item I give unto my loving son John Bass my ould Square mosled gun. Item I give unto my loving wife the third of my movables and all the remainder of my estates both within and without to be equally divided amongst my last wife's children and lastly I do nominate and appoint my loving sons John Bass and Edward to be my executors together with my loving wife as a co executor during her widowhood. In witness whereof I have here into set my hand this 18th Day of June 1732. Signed with his mark which was a reversed capital "B" Witness Tho Bryant Edward Bass and James Guie Bertie Precint February Ct. 1732 Proved by oath of Capt Thomas Bryant James Quie Edward Bass Bertie County, N.C. Wills Vol. II p. 48 1663-1789

Note that wife Mary remarried after this will and sold her right of dower to her son.⁸⁴

i) Edward⁸⁵ BASS (1829)⁸⁵ was also known as Edward (D) BASS (1829) Letter (D) is not part of his name. Used only for identification.⁸⁶ He was born in 1698.⁸⁷ He purchased land on 26 Mar 1723 at Bertie, NC, Land joined that of Thomas Bryan, Richard Washington, William Bennet and Cullen Pollock.⁸⁸ Sold his land to his brother, John and went to Black Creek area, now Wilson County, NC then Craven, Johnston, Dobbs and Wayne. Eldest son was Wright Bass.⁸⁹ He died after 1775.⁹⁰

(a) Wright⁹ BASS (2955) (Name taken from Gen Forum messate 02-00 # 1325. Wright apparently abdicated his right to his Uncle's land in a document signed June 29, 1786)

(b) Arthur⁹ BASS (3895)⁹¹ married Mourning RICHARDSON (3896).⁹² He was born in 1750.⁹³ He died in 1823.⁹⁴

i) Arthur⁹ BASS (3897)⁹⁵ married Priscillia (--?) (3898).⁹⁶ He was born in 1784.⁹⁷ He died after 1832.⁹⁸

(a) Solomon¹⁰ BASS (3899)⁹⁹ married Sarah Ann E. GEORGE (3900).¹⁰⁰ He was born in 1822.¹⁰¹ He died in 1903.¹⁰²

i) Jemima¹¹ BASS (3901).¹⁰³ Her married name was FRENCH (3901).¹⁰⁴ She married George William FRENCH Sr. (3902).¹⁰⁵ She was born in 1856.¹⁰⁶ She died in 1919.¹⁰⁷

(a) George William¹² FRENCH Jr. (3903)¹⁰⁸ is still living.

i) James Monroe¹³ FRENCH (3905)¹⁰⁹ is still living.

(a) George Alfred¹⁴ FRENCH Sr. (3907)¹¹⁰ is still living.

i) George Alfred¹⁵ FRENCH Jr. (3909)¹¹¹ is still living.

⁸⁴ Bass Book.

⁸⁵ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁸⁶ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁷ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸ Margaret Hofmann, *Province of North Carolina*, p, 192 says that Edward Bass recieved 200 acres on the north side of Morattock River.

⁸⁹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹⁰ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁹¹ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹² Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹³ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹⁴ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹⁵ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹⁶ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹⁷ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹⁸ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹⁹ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰⁰ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰¹ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰² Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰³ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰⁴ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰⁵ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰⁶ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰⁷ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰⁸ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹⁰⁹ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹¹⁰ Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

ii) Moses N.⁷ BASS (1831)¹¹² married Elizabeth (--?--) (2954). He was born circa 1700. He purchased land on 21 Nov 1752 Moses, born say 1728, received land on the north side of Bear Swamp by his father's will. He entered 100 acres on the west side of the Northwest River about 3/4 mile from Raft Swamp including his improvements on 21 November 1752. He was living near "the drains of Drowning Creek" on 1 February 1754 when Robert Carver entered 100 acres there [Philbeck, Bladen County Land Entries, nos. 677, 934]. He was taxable on 3 "white" tithes in Cumberland County, North Carolina, in 1755 [T&C 1], and he received a grant for 100 acres on Raft Swamp in Cumberland County on 21 October 1758 [Hoffman, Land Patents, I:474]. On 19 August 1761 the Cumberland County Court granted permission for the mill he had erected on Raft Swamp to be designated a public grist mill, and the court granted him a license to keep an ordinary [Minutes 1759-65, 70]. In May 1762 he posted bond not to leave the county before the next court to answer a suit by the governor and James Simpson, but he was not mentioned again in the Cumberland County Court Minutes. His estate was settled in Prince George Parish, Georgetown District, South Carolina, on 28 February 1777. His estate mentioned his cousins, Jeremiah and Wright Bass, and Mourning, Sarah, Elizabeth, and Ann Going, children of Jacob Going [South Carolina DB S-5:283, 284]. His estate settlement did not mention any children, but he was probably related to William Bass, head of a Fayetteville, Cumberland County household of 5 "other free" and 1 white woman in 1790 [NC:42]. He may have been the "William Bass a free negro" who was presented by the Granville County Court for living together in fornication and adultery with Patsy House [CR.44.289.19, no date].¹¹³ He died in 1777 at SC Death and birth date from Gen Forum message #1325. Will dated Feb 28 1777 filed in Prince George Parish, Georgetown District, SC.

iii) William⁷ BASS (1830) was born in 1703.¹¹⁴ He Received "my land at ye Beaver dam" in his father's will. in 1732 at Northampton, NC. Sold land to brother, John and went to South Carolina. Never married.¹¹⁵ He died circa 1761 at Santee, SC.¹¹⁶

iv) Keziah⁷ BASS (1841) married William JOHNSTON (1842). Her married name was JOHNSTON (1841). She was born circa 1704.¹¹⁷ In 1999 Note that this name goes back to early Bass woman who was said to have been a Nansemond Indian. The name is found for several generations so must have been important to family. Some say the name is an old Bible name taken from the story of Job.

(a) Aron⁸ JOHNSTON (1843)

v) Sarah⁷ BASS (1836) died at Granville, NC. She married Lewis ANDERSON (1837) at Granville, NC. Her married name was ANDERSON (1836). She was born circa 1705.¹¹⁸ She purchased land on 10 Nov 1757 Sarah Anderson, born say 1704, wife of Lewis Anderson, received 100 acres in Northampton County by her father's will. She and her husband Lewis sold this land on 10 November 1757 [DB 2:233].¹¹⁹

vi) Ann⁷ BASS (3368)¹²⁰ married (--?--) JOHNSTON (3369).¹²¹ Her married name was JOHNSTON (3368).¹²² She was born circa 1706. She purchased land in 1732 Ann Johnston, born say 1706, mother of Aaron Johnston who received 100 acres by her father's will. While living in Orange County, North Carolina, on 9 February 1758 he sold this 100 acres in Northampton County [DB 2:455]. He may have been the Aron Johnson who was counted as white in Wake County in 1790 [NC:104].¹²³

vii) Lucy⁷ BASS (1838) was born circa 1706.¹²⁴

viii) John⁷ BASS Jr. (1832) was also known as John (E) BASS (1832) Letter (E) not part of his name. Used only for identification purposes.¹²⁵ He lived at "Deep Creek", NC (It appears there were two John Bass. One lived near Uriah Swamp and the other near Deep Creek. "The Deep Creek deeds demonstrate conclusively that the John Bays who lived on Deep Creek in present day Hertford County was obviously a different person from John Bass who lived on Urah Swamp in present day Northampton County. There is a concrete trail of owners and adjoiners from the grant to John Bays in April 1714 up to well after 1755, all in Bertie County and all with calls on Deep Creek").¹²⁶ He was born in 1706 at Bertie, NC.¹²⁷ He married Elizabeth WINBORN (1844) before 1722 at Northampton, NC. Several people cite the name Elizabeth Winborn, but I've never been able to document. Here is a note relative to that search. Melanie Seago [melseago@earthlink.net] Here's my source for Elizabeth Winborne.
Charles Lucas cclmd@aol.com
RootsWeb WorldConnect Project: John Lucas of Eastern North Carolina Descendants and Kinfolks

¹¹¹Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

¹¹²unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹¹³Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹¹⁴John Bass, Documents MVW file.

¹¹⁵Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

¹¹⁶unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹¹⁷John Bass, Documents MVW file.

¹¹⁸John Bass, Documents MVW file.

¹¹⁹Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹²⁰Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com; Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com;

Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹²¹Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹²²Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹²³Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹²⁴John Bass, Documents MVW file.

¹²⁵John Bass, Documents MVW file.

¹²⁶John Bass, Documents MVW file.

¹²⁷Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com; Basse Family on USGENWEB, online ftp.rootsweb.com/pub/usgenweb/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt. Hereinafter cited as Basse GENWEB.

Deed book 1 page 343 says that on March 4, 1748 John and Elizabeth Bass of Northampton deeded land to William Winborn of Nansemond County Virginia. They sold him 150 acres on the north side of Roanoke River in Uraha Woods for 60 pounds. It was part of a patent granted to Henry Sims. Its possible that William was Elizabeth's brother which is how we know her maiden name. He purchased land on 10 Apr 1722 at Bertie, NC, Purchased 200 acres on 10 April 1722 near Urahaw Swamp in the part of Bertie County which became Northampton County in 1742.¹²⁸ He purchased land on 17 Jan 1727 He purchased 100 acres on Plaquet Branch of Antonkey Marsh, 150 acres on 17 January 1727, and received a patent for 410 acres south of Bear Swamp on 2 August 1727 [DB A:108; B:348, 360].¹²⁹ He purchased land on 2 Aug 1727 at Land Patent, Bertie, NC.¹³⁰ In 1732 His father, John Bass, Sr. left "my loving son John Bass my ould Square mosled gun". Also, along with his brother Edward received "My Maner plantation." He witnessed the John BASS Jr. (1832) on 7 Feb 1736 at Bertie, NC (On 7 February 1736 the Bertie County Court fined him for selling brandy without a license [Haun, Bertie County Court Minutes, I:199]).¹³¹ He purchased land on 16 Aug 1736 at Edgecomb, NC, On 16 August 1736 he bought 200 acres at the mouth of Beech Swamp in Edgecombe County. He purchased the land from Joseph Lane of Edgecomb County. John was described as being in Bertie County. He paid 20 pounds for two hundred acres on the north side of Fishing Creek adjoining Beech Swamp. This may mark his move from Bertie to Edgecomb.¹³² He purchased land on 13 Jan 1738 at Northampton, NC, He sold 410 acres of his land in Northampton County to George Anderson on 13 January 1738 [Bertie DB E:530].¹³³ He purchased land on 16 Dec 1740 at Edgecomb, NC, He bought 150 acres in Edgecombe on 16 December 1740 [DB F:190] and sold another 400 acres in Northampton by deeds of 2 October and 30 December 1742[DB 1:40,56].¹³⁴ He was slave owners He was a slave owner by August 1742 when he proved rights on five "whites" and 3 "blacks" in Northampton County [SS 906 by North Carolina Genealogy, 1825]. in 1742 at Northampton, NC.¹³⁵ He was shown on a deed on 22 Aug 1750 at Edgecomb, NC, John Bass of Northampton deeded to his son, John, for forth pounds "that plantation of mine situate in Edgcomb between Beech Swamp and Fishing Creek, being the plantation whereon the said John Bass now lives and 500 acres of land, 200 acres of said land granted by Joseph Lane by a patent dated August 14 1728, the other 300 acres granted to John Bass, Sr. by patent dated July 25 1743. (Beech Swamp is in southern Halifax County) DB 3 page 521. He was shown on a deed on 14 May 1754 at Edgecomb, NC, John Bass bought 100 acres from Alexander McDaniel for 15 pounds on the south side of Fishing Creek. He was received land grant John received 590 acres (An April 1760 survey gave this land to Halifax County) joining William Binum, Thomas Alsobrook on the north side of Fishing creek. on 22 Feb 1758 at Edgecomb, NC. He was received land grant John Bass received 590 acres in Halifax county (formerly part of Edgecomb) his land joined William Binum, John Evans and Thomas Alsobrook. on 10 Oct 1760 at Halifax, NC. He was elected in 1762 at Northampton, NC (He voted for Joseph Sikes in the Northampton County election of 1762 [SS 837 by NCGSJ XII:170]).¹³⁶ He died in 1777 at Northampton, NC.¹³⁷ His estate was probated in Sep 1777 at Northampton, NC, John Bass, Jr.'s birth in Bertie County and death in Northampton County, North Carolina is demonstrative of the type migration that gradually settled the southern states. His will which was filed in Northampton County, N.C. in 1777 and currently residing in the County Will Book Part II (1762-1791) p. 285-288 also paints a picture in the life of the time. Read it and step for a minutes into the shoes of a wealthy man who sees his death approaching.

Know all men that I John Bass of Northampton County in the provence of North Carolina being sick of sound mind and memory do make constitute and appoint and ordain this my last will and testament in manner and form following. Item I give devise and bequeath unto my son Jacob Bass one negro girl named Beck and her increase, Item I give devise and bequeath unto my son Issac Bass two negro women named Rose and Moll and their increase one feather Bed and furnichure and a mare colt called Pleasure. Item I give devise bequeath unto my Grandson John Bass son of Issac Bass a negro girl named Fanny and her increase. Item, I give devise and bequeath unto my son Abraham Bass one negro girl named Philles and her increase. Item, I give devise and bequeath unto my grandson Job Bass one negro girl named Queen and her increase and one feather bed and furnichure. Item I give devise and bequeath unto my grandson Council Bass son of Jethro Bass my land and plantations whereon I now do live containing two hundred acres more or less my negro fellow named Sharper my still (cap and ??) and a negro boy named Scotland to him his heirs and assigns forever. Item I give devise and bequeath unto my grandson Uriah Bass son of Drury my land and Plantation whereon the said Drury now lives containing one hundred acres more or less joining Dickhomny Branch and Mass Halls line also the half of my land lying in Uriah Swamp joining Col. Dawson's line also a negro woman named Hannanh and her increase hereafter also a negro boy named Ben to him his heirs and assigns forever. Item I give devise and bequeath unto my Daughter Alic Enpi (?) one negro woman named Peg and her increase also one negro boy named Pompey. Item I lend unto my daughter Undice Council the use of one negro woman named Dinah and her increase during her life and at her (?) I give devise and bequeath the said

¹²⁸Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹²⁹Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹³⁰Margaret Hofmann, *Province of North Carolina*, p. 220 John Bass acquired 410 acres on the Northernly side of Morattock River, joining south side of Bear Swamp, Robert House and Joseph Culpepper.

¹³¹Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹³²Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹³³Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹³⁴Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹³⁵Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹³⁶Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹³⁷Northampton Wills, Will, MVW file, Margaret V. Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, Pinellas County, FL 33701.

negro woman Dinah and her increase aforesaid to be equally divided between or amongst her children. Item I give devise and bequeath unto my Grandson Jesse Battle (Bittle?) son of John Battle the land and Plantations whereon the said John Battle lives and containing two hundred acres more or less bounded on an agreed line already made also 100 acres adjoining my son Jethro's land an agreed line already made and joining Charles Bryan's line. Also 50 acre of land I purchased of John Kerrey according to the most known and published bounds thereof. Also one negro girl named Jane and her increase to him his heirs and assigns forever. I give devise and bequeath unto my granddaughter Winnifred Battle one negro boy named Davy. I give unto my grandson John Battle one negro girl and increase named Patt. Item I give unto my granddaughter Margaret Battle one negro girl named Rachel and her increase. Item I give devised and bequeath unto my grandson Drury Battle a negro boy named Ishan (Joham?). Item I give unto my Daughter Elizabeth Battle one negro woman named Judith and her increase hereafter. Item I give devise and bequeath all the remainder of my estate that is not in my will given away to be equally divided between or amongst my children namely Jacob, John, Abraham, Issac, Jethro and Drury Bass also Earp Undice Councill (Alc?) and Elizabeth Battle to their heirs and assigns forever. Item I do hereby ordain constitute and appoint my esteemed friend John Know my son John Bass and Richard Deal (Neal?) my whole and sole executors of this my last will and testament hereby annulling and making void all former wills and testaments by me heretofore made and this only to be my last will and testament In witness whereof I have hereby set my hand and seal this fourteenth day of June one thousand seven hundred and seventy-seven.

John Bass (signed with an "X")

Signed sealed and published and declared by the testator to be his last will and testament in presence of Thomas Knox Moses Hall William Love John Larsiner (?) The preceeding will of John Bass was exhibited in court proved by the oath of Willian Love one of the subscribing witnesses.

(a) Drury⁸ BASS (1855). Georgia land of Drury Bass Burke County Georgia Grant Book Land Books RRR p. 263 100 acres in 1789

TTT p. 387-393 300 acres in 1790

ZZZ p. 521 100 acres in 1797 Warren County Georgia shows Drewry Bass on p. 542 land sale dated Sept 6, 1802 Also, he appears to have purchased land September 6, 1802 from Claborn Newsom of Columbia Co. recorded in Warren County Deed Book (old) E p. 542. February 27, 1795 Drury Bass on jury in Burke County, Georgia.

Drury Bass appears to be the first of the Bass name in Georgia having come just following the Revolutionary War.

.He died at GA.¹³⁸ He married // (--?--) (2034). He began military service in 1776 at North Carolina, NC, Served in Revolutionary War. He emigrated say 1787 from North Carolina, Burke, GA (He was shown as eligible to draw in the 1805 land lottery).

i) Uriah⁹ BASS (2035)¹³⁹ served in the military in 1776 at North Carolina, NC.¹⁴⁰ He died in 1777 He served in Revolutionary War and it is likely he died of war wounds. He was New Tag Don Floyd says he's seen "Bass Family History" that lists on page xii some familiar Bass names from North Carolina who served in the American Revolution. They are: Council, Drury, Hardy, Jethro, John, Sion and Uriah. There is no indication in the book where this information came from. in 2000.¹⁴¹

(b) Job⁸ BASS (1863) died at South Carolina, or Tennessee. He married Ciddey (Kiddey) (--?--) (1864) She is mentioned in a land contract with her husband. He was shown on a deed on 19 Feb 1755 at Edgecomb, NC, John Bass of Northampton deeds to his son Job Bass 100 acres in Edgecombe on the south side of Fishing Creek. He purchased land on 25 Jan 1769 at Edgecomb, NC, Job and his wife sold to Speir Coffield one hundred acres situated in the Parish of St. Marys of Edgecomb County on the south side of Fishing Creek. It was part of a tract granted to Cames Cassell by patent for 494 acres which was dated April 10 1730. The land conveyed from Cassell to McDaniel to John Bass Sen to his son Job who also conveyed 364 acres on the maple swamp at the mouth of the Bay Branch. There is evidence that Job and his wife moved to South Carolina in about 1768. He is not mentioned in his father's will the next year.

(c) Elizabeth⁸ BASS (1858) married Edward TAYLOR (1859) This is first marriage. She married John BATTLE (Bittle) (1860) This is her second marriage. Her married name was TAYLOR (1858) This is her first marriage. Her married name was BATTLE (1858).

i) John⁹ BATTLE (2155) was born say 1777 at Northampton, NC.¹⁴²

ii) Drury⁹ BATTLE (2156) was born say 1777 at Northampton, NC.¹⁴³

iii) Winnifred⁹ BATTLE (2153) was born say 1777 at Northampton, NC.¹⁴⁴

iv) Margaret⁹ BATTLE (2154) was born say 1777 at Northampton, NC.¹⁴⁵

(d) Alce⁸ BASS (1861) married /Earp/ (--?--) (1862). She died on 13 Oct 1796 at Northampton, NC.¹⁴⁶ She left a will on 13 Oct 1796 Named her grandchildren and left the residue of her estate to Ruth Byrd by her Oct. 13, 1796 will.

¹³⁸ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹³⁹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹⁴⁰ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹⁴¹ Floyd, "Donald Floyd."

¹⁴² unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹⁴³ unknown subject unknown repository.

¹⁴⁴ unknown subject unknown repository.

¹⁴⁵ unknown subject unknown repository.

¹⁴⁶ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

(e) Abraham¹⁴⁷ BASS (1849) was born circa 1720 at Northampton, NC. He was received land grant Deed Book 6 p. 42 states that Lord Granville deeded 125 acres in the Parish and county of Edgecombe on the west branch of Tumbling Run. Its peculiar that this was not proven in court until August 1756. on 30 Oct 1743 at Edgecomb, NC. He began military service circa 1750 at Militia; Soldier, Edgecomb, NC, Note that on the same list as Abraham is found Edward Bass, Elisha Battle and Thomas Floid as well as Abraham's brother, Isaac Bass.¹⁴⁷ He was received land grant He was granted 549 acres in Edgecombe County on 9 December 1761. Jean Bass witnessed the deed [Franklin County DB 1:20].

on 9 Dec 1761 at Edgecomb, NC.¹⁴⁸ He purchased land on 16 Oct 1765 at Edgecomb, NC, Abraham, purchased 700 acres in Edgecombe County on the south side of Betty's Branch on 16 October 1765[DB O:163].¹⁴⁹ He purchased land on 8 Feb 1779 at Nash, NC, On 8 February 1779 while residing in Nash County he sold 240 acres in Bute and Nash Counties. This was part of 549 acres he was granted in Edgecombe County on 9 December 1761. Jean Bass witnessed the deed[Franklin County DB 1:20].¹⁵⁰ He married Mary ROGERS (1850) before 1781 at Edgecomb, NC, Here is a note from Lance Bretsnyder. It raises a question in my mind. First, I didn't know that Edgecomb County had "vital" records at this early date and second, if Mary's granddaughter was named Elizabeth Rogers, daughter of Rober Rogers, it would be unusual for the grandmother to have the same surname. Need to investigate this more. "Edgecomb County Vital Records" gives her as widow of man named Rogers.

Bass, Abraham

Birth Date: Bef 1750 Marriage Date: Bef 1781

Date of Death: Summer 1805

Spouse's Name: Mary (widow Rodgers)

Location of Marriage: Edgecombe co., NC

Children: Elizabeth, Anne, Sion, John, others

Location of Birth: Edgecombe co., NC Other Notes/ Race/ Military Information: Grandchildren:

Jordan, Quinn, Alden, Kinchen, John, Mourning, and Mary Bass.

Location of Death/ Last Known Location: Nash co., NC

Occupation: Planter

ABSTRACTS OF NASH COUNTY, N.C. DEEDS-BOOK III

DB 3-340 ABRAHAM BASS of Nash Co. to his wife's granddaughter, ELIZABETH ROGERS, daughter of Robert Rogers of Nash Co., April 8, 1785, for love and affection a negro girl Wit: Harry Taylor and William Bridgers.

I have to look around my stuff a bit more, but in addition to Robert Rogers's son Jesse marrying Isaac Bass's daughter Denise, I think the two families had a bit of a history. I believe the Woods were in Nansemond Co., Va., before they moved into the Northampton Co., NC, area. Until later, Lance Thanks for the information. I do believe that Abraham Bass married Ann Woods's mother Mary at some point after the early 1750s.

Going back up the common tree a few generations, we have Catherine Lanieri as one of our ancestors. I have seen references to a Mark Lanieri who was in Catherine's neighborhood, I believe Norfolk, and think that he may have been her father since I can't find any other Laniers in Virginia at so early a time. There was a Lanier website that traced the Laniers to English Court musicians who came from France and had roots as musicians in Italy. I think the Italian part of the family was named Bassano. Until later, Lance

From: Margot Woodrough

To: 'Lance Bretsnyder'

Sent: Wednesday, November 10, 2004 10:50 AM

Subject: RE: Rogers materials. He was on the tax roll in 1782 at Nash, N.C, He is shown with 1087 acres of land, 10 negroes, 6 horses or mules and 40 cattle. Interesting that the same tax list says, "Abraham gave in 1340 acres of land for Charity Bass (I have no idea who she is.), one negro, one horse or mule and nine cattle. He "Although Major John Williams lived in Halifax County, most of his land lay in Nash County where his father also had owned land on Swift Creek as early as 1754. On 1 April 1777, John Williams bought 150 acres on the south side of Swift Creek from Thomas Gilchrist and his wife Martha.

On 19 December 1777, he bought 150 acres from James Douglas and his wife Dorcas. On 22 October 1782 he bought 385 acres on Tumbling Run adjoining Abraham Bass and Samuel Bridgers from Sion West, the deed witnessed by S. S. Mearns, Francis Parker, and William Cooper. On 30 March 1780, he received two North Carolina grants for 640 acres and 995 acres in Nash County. On 29 November 1793, he sold Matthew Drake 150 acres on the south side of Swift Creek, the deed witnessed by N. Williams, Matthew Drake, Jr., and Mourning Drake."

on 22 Oct 1782.¹⁵¹ He appeared on the census in 1790 at Nash, NC (Census shows Abraham, two males under 16, four females and 12 slaves)¹⁵²

¹⁴⁷Clark, Murtice June., *Colonial Soldiers of the South 1732-74*.

¹⁴⁸Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹⁴⁹Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹⁵⁰Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

¹⁵¹Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail message from unknown author e-mail (unknown address) to MVW, August 2006. Hereinafter cited as "Joy Herron."

¹⁵²1790 Census.

2 Ant. Brought forward	26	33	47	1	106	213	Ant. Br. for	68	82	1
Blanton Richard	1	4	2	-	1	8	Baker William	1	1	1
Bulls Bedford	1	1	2	-	-	4	Baker John	1	2	2
Battle John	2	-	2	-	18	22	Baker James	2	2	2
Battle William	2	4	1	-	19	26	Bond John	1	6	6
Broshe Andrew	1	3	1	-	1	6	Brantley Jacob	3	3	3
Bull Green	1	4	5	-	2	12	Brady William	1	1	1
Bell Benjamin	1	1	3	-	-	5	Brown Benjamin	1	6	6
Blount John	1	-	3	-	4	8	Braswell William	1	1	1
Braggel Nicholas	1	1	3	-	1	6	Braswell Jacob	1	2	2
Bridge Henry	2	1	4	-	4	11	Braswell Robt	1	-	-
Brady James	1	3	4	-	-	8	Bridge William	2	5	5
Biggel David	1	3	5	-	-	9	Burton Jeremiah	1	-	-
Burrow Barnaby	2	6	5	-	5	18	Battle James	1	1	1
Brown James	2	2	4	-	-	8	Bass Abram	1	2	2
Brown Mary	3	1	4	-	-	8	Bass Jesse	2	-	-
Burge Jeremiah	1	4	1	-	2	8	Boddy William	-	-	-
Bryant Benj	1	3	2	-	1	7	for El Thomas	-	-	-
Brown John	1	-	-	-	12	13	Bass Isaac	3	3	4
Brother	1	-	-	-	-	1	Bass John	1	-	-
Bond John	1	2	7	-	13	23	Bass Lion	1	3	3
Buller Christopher	2	-	2	-	-	4	Braswell Jacob	4	-	4
Bryant Wm	1	-	4	-	4	9	Brady Nathan	4	-	2
Bellard Peter	1	1	2	-	5	9	Braswell Saml	2	1	6
Bellard Edward	3	1	6	-	-	10	Braswell George	2	2	-
Bunn Henry	1	-	2	-	4	7	Braswell Dimpsey	1	2	4
Brewer Hardy	2	1	3	-	3	9	Bucknuth Tho.	4	2	3
Brantly John	1	2	5	-	-	8	Bucknuth Amos	2	4	5
Baker William	3	1	6	-	-	10	Banet John	2	5	7
Baker Allen	1	-	2	-	-	3	Barrett Nathan	1	3	3
	68	82	137	1	205	493		115	179	228

He appeared on the census in 1800 at Nash, NC.

Bransell William	3	2	1		
Battle James	1				1
Been Benjamin		2	1		1
Bass Jordan		1	1		
Braswell Robert	1			1	
Braswell Britton				2	
Brown Elias				1	
Bass Ann	1		1		
Buckwith Lion				1	
Buckwith Thomas					1
Buckwith James	1		2		
Bridges William	1	1	1		1
Bass Abraham	1			1	1
Braswell Wilson	1		1		
Braswell Denny	5	1		1	

He died circa 1803 at Nash, NC.¹⁵³ He left a will in 1804 In the name of God amen I Abraham Bass of Nash County being of perfect mind and memory do this Seventeenth day of June in the year of our Lord 1803 make and ordain this my last will and testament in manner and form following to wit. Item I give and bequeath to Ann Rose wife of Thomas Rose ten pounds current money. Item I give and bequeath to Ann More wife of Collum More ten pounds current money. Item I give and bequeath to Charraty Rogers daughter of Robert Rogers deceased ten pounds current money. Item I give and bequeath to Mourning Rogers daughter of Robert Rogers deceased ten pounds current money. Item I give and bequeath to Zona Rogers daughter of Robert Rogers deceased ten pounds current money. Item I give and bequeath to my grandson Jordan Bass one still Item I give and bequeath to Thomas Hamilton (Hamilton) one negr woman named Little Rose also one blue chest. I give and bequath to my daughter Elizabeth Bridgers one horse caled Charlemain one table and bible, also one bed and furniture her choce. Item my desires is that my negro girl named Lyloe (?) shall be set free and that Thomas Hamilton should have the care of her until she is twenty one years of age Item My desire is that all the rest of my estate both real and personal not already given away to be sold and after paying the above legacys and debts to be equally divided between Elizabeth Bridgers and Sion Bass Heirs and John Bass Heirs in the following manner to wit. One half of the whole of the sweeping legacy to Elizabeth Bridgers. Item The other half to be divided in the following manner between Jordan Bass Polly Parker Quinne Bass Aldin Bass Kinchen Bass John Bass and Mourning Floyd. Item my will is that Polly Parker part of legacy shall be discretionary with my executors whether they pay her or not untill the expiration of six years. Item my will and desire is that if Fed Floyd husband of Mourning Floyd ever brings a law suit against my self or my executors for any part of my estate - his part then to be only forty shillings and balance over and above the forty shillings to be for the use of supporting the said lawsuit. Item I constitute and appoint William Bridges Jesse Bass and George Boddie Executors to this my last will and testament and I pronounce this to be my last will and testament and no other signed sealed and published in the presencet of us. Signed with an "x" Abraham Bass Witness D. Sills (signed with an "x") and Lucy Boddie The foregoing will was duly proven in ? by the Oath of David Sills a subscribing witness thereto and on Motion ordered to be recorded. Nash County Wills, 1778 to 1859, Part 1, p. 46 **Abraham Bass' Will - August Court 1804.**¹⁵⁴ His estate was probated in Aug 1805 at Nash, NC.¹⁵⁵ His estate was probated on 5 Sep 1805 Abraham Bass sale made by George Boddie executor. Account current 1807.¹⁵⁶

i) Ann⁹ BASS (1943).¹⁵⁷ Her married name was ROSE (1943).¹⁵⁸ She married Thomas ROSE (1945) at Halifax, NC, This is her second husband.¹⁵⁹ She married Robert ROGERS (1944) on 26 May 1764 at Edgecomb, NC, This was the part of Edgecomb that became Nash County. Marriage record shows Robert Rogers married to Anne Woods. If this is correct she was born Bass and married a Woods OR her mother was married to Woods and then to Abraham Bass. As of 26 May 1764, her married name was ROGERS (1943). She died on 6 May 1824. Her estate was probated on 6 May 1824.

(a) Jacob¹⁰ ROGERS (1954) was born after 1765.

(b) Jesse¹⁰ ROGERS (1955) was born after 1765.

(c) Robert¹⁰ ROGERS (1956) was born after 1765.

(d) Betsy¹⁰ ROGERS (1957)¹⁶⁰ was born after 1765. She was shown on a deed on 8 Apr 1785 at Nash, NC, Deed Book 3 p. 340 talks about Elizabeth Rogers, daughter of Robert Rogers as being the granddaughter of the wife of Abraham Bass.

(e) Ann (Nanny)¹⁰ ROGERS (1958) married Collum MOORE (1959). Her married name was MOORE (1958). She was born after 1765.

i) Indes¹¹ MOORE (1966)¹⁶¹

(f) Charity¹⁰ ROGERS (1960). Her married name was Charity Rogers ODOM (1960). She was born after 1765. She married /Odum/ (--?--) (1961) before 1824 at Halifax, NC.¹⁶²

(g) Mourning¹⁰ ROGERS (1962)¹⁶³ was born after 1765. She married /Sikes/ (--?--) (1963) before 1824 at Halifax, NC.¹⁶⁴ She died in 1852 at Halifax, NC, Will dated April 4, 1852.

i) Julia Ann¹¹ SIKES (2019) married Augustine BASS Jr. (2018), son of Augustin BASS Sr. (1987) and Lydia (--?--) (1988), on 26 Jan 1833 at Nash, NC, Date found on microfiche at LDS. As of 26 Jan 1833, her married name was BASS (2019).

(a) Jacob¹² BASS (2021) was born circa 1789.

(h) Zany¹⁰ ROGERS (1964) was born after 1765. She married /Lindsey/ (--?--) (1965) before 1824.¹⁶⁵

¹⁵³ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹⁵⁴ Joseph Watson, compiler, *Abstracts of Will Book 1 Nash County NC 1778-1868*. Hereinafter cited as *Nash County Wills*.

¹⁵⁵ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹⁵⁶ Joseph Watson, *Nash County Wills*.

¹⁵⁷ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹⁵⁸ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; *Abstracts of Wills of Halifax County, NC 1758-1824* (No place: no publisher). Hereinafter cited as *Halifax County Wills*.

¹⁵⁹ *Halifax County Wills*.

¹⁶⁰ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address, Note that her married name is same as her single name; unknown compiler, *Nash County, North Carolina Vital Records Abstracts* (No place: Ancestry.com). Hereinafter cited as *Nash Abstracts*.

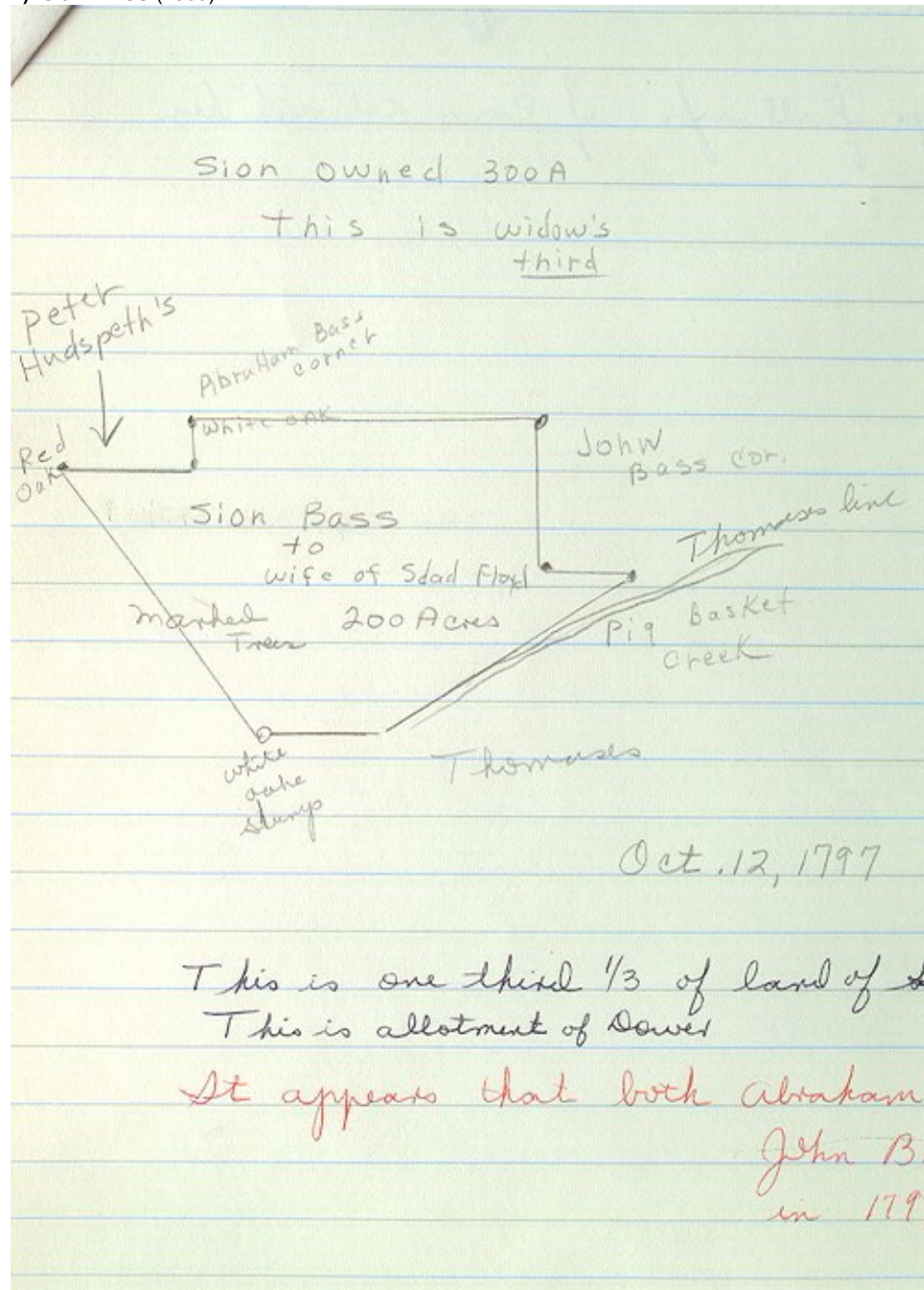
¹⁶¹ *Halifax County Wills*.

¹⁶² *Halifax County Wills*.

¹⁶³ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹⁶⁴ *Halifax County Wills*.

ii) Sion⁹ BASS (1969)



was received land grant Sion received a state grant of 640 acres on Back Swamp. Book 3 p. 174 on 10 Nov 1779 at Nash, NC. He married Mildred (---) (1116) circa 1780 The marriage of Sion Bass and Mildred, who later married Shad Floyd, is the earliest documented record of the link between the Bass and Floyd Family of North Carolina. It is interesting that the family linking occurred in the newly created county of Nash for it would be from this county that Fed Floyd and Mourning Bass would depart on the next significant migration of the family into newly opened lands in Georgia. The brothers John and Sion Bass seem to have died rather young. Sion's widow, Mildred married Shad Floyd who was the brother of Fed Floyd who was appointed administrator for John's estate and married John's daughter, Mourning.

Both the Bass and the Floyd family had come as early settlers to the colonies from England and had slowly migrated from Virginia into North Carolina over a period of 100 years. The process continued into the 19th and 20th century as the more adventurous members gradually moved into Georgia and

beyond seeking to better their lives. North Carolina Court Records part 1 (1778-1804) describe a segment of the family's life starting in 1798 where on page 19 Abraham Bass is appointed Guardian to Alden and Kitchen Bass orphans of Sion Bass. In May of 1799 on p. 43 is a note about articles of agreement between Abraham Bass and William Bridgers. On p. 49 is a note of the appointment of George Boddie Esq. as guardian to Kitchen, John, Alden and Quinny Bass orphans of Sion Bass. On pp. 48 and 49 is a note that a division of the Estate of Sion Bass established at this term which division _____ Each Legatee part (cannot read rest - not much here).

Also during the May term of 1800 Court Nathan Whitehead, Benjamin A. Boom, John Edwards, Jason Rogers, John Drake are appointed commissioners to lay off and allot the land which Willis Bass deceased seized of the one six part of the one fifth part of John Parker and wife agreeable to the petition. The court appoints William Bridgers as guardian to the infant mentioned in the above petition.

Division of the land of Sihon Bass Nash County, N.C. Vol. 14 p. 31 Aug. Ct. 1803 State of North Carolina, Nash County August Term 1800. We the commissioners having met with the surveyor proceed to divide the Lands of Sihon Bass deceased between the heirs of said Bass. Plan 1st contains 2/7(?) of the land allowed to Willis Bass deceased which said lot contains 132 A whereof No. 1 is allotted to Shad Floyd for the mother of said deceased child. No. 2 Jordan Bass No. 3 John Parker for his wife each part containing 16 acres. Beginning at a Turkey Oak in Thomas line thence South 60 poles to a white oak John Turner's corner thence west 68 poles to his other corner thence _____ Turner's other line south 40 poles to a red oak thence Sampson Powells line West 36 poles to a co blk. (Black Gum Pine?) thence Masengales line North 100 poles to a black Jack Thence East to the first station containing forty eight acres. Plan 2nd contains Quinny Bass's part of the land of Willis Bass deceased. Beg. at a pine in Masingale's line and running south 25 poles to a blk Jack Thence east 140 poles to a turkey oak in Thomas line thence North 25 poles to a stake thence west to the first station containing 16 acres. Plan 3rd contains the lands of John Bass, Kitchen Bass & Aldin Bass their parts of the land of Sihon Bass deceased including their equal art of the lot of Willis Bass deceased viz. No 1 to John, No.2 to Kitchen & No. 3 to Alden Bass, as will appear by the plan annexed.

Beg at a red oak and running South 118 poles to a stake thence west 104 poles to a black jack in Masingale's line thence north 25 poles to a corner post oak thence west 127 poles to James Masingales corner sweet gum thence Chapman's line north 56 poles to a maple thence North 52 (d) 23 poles to a stake thence Gays line North 182 poles to a corner blk oak thence E 114 poles to a corner white oak thence Edward's line North 123 poles to a corner pine thence to the first station containing in all three hundred and eighty acres.

Plan 4th is a tract or parcel of Land lying on both sides of Tumblin Run Creek containing one hundred and twenty acres more or less and is bounded agreeable to a deed of conveyance from Abraham Bass to the said Sihon Bass deceased which said tract of land and premises we allot to Jordan Bass. Given under our hands this 8 day of August 1800 (?) William Bridgers (his mark) Jacob Rogers Benjamin Boon August Court 1803 (?)

Nash County Deed Book #14 item #117 p. 27 lays off the one third of land of Sion Bass (allotment of dower) to widow, Mildred.

We the jurors have met with the county surveyor on the premises of this land of Sion Bass decd. and proceeded to lay off and allot two hundred acres of land lying in Nash county to the wife of Shadrick Floyd formerly the widow of Sion Bass deceased which we suppose to be one third part of the value of said land and its boundaries as follows:

Beginning at a red oak in Peter Hudspeths line thence running along his line east 66 poles to a corner from thence along his other line north 26 poles to a white oak Abraham Besses corner thence with his line east 195 poles to a hickory John Besses corner thence with his line south 68 poles to a corner thence along his other line east 44 poles to a pine in Pig Basket Creek thence up the meanders of the creek --- Thomases line south 54 degrees w 160 poles to the head thence with Thomases other line west 66 poles to a corner white oak stump thence along a line of marked trees to the beginning.

Given under our hands this 12 of October 1797 William Bridges, Jesse Powell, Sam Taylor, Eliah Boone, John Pitts, Benjamin Boon, Penuel Floyd, Dinton H ?, Will Pitts, Wm. B nt, Nathan Griffin, John Edwards.

Registered under order of Court this 13th day of Nov. AD 1801 /attested Jno G. Blount P.R. He was received land grant Sion was granted land by State of N.C. Book 3 page 174 in 1780 at Nash, NC. He was on the tax roll in 1782 at Nash, NC, Sion shown with 950 acres of land, one negro, one horse or mule and eleven cattle.¹⁶⁶ He was received land grant Surveyed Oct 3 1780 Sion Bass granted 458 acres in Nash county on the waters of Pigbasket creek, joining his own line, Peter Hedgepeth, Abraham Bass, John Bass, John Turner and Sampson Powell Book 46 p. 13 on 2 Oct 1782 at Nash, N.C. He was received land grant He was granted land by State of North Carolina in 1783 Book 3 page 44. in 1783 at Nash, NC. He was shown on a deed on 22 Feb 1783 at Nash, NC, Sion sold 100 acres to Walker Massengill for 20 pounds. Book 1 page 280. He was shown on a deed on 5 Feb 1787 at Nash, NC, He sold 140 acres to Stephen Webb on the south side of Tarboro Road. He appeared on the

¹⁶⁶Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

census in 1790 at Nash, NC (He is shown with himself, three sons under age 16, five females and four slaves)¹⁶⁷

¹⁶⁷ 1790 Census.

2 nd Ant. Brought forward	26	33	47	1	106	213
Blanton Richard	1	4	2	-	1	8
Battle Resford	1	1	2	-	-	4
Battle John	2	-	2	-	18	22
Battle William	2	4	1	-	19	26
Brooks Andrew	1	3	1	-	1	6
Bell Green	1	4	5	-	2	12
Bell Benjamin	1	1	3	-	-	5
Blount John	1	-	3	-	4	8
Baggett Nicholas	1	1	3	-	1	6
Bridges Wm.	2	1	4	-	4	11
Bond James	1	3	4	-	-	8
Biggel David	1	3	5	-	-	9
Barrow Barnaby	2	6	5	-	5	18
Brown James	2	2	4	-	-	8
Brown Mary	3	1	4	-	-	8
Burge Jeremiah	1	4	1	-	2	8
Bryant Wm.	1	3	2	-	1	7
Brown John	1	-	-	-	12	13
Brooks	1	-	-	-	-	1
Bond John	1	2	7	-	13	23
Muller Christopher	2	-	2	-	-	4
Bryant Wm.	1	-	4	-	4	9
Ballard Peter	1	1	2	-	5	9
Ballard Edward	3	1	6	-	-	10
Bunn Henry	1	-	2	-	4	7
Brewer Hardy	2	1	3	-	2	9
Brantly John	1	2	5	-	-	8
Baker William	3	1	6	-	-	10
Baker Allen	1	-	2	-	-	3
	68	82	137	-1	205	493

Here is estate inventory His inventory sold 1793 by George Boddie. He died on 12 Oct 1797 at Nash, NC, He died young and unexpectedly as proved by the fact that all of his children had guardians

appointed. His inventory sold 1793 by George Boddie. Deed book 14 item #117 p. 27 shows allotment of dower of 200 acres to wife of Shadrick Floyd formerly widow of Sion Bass who died 10-12-1797. Land on Pig Basket Creek adjoining Abraham and John Bass. I do not know this is his death date, but rather the date that the land was divided, probably when Mildred married Shadrack. He was William Bridgers was appointed guardian of Mildred Bass' minor children. in 1800 at Nash, N.C. His estate was probated in 1803 at Nash, NC, During the May term of 1800 Court Nathan Whitehead, Benjamin A. Boom, John Edwards, Jason Rogers, John Drake are appointed commissioners to lay off and allot the land which Willis Bass deceased seized of the one six part of the one fifth part of John Parker and wife agreeable to the petition. The court appoints William Bridgers as guardian to the infant mentioned in the above petition.

Division of the land of Sihon Bass Nash County, N.C. Vol. 14 p. 31 Aug. Ct. 1803 State of North Carolina, Nash County August Term 1800. We the commissioners having met with the surveyor proceed to divide the Lands of Sihon Bass deceased between the heirs of said Bass. Plan 1st contains 27(?) of the land allowed to Willis Bass deceased which said lot contains 132 A whereof No. 1 is allotted to Shad Floyd for the mother of said deceased child. No. 2 Jordan Bass No. 3 John Parker for his wife each part containing 16 acres. Beginning at a Turkey Oak in Thomas line thence South 60 poles to a white oak John Turner's corner thence west 68 poles to his other corner thence _____ Turner's other line south 40 poles to a red oak thence Sampson Powells line West 36 poles to a co blk. (Black Gum Pine?) thence Masengales line North 100 poles to a black Jack Thence East to the first station containing forty eight acres. Plan 2nd contains Quinny Bass's part of the land of Willis Bass deceased. Beg. at a pine in Masingale's line and running south 25 poles to a blk Jack Thence east 140 poles to a turkey oak in Thomas line thence North 25 poles to a stake thence west to the first station containing 16 acres. Plan 3rd contains the lands of John Bass, Kitchen Bass & Aldin Bass their parts of the land of Sihon Bass deceased including their equal part of the lot of Willis Bass deceased viz. No 1 to John, No.2 to Kitchen & No. 3 to Alden Bass, as will appear by the plan annexed

Beg at a red oak and running South 118 poles to a stake thence west 104 poles to a black jack in Masingale's line thence north 25 poles to a corner post oak thence west 127 poles to James Masingales corner sweet gum thence Chapman's line north 56 poles to a maple thence North 52 (d) 23 poles to a stake thence Gays line North 182 poles to a corner blk oak thence E 114 poles to a corner white oak thence Edward's line North 123 poles to a corner pine thence to the first station containing in all three hundred and eighty acres.

Plan 4th is a tract or parcel of Land lying on both sides of Tumblin Run Creek containing one hundred and twenty acres more or less and is bounded agreeable to a deed of conveyance from Abraham Bass to the said Sihon Bass deceased which said tract of land and premises we allot to Jordan Bass. Given under our hands this 8 day of August 1800 (?) William Bridgers (his mark) Jacob Rogers Benjamin Boon August Court 1803 (?)

Nash County Deed Book #14 item #117 p. 27 lays off the one third of land of Sion Bass (allotment of dower) to widow, Mildred.

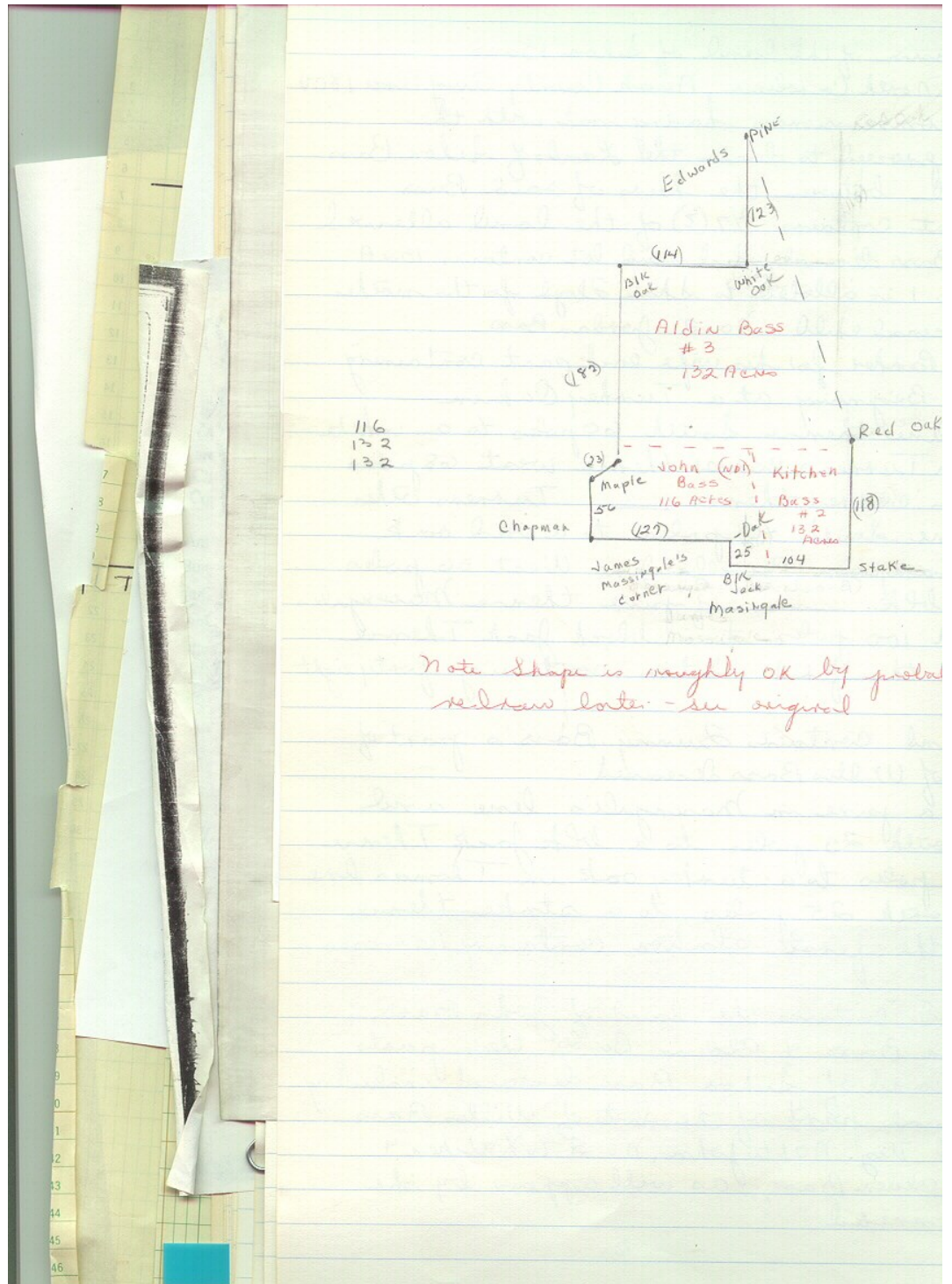
We the jurors have met with the county surveyor on the premises of this land of Sion Bass decd. and proceeded to lay off and allot two hundred acres of land lying in Nash county to the wife of Shadrick Floyd formerly the widow of Sion Bass deceased which we suppose to be one third part of the value of said land and its boundaries as follows:

Beginning at a red oak in Peter Hudspeths line thence running along his line east 66 poles to a corner from thence along his other line north 26 poles to a white oak Abraham Besses corner thence with his line east 195 poles to a hickory John Besses corner thence with his line south 68 poles to a corner thence along his other line east 44 poles to a pine in Pig Basket Creek thence up the meanders of the creek --- Thomases line south 54 degrees w 160 poles to the head thence with Thomases other line west 66 poles to a corner white oak stump thence along a line of marked trees to the beginning.

Given under our hands this 12 of October 1797 William Bridges, Jesse Powell, Sam Taylor, Eliah Boone, John Pitts, Benjamin Boon, Penuel Floyd, Dinton H ?, Will Pitts, Wm. B nt, Nathan Griffin, John Edwards.

Registered under order of Court this 13th day of Nov. AD 1801 /attested Jno G. Blount P.R.¹⁶⁸

¹⁶⁸ Joseph Watson, *Nash County Wills*.



He was New Tag According to my information, Quincy Bass was born about 1790 in Nash Co., NC. There is a marriage bond on file in Wake Co., NC dated Oct. 25, 1915 with the bride being Mary McMillian. James Bass was the bondsman. They had one child that I know of, Zachariah. Quincy's father was Sion Bass and his sibs were Jordan, Kitchen (or maybe Kinchen), John and Alden. Sion's father was Abraham Bass who died in Nash Co. in 1805. Abraham's parents were John Bass and Elizabeth Winborn. John was born in Bertie Co. They lived in Northampton Co., NC. - Al Bass in 2000. He was New Tag Don Floyd says he's seen "Bass Family History" that lists on page xii some familiar Bass names from North Carolina who served in the American Revolution. They are: Council, Drury, Hardy, Jethro, John, Sion and Uriah. There is no indication in the book where this information came

from. in 2000.¹⁶⁹ He Kinchen P. Bass was the son of Sion Bass and Anna Jones. I have traced one of my lines (my Ggrandmother, a Newsome) back to a Kinchen in Isle of Wight Co., but do not know of a Kinchen related to the Basses.

William J. Kinchen was sheriff of Northampton Co. in 1745. He married Elizabeth Dawson, who was the daughter of John Dawson, who owned land next to our John Bass. John Dawson was a very wealthy man. He is mentioned in my John Bass of Virginia, which you have. Al Bass in 2002. He I have done no original research on Sion or his close kin and know nothing of his or their Revolutionary record. The name Anna Jones I got from one Dena Jones, email address >scott509@bellsouth.net<. You might give her a try. Al Bass in 2002.

(a) Polly¹⁰ BASS (1982) was born say 1780. She married John PARKER (1983) circa 1795. As of circa 1795, her married name was PARKER (1982).

i) William¹¹ PARKER (3839)¹⁷⁰

ii) John¹¹ PARKER (3840)¹⁷¹

iii) Lucy¹¹ PARKER (3841)¹⁷²

(b) Quinny¹⁰ BASS (1799) was born circa 1780.

(c) Willis¹⁰ BASS (1980) was born circa 1780.

(d) John¹⁰ BASS (1976) appeared on the census at NC.¹⁷³ He was born circa 1780.

(e) Jordon¹⁰ BASS (1977) was born circa 1780. He died in 1862 at KY.

(f) Kinchen¹⁰ BASS (1978) was born circa 1780. He was shown on a deed on 6 Feb 1812 at Nash, NC, Kitchen Bass of Williamson County Tennessee deeded 132 acres in Nash County to Walker Massingill, Jr. He died in 1812 at Williamson, TN.

(g) Aldin¹⁰ BASS (1981) was born circa 1785 at Nash, NC.¹⁷⁴ He was an orphan Both George Boddie and Abraham Bass served as his guardian. in 1796 at Nash, NC.¹⁷⁵ He was shown on a deed on 23 Mar 1809 at Nash, NC, Alden Bass deeded to Redick Massingale 132 acres in Nash County. He died in 1814 at KY.

iii) Elizabeth⁹ BASS (1946) married William BRIDGERS (1947), son of Benjamin BRIDGERS Sr. (4520) and Sarah BRYANT (4522). Her married name was BRIDGERS (1946). She was born in 1745.¹⁷⁶ She migrated circa 1804 It appears that shortly after her father, Abraham's will was written she and her two daughters Penny and Hartwell both of whom were married to men named Drake as well as her son Reddick moved to Tennessee. Her other sons apparently stayed behind in North Carolina. She was buried in 1845 at LaGuardo, Wilson, Tennessee, She is buried at Davis Cemetery.¹⁷⁷ She left a will in 1845 A correspondent took a picture of the tombstone of Elizabeth at Davis Cemetery, LaGuardo, Wilson Co., Tenn. She died in 1845 and the inscription, according to my correspondent read that she was "said to be 100."

Her will is recorded in Wilson County Will Book A:218 and reads, "I, Elizabeth Bridges, being of sound and perfect mind and memory do make and publish this my last will and testament in manner and form following. 1st that all my just debts be paid, 2nd I wish all my stock, household and kitchen furniture to be sold in any way that my Executors may think best, and after paying all my burial expenses, tombstone, etc I wish if means I may have, including money, notes, that may be in my possession at the time of my death together with the amount of sales of all my personal property be laid out by my Executors and so much thereof as may be sufficient to purchase the negro girl now in my possession named Leah and emancipate her, the rights of said girl being in Elijah --?-- at my death and should there be anything left after the purchase of said girl, it to be equally divided amongst my children. Or in case my Executors should fail to purchase said negro girl, Leah, I wish the full amount of my estate to be divided equally amongst my Children & lastly I constitute and appoint J. McClain & Thomas Davis my Executors of this my last will and testament, hereby revoking all other former wills by me made, in witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affix my seal this 8th day January 1841." Witnesses were J. H. Davis and G. H. Love. The will was proven 9 October 1845. Joy Heron.¹⁷⁸ She died in Aug 1845 at Wilson, Tennessee. The other document of interest is from the Wilson Co., Tenn. Chancery Court Minute Book B:13-14, "Elijah Boddie vs Alfred Bridges & Others." It reads " . . . 22 July 1846 . . . that by the will of William Bridges of North Carolina which was admitted to probate at the November Term 1805 in North Carolina he bequeathed negroes Phill & Grace to the wife of the Testator, Elizabeth Bridges for her life, remainder at her death to his children. . . life estate has expired by the death of wife of Testator who departed this life in August 1845. It further appears at the death of the Testator he had eight children living, to wit, Reddick Bridges, Harty Drake intermarried with Brittain Drake, Penelope Drake intermarried with Richard Drake, Ed, Edward [I believe this should be Edmond/Edmund] Bridges, Sampson Bridges, John Bridges, Micajah Bridges & Henry Bridges. . . ." This is an interesting document

¹⁶⁹Floyd, "Donald Floyd."

¹⁷⁰unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*; unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*; unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*.

¹⁷¹unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*; unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*; unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*.

¹⁷²unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*; unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*; unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*.

¹⁷³U.S. Dept. of Commerce, *Bureau of the Census, Second Census of the U.S., 1800: Population Schedule, Micropublication M32, National Archives, Washington, DC*; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1800). Hereinafter cited as *1800 Census*.

¹⁷⁴Joseph Watson, *Nash County Wills*.

¹⁷⁵Joseph Watson, *Nash County Wills*.

¹⁷⁶Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

¹⁷⁷Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

¹⁷⁸Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

because it names children not named in the will of William Bridgers. My guess would be that he had already provided for the children excluded by will.¹⁷⁹

(a) John¹⁰ BRIDGERS (1948)

(b) Henry¹⁰ BRIDGERS (1949) It appears that he stayed in N.C. from the following.

BRIDGERS, HENRY

State: NC Year: 1820

County: Nash County Record Type: Federal Population Schedule

Township: No Township Listed Page: 413

Database: NC 1820 Federal Census Index

BRIDGERS, HENRY

State: NC Year: 1812

County: Nash County Regiment Record Type:

Township: Sixth Company Page:

Database: NC 1812-1814 Muster Rolls. He appeared on the census in 1800 at Edgecomb, NC

(BRIDGERS, WILLIAM

State: NC Year: 1800 County: Edgecombe County Record Type: Federal Population Schedule Township: 10100-00100-06 Page: 182 Database: NC 1800 Federal Census Index).

He appeared on the census in 1820 at Nash, N.C.

(c) Sampson¹⁰ BRIDGERS (1950)

According to a message on genforum:

Sampson P. Bridgers who married Elizabeth Ann Nicholson in NashCoNC on March 13, 1804 went to TN Abt 1805 after his father's death. His father was William Bridgers 1751-1805 son of Benjamin Bridgers Sr. 1704-1781 who married Sarah Bryant Drake 1708-1778 in 1729. Sampson was the oldest son in the family. They were from BertieCo, EdgecombeCo, NashCo North Carolina Area. The reason the youngest son was born in HaywoodCoTN is because they had relatives there. Could you e-mail me a list of their 11 children with birth/deathdates--wives?? Hope this helps. The HaywoodTNFamily migrated South & West later on. Hope to hear more from you soon. Martha Bridger Shipman.

He married Elizabeth Ann NICHOLSON (4519), daughter of Chloe DRAKE (4589), on 13 Mar 1804 at Nash, N.C.¹⁸⁰

i) James D.¹¹ BRIDGERS (5170)¹⁸¹ married Sarah DRAKE (4639), daughter of James DRAKE (4637).¹⁸² He was born in 1800.¹⁸³ He died in 1884.¹⁸⁴

(d) Micajah¹⁰ BRIDGERS (1951) appeared on the census in 1810 at Franklin, N.C.

(e) Penny¹⁰ BRIDGERS (1952) married Richard DRAKE (1953), son of William DRAKE (4570) and Zilpah (---) (4580), Richard Drake is shown on the 1805 Wilson county Tennessee tax list as having 213 acres at Spence Creek. Her married name was DRAKE (1952).

(f) Reddick¹⁰ BRIDGERS (4560)¹⁸⁵ was on the tax roll in 1805 at Wilson, Tennessee, Reddick Bridgers is shown on the tax role as having 360 acres at Spence Creek. He appeared on the census in 1820 at Gallatin, Sumner, Tennessee.

(g) Edmond¹⁰ BRIDGERS (4561)¹⁸⁶

(h) Hartwell¹⁰ BRIDGERS (4558)¹⁸⁷ was shown on a deed.¹⁸⁸ She married Brittain DRAKE (4559), son of William DRAKE (4570), Brittain Drake is shown on the 1805 and 1806 Wilson County Tennessee Tax list as having 205 Acres. He also appears on the 1805 tax list in Capt Crawley's District at Cedar Lick with 640 acres.¹⁸⁹ She died. Her married name was DRAKE (4558).¹⁹⁰ She was born before 1804.

¹⁷⁹Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

¹⁸⁰unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

¹⁸¹C.G. Jo White Linn, *Drake-Arrington, White-Turner, Linn-Brown and Two Dozen Related Southern Lines* (Salisbury, N.C.: Privately Published, 1984). Hereinafter cited as *Drake - Arrington*; Jo White Linn, *Drake - Arrington*; Jo White Linn, *Drake - Arrington*.

¹⁸²Jo White Linn, *Drake - Arrington*.

¹⁸³Jo White Linn, *Drake - Arrington*.

¹⁸⁴Jo White Linn, *Drake - Arrington*.

¹⁸⁵Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006; Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006; Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

¹⁸⁶Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006; Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006; Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

¹⁸⁷Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006; Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006; Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

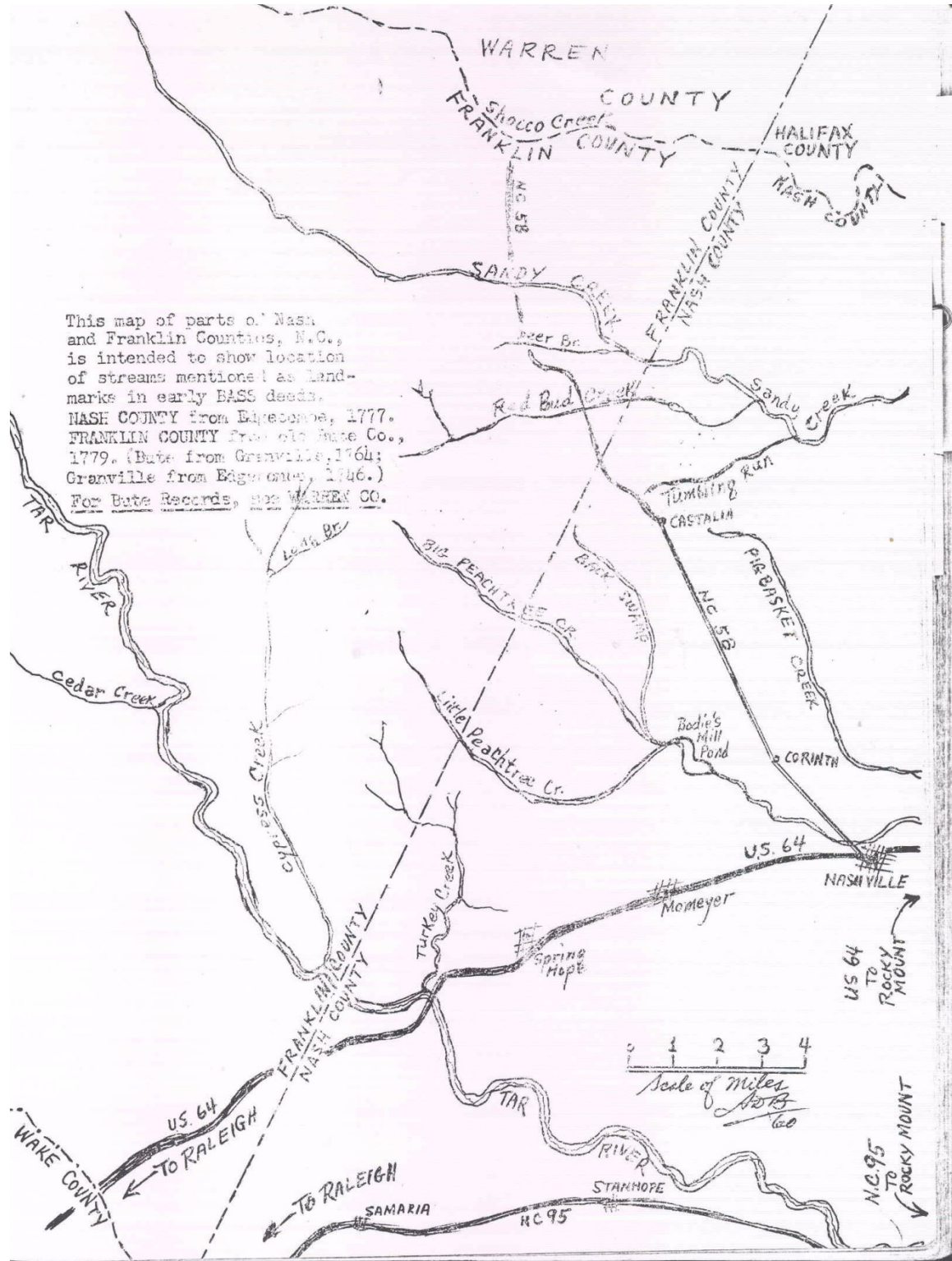
¹⁸⁸unknown compiler, *Nash Abstracts*.

¹⁸⁹Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

¹⁹⁰Joy Herron, "Joy Herron," e-mail to MVW, August 2006.

iv) John⁹ BASS (1772) was born circa 1760 He is shown as being older than 16 on the 1790 census. In addition he and wife deeded land in 1780 so he must have been at least 20 years old in 1780 - perhaps older. He was shown on a deed in 1779 at Pigbasket Creek, Nash, NC, Nash County Record of Deeds - 1782-1813 Vol. 3 p. 202 State of North Carolina to John Bass State of North Carolina.

To all to whom these Presents shall come Greeting. Know ye that we for and in consideration of the sum of fifth Shillings for every hundred acres hereby granted paid into our treasury by John Bass have given and granted and by these presents have given and granted unto the said John Bass a tract of land containing six hundred and forty acres lying and being in our county of Nash on Pigbasket Creet Beginning at a Red oak in Isaac Hilliards Line thence running North Three hundred six Poles to a red oak in _____ West's line thence along Wests line East Eighty Pole to a pine his Corner thence along his other line North one hundred and sixty pole to a pine his corner thence along his other line North East one hundred and eighty pole to (another point?) near Willian Battles line thence Battles line to and along _____ line south one hundred and seventy three poles to a red oak tree west seventy pole to white oak thence south two hundred and seventy three pole to a pine in said Hilliards thence along his line west to the Beginning as by the Plat hereunto annexed doth appear Together with all Woods Waters mines minerals _____ and appurtances to the Said Land Belonging or appurtaining to hold to the Said John Bass his heirs and assigns forever yielding and paying to us such sums of money yearly or otherwise as our general assembly from time to time may Direct Provided always that the Said John Bass shall cause this grant to be Registered in the Registers office of our Said County of Nash within eleven months from the date hereof otherwise the said shall be void and of no effect. In testimony whereof we have caused our great seal to be hereunto affixed Witness Richard Caswell Esquire our governor Captain General and Commander in Chief at Kingston the Tenth day of November in the fouth year of our Independence and in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and seventy nine. Signed Richard Caswell Registered in the Registrars office of Nash April 1780. (Surveyed April 12 1779. Sion Bass was one of the chainbearers.) Book 3 p. 202.



He was received land grant State of N.C. granted him land in 1780 p. 266 V. 3 in 1780 at Nash, NC. He was received land grant The following deed seems to belong to this John Bass. Nash County Record of Deeds - 1782-1813 Vol. 3 p. 202 State of North Carolina to John Bass State of North Carolina. To all to whom these Presents shall come Greeting. Know ye that we for and in consideration of the sum of fifth Shillings for every hundred acres hereby granted paid into our treasury by John Bass have given and granted and by these presents have given and granted unto the said John Bass a tract

of land containing six hundred and forty acres lying and being in our county of Nash on Pigbasket Creet Beginning at a Red oak in Isaac Hilliards Line thence running North Three hundred six Poles to a red oak in _____ West's line thence along West's line East Eighty Pole to a pine his Corner thence along his other line North one hundred and sixty pole to a pine his corner thence along his other line North East one hundred and eighty pole to (another point?) near Willian Battles line thence Battles line to and along _____ line south one hundred and seventy three poles to a red oak tree west seventy pole to white oak thence south two hundred and seventy three pole to a pine in said Hilliards thence along his line west to the Beginning as by the Plat hereunto annenxed doth appear Together with all Woods Waters mines minerals _____ and appurtances to the Said Land Belonging or appurtaining to hold to the Said John Bass his heirs and assigns forever yielding and paying to us such sums of money yearly or otherwise as our general assembly from time to time may Direct Provided always that the Said John Bass shall cause this grant to be Registered in the Registers office of our Said County of Nash within eleven months from the date hereof otherwise the said shall be void and of no effect. In testimony whereof we have caused our great seal to be hereunto affixed Witness Richard Caswell Esquire our governor Captain General and Commander in Chief at Kingston the Tenth day of November in the fourth year of our Independence and in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and seventy nine. Signed Richard Caswell Registered in the Registrars office of Nash April 1780. in Apr 1780 at Nash, NC. He was shown on a deed on 8 Jun 1780 at Nash, NC, John and Charity Bass sold land to George Massingill for 10 pounds 200 acres in Nash county Book 1 page 257. He was shown on a deed on 21 Jul 1780 at Nash, NC, John sold land to William Bridgers. see p. 247 Book 1 shortly after that John sold to George Massingill (p. 280) John and Charity Bass of Nashcounty for 10 pounds sold 320 acres to Willian Bridgers on the south side of Swift Creek. He married Charity (--?--) (1793) circa 1790 We know wife's name is Charity as she is mentioned with her husband in land transactions. He appeared on the census in 1790 at Nash, NC (He is shown living alone and being over 16 in this census). He was shown on a deed on 14 May 1792 at Nash, NC, John Bass bought two tracts on the south side of Peachtree Creek, 225 acres and 150 acres from Isaac Bass. It ws part of the tract granted to Isaac by Granville in 1772. He appeared on the census in 1800 at Nash, NC. He was account administrator in 1802 at Nash, NC, Nash County Court Records (1778-1804) on p. 245 state that administration notice is granted to Frederick Floyd on the Estate of John Bass who entered into Bond of one Thomasine ____ Micjah Wells _____ ordered that the ____ of John Bass Deceased (appears to be 1802 but could be 1803). Note: Frederick was the son-in law of John Bass. He was served on jury He is listed as a juror for the May Court in the county minutes. in May 1802 at Nash, N.C. He died say 1803 Nash County Court Records (1778-1804) on p. 245 state that administration notice is granted to Frederick Floyd on the Estate of John Bass who entered into Bond of one Thomasine ____ Micjah Wells _____ ordered that the ____ of John Bass Deceased (appears to be 1802 but could be 1803). Note: Frederick was the son-in law of John Bass. He was New Tag Don Floyd says he's seen "Bass Family History" that lists on page xii some familiar Bass names from North Carolina who served in the American Revolution. They are: Council, Drury, Hardy, Jethro, John, Sion and Uriah. There is no indication in the book where this information came from. in 2000.¹⁹¹

(a) Mourning¹⁰ BASS (1119). From Don Floyd:

The Floyds and their uniqueness

The Floyd family is a fascinating study, veiled at times with mystery and often muddled by elfish unpredictability. They are unique. They are rare. They are elusive. But persistent research over a span of 35 years has uncovered some amazing stories about them, who they were, and whom they married.

Still, there are gaps in the story, much like missing pieces from a jigsaw puzzle. When the puzzle is assembled to near completion, the viewer can analyze the shape and size of the missing pieces and gain additional clues to what they are by observing the scenery around them. We consider our book, *The Elusive Floyds*, a beginning. Future research will reveal more. The Floyds are elusive, but they can be found.

Their greatest talent, it seems, was the ability to marry well. This suggests that they were a handsome and strong lot and were attractive to women needing safety amid unsafe surroundings. And when we say "marry well" we are talking, for example, about an 1803 wedding in North Carolina where Mourning Bass, a descendant from the high wealth of London, married Federick Floyd, a man of humble background. Mourning's earliest Bass ancestor to make a home in Virginia was John Basse (the original French spelling) along with his Nansemond Indian wife. But Mourning's rich genealogical trail goes back further to London and to the elite of Northern France.

The Basse family were among the few Europeans to settle in Virginia about 1618 and survive the Powhatan Indian Massacre of 1622 when 347 Englishmen were slain. John had memories of London, but he soon found himself adjusting in Virginia to what circumstances required. During this ongoing lifestyle change, he married the daughter of the king of the militant Nansemond Nation

¹⁹¹Floyd, "Donald Floyd."

(called tribe today) in 1638 and chose to live with the Nansemonds, thereby enjoying the protection afforded to his Nansemond wife.

As we continue our research today we often find family historical nuggets that are nothing short of phenomenal. One such story features Nathaniel Basse, who in 1616 inherited his father's stock in *The Virginia Company*. But that stock was only a very small portion of Humfrey Basse's overall wealth. He left a will in London that is one of the longest in English history. The stock most likely brought Nathaniel to Virginia for further investment. Before it was over, however, he most likely suffered financial losses. So did *The Virginia Company* which never turned a profit, and its charter was revoked by King James I.

Beginning about 1622, Nathaniel Basse operated *Basse's Choice*, a plantation commonly called a *hundred*, south of the James River very near present-day Smithfield. He also served in the House of Burgesses in 1623 and 1629, and in the Colonial Council between 1624 and 1629 and was the chief judicial authority in the area of *Basse's Choice*. As a member of the House of Burgesses, he was instrumental in developing the model of representation for all future colonies, including Massachusetts. He also traveled, under orders of the governor, to such places as Nova Scotia, Dutch settlements and possibly the West Indies to negotiate trade deals. He was a key figure in early American history but history books have for the most part ignored him.

About 1623, after apparently coming to America from Northern Ireland and possibly having a link to southwestern Scotland, Thomas Floyd lived at *West and Sherlow Hundred* near Jamestown. Living at West and Sherlow suggests that he was an indentured servant working on the plantation. After examining the records of all Floyds of the 17th century in Virginia and surrounding areas between 1618 and 1700, we conclude that this Thomas Floyd most likely was our first ancestor in Virginia, but we have no proof. Our Floyds became centered in Isle of Wight County, Va. Family oral history says we are Irish, but it is possible that we are Scots-Irish, who lived in Northern Ireland and originally were from Scotland.

One factor that impedes Floyd research is our rarity. *The National Geographic's Genographic Project*, an ongoing five-year DNA study of the migration patterns of humans from northeastern Africa over the past 60,000 years, confirmed that our Floyds possess DNA that places us in Haplogroup G, which makes up about 3 percent of the population, and our Floyds make up a small fraction of that 3 percent. There are some Floyds from Ireland who do not share our DNA. And there is one family of Floyds that is neither Irish nor Scottish. It is Welsh. Their original name was *ap Lloyd, the gray one*, and this name evolved into *Floyd*. In our case, the Gaelic name *Tuile*, was anglicized to *Flood* while under English dominion and evolved into *Floyd or Floid* possibly because of the way Irishmen pronounced *Flood*: "flow-id."

One of the more exciting features of the Floyd story is its link with two men of kinship who put America on a course toward permanency and eventually toward national sovereignty. Nathaniel Basse was one. Another was Basse's father-in-law Samuel Jordan, who was among a handful of Englishmen involved in saving Jamestown from collapse during its darkest hour about 1610. Three months before *The Mayflower*, Samuel Jordan in June 1609 boarded *The Sea Venture* in Plymouth and set sail for the New World. The recently built state-of-the-art vessel was one of eight ships to set sail that day on a mission called *The Third Supply*, providing new settlers and provisions for a corporation called Virginia.

Six to eight weeks out, the flotilla ran into a powerful storm – assumed to be a hurricane – and was pummeled for almost 48 hours. *The Sea Venture* could not hold up during the storm because it had a major flaw. Its caulking had not been allowed to thoroughly dry before the ship's departure at Plymouth. The other seven ships survived and proceeded to Jamestown. *The Sea Venture*, meanwhile, was foundering somewhere in the unseen distance. Directly, the ship's master spotted land – the Bermudas – and ordered the ship in that direction. The ship became snared between two coral reefs – which may have been a saving factor for the passengers and crew. The ship never sank and all passengers and crew were believed to have survived. However, there were some deaths on land weeks to months after the passengers and crew went ashore.

A star in the making in the Bermudas was a possible kinsman of Samuel Jordan. He was *Sea Venture* passenger Sylvester Jourdain, who wrote an account of the storm that bore much similarity to William Shakespeare's *"The Tempest,"* but Jourdain wrote his account a good year before Shakespeare staged his play in 1611. If Shakespeare used Jourdain's material, which was published and widely available in London as early as 1610, he did not plagiarize but simply used a journalistic account as a basis for his story. He also could have drawn from at least one other account. Both Jordan and Jourdain originally were from Dorsetshire.

Samuel Jordan and the rest in the Bermudas undertook to build two small ships from *Sea Venture* salvage and from such native resources as cedar. It took 10 months or so to finish the two ships and then set sail for Jamestown in 1610. Samuel Jordan and the others apparently had lived in a healthy environment in the Bermudas. After arriving in Jamestown, they were shocked by what they

saw: blank stares, emaciated bodies, disarray, and a seeming desire to flee the misery of life. Of a one-time population of about 500, only 50 or so were left, and they were planning to set sail for England the next day. But Samuel Jordan and his associates were able to revive their spirits, provide food for the hungry and comfort the sick. Within a few days, the 50 were feeling good about staying in Virginia. It was one of the most important developments in American history. Without it, today's America most likely would not exist. Instead, Spain likely would rule. It is reported that Spain had already used spies and poison against Jamestown.

There is much more we are sharing in this book about the Floyds and related families, but above all, we are

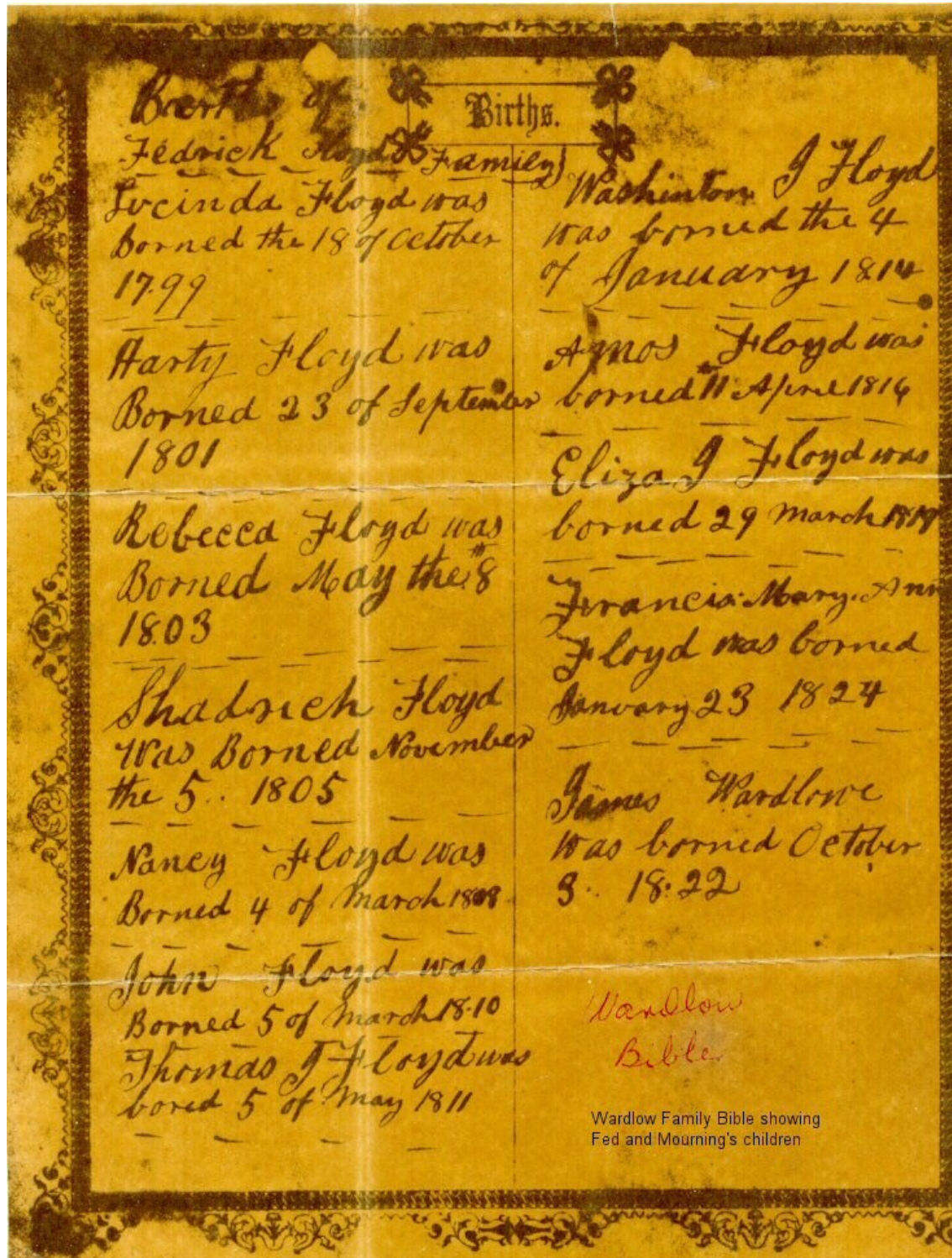
presenting a human story – a story made up of many human stories. We have, for the most part, shunned lists.

We want to bring you face to face with your ancestors so that you might see who they were and how they lived. After all, when you look in the mirror today, they are there looking back. She was born circa 1790 at NC.



She married Federick (Fed) FLOYD (1118), son of Thomas FLOYD (1084) and Ann (?) (--?--) (1085), circa 1798 at Nash, NC, Date is inferred from birthdate of Lucinda who is listed in the Fedrick Floyd Bible.¹⁹²

¹⁹²Floyd, Bible, MVW file, Margaret V. Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, Pinellas County, FL 33701.



As of circa 1800, her married name was FLOYD (1119).¹⁹³ She appeared on the census in 1830 at p.154, Pulaski County, GA (Shown as head of household with 2 males 10-15, 1 male 15-20, 1 female under 5, 2 female 5-10, 1 female 15-20, 2 female 30-40 and one female 40-50 (herself).

¹⁹³Floyd, Bible MVW file.

Her husband must be dead by now).¹⁹⁴ She appeared on the census in 1840 at Pulaski County, GA (The 1840 census shows Mourning Bass as head of household that includes the following: 1 male under 5, 3 male 20-30, 4 male 60-70, 2 female 15-20, 20 female under 5, 1 female 20-30, 1 female 30-40 and 1 female 50-60. This was quite a houseful!). She was shown on a deed on 8 Apr 1850 at Pulaski County, GA., Gift deed from Mourning Floyd to son, Washington J. Floyd, 1850. Deeds at Archives in Georgia Book L. p. 138 show transfer of land to son Washington J. Floyd. No doubt this was when she came to live with them.

The following is the text of the deed:

Georgia This indenture made this eighth day of April, in Pulaski County the year of our Lord, one thousand eight hundred and fifty, between Mourning Floyed of said county and state of the one part, and Washington J. Floyed of the same place of the other part. Witnesseth that the said Mourning Floyed, for and in consideration of the natural love and affection which she has and bears to her son, Washington J. Floyed, hath given, granted and conveyed unto the said Washington J. Floyed, and by these presents give grant and convey unto the said Washington J. Floyed, his heirs and assigns, all her interest to lots of land lying and being in the twenty first district of formerly Wilkinson, now Pulaski County, known in said district by lots thirty eight and thirty nine, containing forty acres and one half, and also my interest in one other lot owned by Fedrick Floyed in his lifetime in Early, now Decatur County, number not known district not recollected. My interest, one tenth part, to have and to hold said parcels of land unto him the said Washington J. Floyed, his heirs and assigns, together with all and singular, the rights, members, and appurtenances to the same in any manner belonging to his and their own proper use, benefit, and behoof, forever in fee simple after my decease. In testimony the said Mourning Floyed hath hereunto set her hand and affixed her seal the day and year above written. Signed, sealed, and delivered in the presence of, John Giddens & William B. Lister Entered this April 10th 1851

Apparently her son sold the land to Eli T. Mullis who occupied the property around 1880. The 1909 Cochran map shows the location of a house. She appeared on the CENSUS on 20 Aug 1850 at Pulaski County, GA (According to AFK "Mourning Bass and Washington J. Floyd lived on the Green Perry farm above Cochran. There is evidence of an old cemetery across the road from the old home which may be where they are buried. This is not documented." She lived in house # 177 with her son and his family)¹⁹⁵

¹⁹⁴U.S. Dept. of commerce, bureau of the Census, *Fifth Census of the U.S., 1830: Population Schedule*, Micropublication M19, National Archives, Washington, DC; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1830), 0021000000000 1201201. Hereinafter cited as *1830 Census*.

¹⁹⁵U.S. Department of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, *Seventh Census of the U.S., 1850: Population, Free Schedule*, Micropublication M432, National Archives, Washington, DC; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1850). Hereinafter cited as *1850 Census*.



Old tree possible location of home. E.T Mullis had home in this location circa 1900



Highway 26 toward Cochran runs through lower portion of LL 39 Land Lot 38 off picture on left.



State

Marshall

deaf and
blind, insane,
pauper, or

13

SCHEDULE I.—Free Inhabitants in

of Ga enumerated by me, on the 20

Dwelling-houses numbered in the order of visitation.	Families numbered in the order of visitation.	The Name of every Person whose usual place of abode on the first day of June, 1850, was in this family.	DESCRIPTION.			Profession, Occupa- tion, or years of age.
			Age.	Sex.	White, black, or color.	
1	2	3	4	5	6	
1		Sarah A. Giddens 19 f				
2		Eliz. Giddens 17 f				
3		John Giddens 13 m				
4		Abraham Giddens 12 m				
5		M. A. Giddens 7 f				
6		William Giddens 2 f				
7	177	W. A. Lloyd 31 m				Far
8		Susan Lloyd 21 f				
9		Monmouth Lloyd 60 f				
10		Wm. Lloyd 9 m				
11	178	W. B. Lister 60 m				Far
12		Sarah Lister 44 f				
13		Gregory Lister 19 m				Sat
14		John Lister 17 m				Sat
15		Samuel Lister 15 m				
16		A. L. Lister 13 m				
17		Ch. A. Lister 12 f				
18		D. A. Lister 11 m				
19		Ch. L. Lister 9 m				
20		Margaret Lister 8 f				
21		Isabel Lister 6 m				
22		John Lister 4 m				
23		May Lister 1 f				
24	179	Wm. A. Jones 52 f				
25		Penelope Jones 24 f				
26		Nancy A. Jones 23 f				

She died before 1860 at Pulaski County, GA.¹⁹⁶

i) Lucinda¹⁷ FLOYD (1120) was born on 18 Oct 1799. She married O. D. TUCKER (1121) on 17 Feb 1820. As of 17 Feb 1820, her married name was TUCKER (1120). She appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Houston County, GA (His farm was valued at \$4,500).¹⁹⁷ She died before 1860 at GA. I cannot find the family on the 1860 census so suspect Lucinda and O.D. were dead.

(a) Emily¹² TUCKER (2360) was born in 1825.¹⁹⁸ She died in 1826.

(b) Fredrek¹² TUCKER (4465)¹⁹⁹ was born in 1832.²⁰⁰

(c) John¹² TUCKER (4466)²⁰¹ was born in 1832 at Houston County, GA, I do not think that John and Fredrek were twins as the 1840 census shows two males in different categories. Since John is listed second on the 1850 census, I suspect he may be the younger.

ii) Harty¹⁷ FLOYD (1122)²⁰² was born on 23 Sep 1801.

iii) Rebecca¹⁷ FLOYD (1123) was born on 8 May 1803.

iv) Shadrick¹⁷ FLOYD (1124) was born on 5 Nov 1805 at N.C. He served in the military on 31 Aug 1826 at Pulaski County, GA, He appears as a 2nd Lieutenant in the 387th Dist of Pulaski GM served until July 1, 1831. He was served on jury in 1829 at Petit Jury, Pulaski County, GA. He married Esther YEARTY (1125) on 28 Nov 1829 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁰³ He appeared on the census in 1830 at Pulaski County, GA (He appears with his wife alone).²⁰⁴ He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Houston County, GA.²⁰⁵ He died before 1860 at Dooly, GA., He must be dead as wife and two younger children are living with a F.F Floyd age 23 (probably his son. The "F" middle initial might be a clue for future research).²⁰⁶

(a) Elizabeth¹² FLOYD (1662) was born on 24 Dec 1831 at Pulaski County, GA, Date taken from tombstone read by Don Floyd. Am assuming this is the same Elizabeth Floyd.²⁰⁷ She appeared on the census of 1850 at GA.²⁰⁸ She died on 27 May 1900 at Pulaski County, GA, aged 68 Date taken from tombstone. Assumption is that this is the same Elizabeth as the birth year agreed with census information.²⁰⁹

(b) Harty¹² FLOYD (2361) married James P. HERRING (3925).²¹⁰ Her married name was HERRING (2361).²¹¹ She was born in 1833.²¹²

(c) Frederick¹² FLOYD (1664) was born in 1834. He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at GA (He is living with his wife, children and mother). He married Carolyn LOGAN (3926) on 6 Jan 1858 at Dooly, GA.²¹³

(d) George Washington¹² FLOYD (1665) was born on 4 Jul 1840 at Dooly, GA.²¹⁴ He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Houston County, GA.²¹⁵ He appeared on the census in 1860 at Millwood, Dooly, GA (He is living with his mother, a brother and sister in the household of T.T or F.F Floyd age 23. This head of household could be his brother. Evidently, his father is dead).²¹⁶ He married Amanda Louise MCLEMORE (3927), daughter of Roxie MCLEMORE (3928), on 1 Aug 1886 at Dooly, GA, He married for the

¹⁹⁶ unknown subject, Margaret Ann Vollmer, Margot Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, FL 33701, 727-898-9003.
¹⁹⁷ 1850 Census.

¹⁹⁸ Doris Dixon Pedigree Chart, 1977 Doris Floyd Dixon, Rt. 2 Cochran, GA. Probably accurate.

¹⁹⁹ 1850 Census; 1850 Census; 1850 Census.

²⁰⁰ 1850 Census.

²⁰¹ 1850 Census; 1850 Census; 1850 Census.

²⁰² unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

²⁰³ Pulaski County Marriages.

²⁰⁴ 1830 Census; p. 138.

²⁰⁵ 1850 Census; HH 759 Upper 5th Dist.

²⁰⁶ U.S. Dept. of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, Eighth Census of the U.S., 1860: Population, Free Schedule, Micro-publication M653, National Archives, Washington, DC; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1860). Hereinafter cited as 1860 Census.

²⁰⁷ Floyd, "Donald Floyd;" Wiregrass Genealogy Group, Directons to Floyd Family Cemetery: Cemetery: Davis Cemetery Location: Bleckley County, GA.

Directions: From US 129 Alt and US 23 in Cochran, go southwest on US 129 Alt 4½ miles toward Hawkinsville to Julian Simpson Road (ER 1210). Turn left and go 1 mile to Ruth Coody Road (ER 1110) (Unmarked, however it is the first dirt road to the right). Turn right onto Ruth Coody Road and go ¼ mile to house with a barn on right side of road. Drive around the left side of the barn and follow the paved strip for about ¼ mile and cemetery is on the left about 100 yards..

(www.rootsweb.com/~gawgs/Cemetery/floydfamily.htm: no publisher, June 20 2000). Hereinafter cited as Floyd Cemetery.

²⁰⁸ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

²⁰⁹ Floyd, "Donald Floyd;" Wiregrass Genealogy Group, Floyd Cemetery.

²¹⁰ Rikke Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail message from unknown author e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004. Hereinafter cited as "Rikki Love."

²¹¹ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²¹² Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

²¹³ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²¹⁴ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²¹⁵ 1850 Census; HH 759 Upper 5th District - Shown living with his parents.

²¹⁶ 1860 Census; pg. 449 HH234.

second time.²¹⁷ He appeared on the census in 1900 at Dooly, GA.²¹⁸ He died on 14 Feb 1912 at Dooly, GA, aged 71.²¹⁹

i) Maud Elizabeth¹³ FLOYD (3929)²²⁰ was born on 17 Dec 1892.²²¹

ii) Hardy Estelle¹³ FLOYD (3930)²²² was born in May 1896.²²³

iii) Shadrach Calvin¹³ FLOYD (3931)²²⁴ was born on 2 Jun 1898 at Dooly, GA.²²⁵ He died on 31 Mar 1925 at GA aged 26.²²⁶

iv) Bessie Florence¹³ FLOYD (3932)²²⁷ was born on 31 Oct 1906 at Dooly, GA. She died on 7 Dec 1998 at Macon, Bibb County, GA, aged 92.²²⁸

v) Nancy¹¹ FLOYD (1126) was born on 4 Mar 1808 at North Carolina, NC. As of 1 Jan 1849, her married name was WEBB (1126).²²⁹ She married Daniel W. WEBB (1127) on 1 Jan 1849 at Pulaski County, GA.²³⁰ She appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA (She was living at the house of Pheraby Mullis)²³¹

²¹⁷ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; *U.S. Dept. of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, Tenth Census of the U.S., 1880: Population Schedule, Micro-publication T9, National Archives, Washington, DC*; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1880), Page 55 GMD 541st He is shown as age 35 and a boarder farmer widowed and living with Roxie McLemore age 28 who is married and her ten year old daughter. Hereinafter cited as *1880 Census*.

²¹⁸ *1880 Census*.

²¹⁹ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²⁰ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²¹ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²² Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²³ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²⁴ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²⁵ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²⁶ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²⁷ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²⁸ Love, "Rikki Love," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

²²⁹ Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds* (592 S. Sixth Street Griffin, Ga. 30224: Donald Floyd, June 2001), p. 37. Hereinafter cited as *The Elusive Floyds*.

²³⁰ Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*, p. 37.

²³¹ *1850 Census*.

18.

SCHEDULE I.—Free Inhabitants in

of La enumerated by me, on the 19 d

Dwelling-house numbered in the order of visitation.	Families numbered in the order of visitation.	The Name of every Person whose usual place of abode on the first day of June, 1850, was in this family.	DESCRIPTION.			Profession, Occupation of each Male Person, and years of age.
			Age.	Sex.	Color, (White, black, or mulatto.)	
1	2	3	4	5	6	7
138	138	Sam Webb	51 m			Far
		Nancy Webb	40 f			
		William Webb	10 m			
		Kinchew Webb	12 m			
139	139	Sam Walden	54 m			Far
		Frances Walden	43 f			
		Green Walden	24 m			Lab
		Vincent Walden	16 m			Lab
140	140	Premiah Torchand	55 m			Far
		Lettie Torchand	48 f			
		Melissa Torchand	28 f			
		J. S. Torchand	12 m			
		Edmy Torchand	14 f			
		C. S. Torchand	10 f			
		Samuel Torchand	8 m			
141	141	Linfield Torchand	23 m			Far
		M. S. Torchand	21 f			
142	142	Sam. Walden Jr	18 m			Far
		J. Walden	17 f			
		Francis Walden	14 f			
		Amanda Walden	11 f			
143	143	Coleman Grinstead	60 f			
		W. R. Grinstead	37 m			Far
		George Grinstead	28 m			Mar
		Frances Abantins	13 f			
144	144	W. Crust	28 m			Mar
		E. Crust				

She appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA (The 1860 Slave Schedule shows Daniel Webb owning seven slaves: a woman, 38; a man, 20; a man, 18; a boy, 12; a girl, 10; a girl, 8; and a boy, 2. He lived just two houses from Washington J. Floyd).²³² She died after 1870 at Carey, GA.²³³ He witnessed CENSUS 1870 in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA (Living in household with James E. Floyd and wife Mary Scarborough).²³⁴

(a) James Everett (son of Nancy)¹² FLOYD (1658) was born illegitimate in 1840 at Pulaski County, GA (Daniel Webb was not the father of Everett Floyd, as far as I know. No one knows who Everett Floyd's father was, or if they do know, they are not telling. I suspect some of those folks (the Dykes family) in Cary know but are continuing to keep a lid on it. In 1850, nine-year-old Everett Floyd was living in the house with Washington J. Floyd, his wife Susan Lister Floyd and mother Mourning Bass Floyd somewhere out there on the Ouchee Trail about five miles from Cochran. This was after Everett's mother, Nancy, married Daniel Webb. Everett does not appear on the bastard list in Pulaski County, but that does not mean he was not illegitimate. Unmarried Nancy Floyd give birth to Everett about 1840. She later married Daniel Webb. Someone connected with genealogy once told me that having at least one illegitimate child was common in those days for unmarried women. It was called an early form of social security. And Nancy's plan worked perfectly. When she became aged she lived with son Everett and his wife Mary Scarborough Floyd. This story could make a good book). He was born in 1840.²³⁵ He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA (He was living in the house with his grandmother and uncle. His mother was living in another household with husband and what appear to be his children)²³⁶

²³²Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*, p. 38.

²³³*U.S. Dept. of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, Ninth Census of the U.S., 1870: Population Schedule, Micropublication M 593, National Archives, Washington, DC; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1870),* She appears on the census living with her son James Everett Floyd. Hereinafter cited as *1870 Census*.

²³⁴*1870 Census*.

²³⁵unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; *1880 Census*.

²³⁶unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

State

Marshal

SCHEDULE I.—Free Inhabitants in

of Ga enumerated by me, on the 26 daydeaf and
blind, insane,
pauper, or

Dwelling-houses numbered in the order of visitation.	Families numbered in the order of visitation.	The Name of every Person whose usual place of abode on the first day of June, 1850, was in this family.	Description.			Profession, Occupation, of each Male Person years of age.
			Age.	Sex.	Color. (White, black, or mulatto.)	

13

1	2	3	4	5	6	7
---	---	---	---	---	---	---

1		Sarah A. Lissens	19	f		
2		Eliq. Lissens	17	f		
3		John Lissens	13	m		
4		Abraham Lissens	12	m		
5		W. A. Lissens	7	f		
6		William Lissens	2	f		
7	177	W. A. Lissens	31	m		Far
8		Susan Lissens	21	f		
9		William Lissens	60	f		
10		W. A. Lissens	9	m		
11	178	W. B. Lister	60	m		Far
12		Sarah Lister	44	f		
13		Gregory Lister	19	m		Sat
14		John Lister	17	m		Sat
15		Samuel Lister	15	m		
16		A. L. Lister	13	m		
17		Ch. A. Lister	12	f		
18		D. A. Lister	11	m		
19		Ch. L. Lister	9	m		
20		Margaret Lister	8	f		
21		Isabel Lister	6	m		
22		Isabel Lister	4	m		
23		Man. Lister	1	f		
24	179	Man. A. Lissens	52	f		
25		Penelope Lissens	24	f		
26		Nancy A. Lissens	23	f		
27	180	Edith E. Lissens	9	f		
28	181	L. L. Lissens	25	m		Sat
29		Eliq. Lissens	23	f		
30		George Lissens	4	m		
31		Man. Lissens	1	f		

He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. He served in the military in 1861 Floyd, James Everett----- private May 16, 1861. Severely wounded at 1st Manassas, Va. July 21, 1861. Captured at Deep Bottom, Va. August 16, 1864. Exchanged at Point Lookout, Md. March 14, 1865. He worked as a mechanic on the Scarborough farm prior to the Civil War and after being wounded while serving with the Confederate Army he returned to the farm and persuaded Mary Scarborough to marry him. He and Mary settled near the old homeplace in the area of modern-day Cary. He married Mary M. SCARBOROUGH (1659), daughter of Adon (Adam) SCARBOROUGH (2408) and Elaphair LEE (2409), on 18 Sep 1862. He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA (Nancy Webb living with family). He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (Census Place: Cochran And Walkers, Pulaski, Georgia

Source: FHL Film 1254162 National Archives Film T9-0162 Page 383A

Relation	Sex	Marr	Race	Age	Birthplace
James FLOYD	Self	M	M	W	40 GA
Occ:	Farmer	Fa: GA	Mo: GA		
Mary FLOYD	Wife	F	M	W	55 GA
Occ:	Keeps House	Fa: GA	Mo: GA		
Jessie FLOYD	Dau	F		W	14 GA
Occ:	Student	Fa: GA	Mo: GA		
Nancy FLOYD	Dau	F	S	W	12 GA
Occ:	Student	Fa: GA	Mo: GA		

(NOTE THAT THIS IS THE ONLY NANCY IN THE 1880. IN 1870 A NANCY E WAS LIVING WITH THE DUPLICATE SHADRICK FAMILY. ITS A MYSTERY.)). He appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA (Vol. 57 sheet 1 G.M. Frazier Dist).

i) Jesse A.¹³ FLOYD (1660) was born in 1866. She appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.²³⁷ She married Hugh ARMSTRONG (2410) on 9 May 1889 at Pulaski County, GA.²³⁸ As of 9 May 1889, her married name was ARMSTRONG (1660).²³⁹

(a) Ruby¹⁴ ARMSTRONG (2411) married /Dykes/ (--?) (2412).

i) Everett¹⁵ DYKES (2413)²⁴⁰ is still living.

ii) Nancy E.¹³ FLOYD (1661) was born in Jul 1868. She appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁴¹ She appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (In 1880 she is shown with the Everette Floyd family and apparently named for her grandmother. However, in the 1870 census she is shown as daughter of Shadrack Floyd. This is a mystery).²⁴² She appeared on the census of 1900 at Pulaski County, GA (She is single and living with her parents).

(b) William¹² WEBB (1656) was born after 1849. He appeared on the census of 1850 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁴³ He appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA.

(c) Kinchen¹² WEBB (1657) was born circa 1850 at Pulaski County, Ga, Here is the Kinchen name again.

vi) John¹¹ FLOYD (1128) was born on 5 Mar 1810 at North Carolina, NC.

vii) Thomas Jefferson¹¹ FLOYD (1129) was born on 5 May 1811 at Pulaski County, GA. He served in the military on 10 Mar 1836 at Pulaski County, GA, Shown as 2nd Lieutenant in 387th Dist G.M. He married Elizabeth (Lizzie) ROWLAND (1130), daughter of Rebecca (--?) (4210), say 1850. He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁴⁴ He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA (Living in house # 678 with wife Elizabeth age 30 (2nd wife?)).²⁴⁵ He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁴⁶ He died on 16 Mar 1886 at Pulaski County, GA, aged 74. He was buried in 1886 at Pulaski County, GA, Buried at brick church on Ouchee Road in Cochran.

(a) James¹² FLOYD (1507) married Matilda (--?) (4209).²⁴⁷ He was born in 1854. He appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁴⁸ He appeared on the census of

²³⁷ 1880 Census; Living with her parents.

²³⁸ Virginia Speer Harris, *History of Pulaski and Bleckley Counties, Ga. 1808-1956*, (J.W. Burke Co., Macon, Georgia), Georgia State Archives and MVW library, Volumes 1 & 2.

²³⁹ Harris, *History of Pulaski County*.

²⁴⁰ news story, *Macon Telegraph*, macon, GA (July 20, 1975).

; The house is one in which members of the Dykes family have lived since it was built in 1840 by Aden Scarborough. In 1975 it is used as a pool house by the current Dykes family who had it moved to 1975 location near Carey.

²⁴¹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

²⁴² 1880 Census.

²⁴³ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

²⁴⁴ 1850 Census.

²⁴⁵ 1860 Census.

²⁴⁶ 1870 Census.

²⁴⁷ 1880 Census.

²⁴⁸ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

1870 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁴⁹ He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, Ga.²⁵⁰

(b) Franklin¹² FLOYD (1510) was born in 1855. He died say 1870.

(c) Federick¹² FLOYD (1508) was born in Aug 1856 at GA.²⁵¹ He appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁵² He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁵³ He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, Ga (He was a bachelor living with his brother Frand, his parents and his grandmother).²⁵⁴ He married Leeanna (--?--) (3657) in 1890.²⁵⁵ He appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁵⁶ He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.²⁵⁷ He appeared on the census in 1930 (He is shown living with his son T. J and family).²⁵⁸

i) Thomas J.¹³ FLOYD (3658)²⁵⁹ was born in Oct 1892.²⁶⁰ He married Effie (--?--) (3677) in 1909.²⁶¹

(a) Lucile¹⁴ FLOYD (3678)²⁶² is still living.

(b) Herman¹⁴ FLOYD (3679)²⁶³ is still living.

(c) Nellie M.¹⁴ FLOYD (3680)²⁶⁴ is still living.

(d) Thomas J¹⁴ FLOYD Jr. (3681)²⁶⁵ is still living.

(e) Alma¹⁴ FLOYD (5179)²⁶⁶ is still living.

(f) Avas¹⁴ FLOYD (5180)²⁶⁷ is still living.

(g) Willis M.¹⁴ FLOYD (5181)²⁶⁸ is still living.

(h) Eunice N.¹⁴ FLOYD (5183)²⁶⁹ is still living.

(i) Jewel¹⁴ FLOYD (5182)²⁷⁰ is still living.

ii) Rufus¹³ FLOYD (3659)²⁷¹ was born in Oct 1893 at GA.²⁷²

(d) Franklin¹² FLOYD (1509) was born in 1859. He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁷³ He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁷⁴ He appeared on the Census in 1880.²⁷⁵ He married Josephine (--?--) (3660) after 1880.²⁷⁶ He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.²⁷⁷

i) Willie¹³ FLOYD (3662)²⁷⁸ is still living.

ii) Nicie¹³ FLOYD (3661)²⁷⁹ was born in 1901.²⁸⁰

viii) Washington J.¹¹ FLOYD (1131) was born on 10 Feb 1814 at Pulaski County, GA, Another source says Jan 4 1814. He married Susan LISTER (1132) on 27 Sep 1849 at Pulaski County, GA. He was shown on a deed in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA., Deeds at Archives in Georgia Book L. p. 138 show transfer of land to son Washington J.Floyd from Mourning Floyd. No doubt

²⁴⁹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

²⁵⁰ 1880 Census; He is shown living with young wife next door to two brothers. His parents live with his two brothers.

²⁵¹ U.S. Dept of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, Twelfth Census of the U.S., 1900: Population Schedule, Micro-publication T623, National Archives, Washington, DC; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1900), E.D. 37 P 12 B. Hereinafter cited as 1900 Census.

²⁵² unknown subject unknown repository.

²⁵³ unknown subject unknown repository.

²⁵⁴ 1880 Census.

²⁵⁵ 1900 Census.

²⁵⁶ 1900 Census; Living in Trippville district as shown on page 24 of Ancestry.com on line census.

²⁵⁷ U.S. Dept. of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, Fourteenth Census of the U.S., 1920: population Schedule, Micro-publication T-625, National Archives, Washington, DC; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1920), Living in the home of his son Thomas J. Hereinafter cited as 1920 Census.

²⁵⁸ U.S. Dept. of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, Fifteenth Census of the U.S., 1930: Population Schedule, Micro-publication T-626, National Archives, Washington, D; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1930). Hereinafter cited as 1930 Census.

²⁵⁹ 1900 Census; 1900 Census; 1900 Census.

²⁶⁰ 1900 Census.

²⁶¹ 1920 Census; 1930 Census.

²⁶² 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

²⁶³ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

²⁶⁴ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

²⁶⁵ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

²⁶⁶ 1930 Census; 1930 Census; 1930 Census.

²⁶⁷ 1930 Census; 1930 Census; 1930 Census.

²⁶⁸ 1930 Census; 1930 Census; 1930 Census.

²⁶⁹ 1930 Census; 1930 Census; 1930 Census.

²⁷⁰ 1930 Census; 1930 Census; 1930 Census.

²⁷¹ 1900 Census; 1900 Census; 1900 Census.

²⁷² 1900 Census.

²⁷³ unknown subject unknown repository.

²⁷⁴ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

²⁷⁵ 1880 Census.

²⁷⁶ 1920 Census; 1880 Census; He was a bachelor living with his parents, brother and grandmother.

²⁷⁷ 1920 Census.

²⁷⁸ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

²⁷⁹ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

²⁸⁰ 1920 Census.

this was when she came to live with them. He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 (Shown living in house # 177 with wife Susan and mother Mourning age 60. Also, there is a James age 9).²⁸¹ He purchased land in 1854 at Pulaski County, GA., Book L page 480 W. J. Floyd sold lot 39 on northwest side of Public Road to Daniel W. Webb. This was the lot across the Uchee Rd. from the Floyd homestead site.

²⁸¹ 1850 Census.

North
This is half
of Red Floyd
Place

1854
Lot 39
W. J. Floyd
to
Daniel
Webb

Uchee
Rd

Lot 39 NW side of Public Rd
Book 2 P. 480
1854
W. J. Floyd to Daniel
Webb

He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA (House #636). He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA (Living in house # 566).²⁸² He appeared on the Census on 11 Jun 1880 at Dodge County, GA (He is living with wife and the following children: Daniel W. 21, Charles F. 19, James E. 16, Andrew 14, Mary 12 and Jesse 8).²⁸³ He was buried in 1885 at Chester, Dodge County, GA, He is buried along with his wife in Rozar Cemetery located adjacent to Bethel Baptist Church on Roddy. Rd. Note from Jerry Floyd sent e-mail states: To avoid confusion for the casual observer at the gravesite, I must make some comment concerning these graves. There are two headstones for Washington J. Floyd standing side by side. One of the stones represents his name as, "Geo. W. Floyd." The other stone says, "G. W. Floyde." The birth and death dates are nearly accurate and agreeable between them with only slight difference of days. Because there is no one alive today with first-hand knowledge, we can only theorize why his name is not shown as it should have been, "Washington J. Floyd." Those of us who have studied this, believe that he was commonly known by his contemporaries as, George Washington Floyd and thus, this is what was put on the headstone. Susan Lister Floyd is buried beside her husband. Her stone says: "Surie J. Floyd." She was born about 1834 according to the Fed. Census. She died June 8, 1909 according to the obituary from, Dodge County Newspaper Clippings by Tad Evans of Savannah. All of their children except two, are also buried there at Rozar Cem. The eldest child, Lucinda Harriett Floyd Wade, is buried at Cotton Ridge just down the road from Cary in Bleckley Co. This is a small cemetery in the edge of a field within a stone's throw of the Cotton Ridge housing development. The eighth child (from a total of ten) Seaborn Andrew Floyd is buried at Fishing Creek Baptist Church Cemetery in Telfair Co. Ga. This is a rural cemetery near Lumber City.²⁸⁴ He died on 15 Sep 1885 at Dodge County, GA, aged 71.

(a) Lucinda Harriett¹² FLOYD (1637). Her married name was WADE (1637).²⁸⁵ She married Jesse Aden WADE (3173), son of Willis H. WADE (4237).²⁸⁶ She was born on 25 Dec 1850 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁸⁷ She appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA. She was buried in Jun 1894 at Bleckley County, GA, She is buried at Cotton Ridge just down the road from Cary in Bleckley County. It is a small cemetery in the edge of a field very close to Cotton Ridge housing development.²⁸⁸



Wade Cemetery located in the edge of a field adjacent to Cotton Ridge Housing Subdivision near Cary, Bleckley Co., Ga. Photo Nov. 1998.

²⁸² 1870 Census.

²⁸³ 1880 Census.

²⁸⁴ Jerry Floyd, "Jerry Floyd correspondence," e-mail message from slosheye@bellsouth.net to MVW, June 2001. Hereinafter cited as "Jerry Floyd."

²⁸⁵ Jerry Floyd, "Jerry Floyd," e-mail to MVW, June 2001.

²⁸⁶ Jerry Floyd, "Jerry Floyd," e-mail to MVW, June 2001.

²⁸⁷ Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*, p. 133.

²⁸⁸ Jerry Floyd, "Jerry Floyd," e-mail to MVW, June 2001.



Photo Nov. 1998. This is the headstone and grave of Lucinda Harriett (Floyd) Wade. She was the wife of Jesse Aden Wade and the eldest child of Washington J. and Susan Lister Floyd. This is Wade Cemetery located in the edge of a field adjacent to Cotton Ridge Housing Subdivision near Cary, Bleckley Co. Ga.



Photo Nov. 1998. This is the Wade Cemetery in Bleckley Co. Ga. It is located in the edge of a field adjacent to Cotton Ridge Housing Subdivision near Cary. The subdivision is seen in the background around the water prior to housing construction.

She died on 13 Jun 1894 at Pulaski County, GA, aged 43 Margot, sorry I should have put the dates in the caption below the picture but didn't realize it is kinda' hard to make out. Lucinda Harriett Floyd Wade: b. Dec. 25, 1850, d. June 13, 1894. Her husband was Jesse Aden Wade Sr. b. Jan. 1850, d. Oct. 1924. He was buried in the Cary Cemetery (Mt. Calvary Bapt. Church), Cary, Bleckley Co. He remarried after Hattie died and that's apparently why he wound up in the Cary Cemetery with his second wife. Others in the Wade Cemetery at Cotton Ridge are Willis H. Wade b. Jan. 21, 1814, d. Aug.(?) 24, 1887 and his wife Rachel C. Scarborough b. Dec. 17, 1821, d. Mar. 24, 1892. They are the parents of Jesse A. Wade Sr. and have no connection with us except as Hattie's inlaws, as far as I know.²⁸⁹

²⁸⁹Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

(b) Elizabeth A. (Betsy)¹² FLOYD (1638)



was born in 1854 at GA. She appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA. She married Solomon BARLOW (1639) on 4 Jul 1872. As of 4 Jul 1872, her married name was BARLOW (1638).

(c) Martha J.¹² FLOYD (1640) was born in 1856 at GA. She appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.

(d) Nancy A.¹² FLOYD (1641) was born in 1858 at GA. She appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.

(e) Daniel Webster¹² FLOYD (1463)



Daniel Webster Floyd, b. 2/23/1859, Pulaski Co. Ga., d. 7/6/1918, Dodge Co. Ga., fifth child and eldest son of Washington J. Floyd and Susan Lister. Buried Rozar Cemetery at Bethel Bapt. Church, Roddy Rd. near Chester, Dodge Co. Ga. The baby is said to be Doyle Floyd, a grandson.

married Hattie J. (--?) (1464). He was born in Feb 1859 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census in 1900 at Dodge County, GA. He was buried in Jul 1918 at Rozar Cemetery, Chester, Dodge County, GA.²⁹⁰ He died on 6 Jul 1918 at Dodge County, GA, aged 59.

²⁹⁰ Jerry Floyd, "Jerry Floyd," e-mail to MVW, June 2001.

- i) John G.¹³ FLOYD (1465) was born in Feb 1883.
- ii) Whiddon B.¹³ FLOYD (1466) was born in Jan 1888.
- iii) Nichelos¹³ FLOYD (1467) was born in Apr 1890.
- iv) Eddie¹³ FLOYD (1470) was born in Mar 1893.
- v) Herman¹³ FLOYD (1468) was born in Sep 1893.
- vi) Effie Lee¹³ FLOYD (1469) was born in May 1896.
- (f) Charles F.¹² FLOYD (1454) married Martha (---) (1455). He was born in Jan 1862 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census of 1900 at Dodge County, GA.
 - i) Claton S.¹³ FLOYD (1456) was born in Mar 1887.
 - ii) Mary J.¹³ FLOYD (1457) was born in Sep 1889.
 - iii) James¹³ FLOYD (1458) was born in Jan 1892.
 - iv) Susan¹³ FLOYD (1459) was born in May 1894.
 - v) Cicero¹³ FLOYD (1460) was born in Apr 1896.
 - vi) Burtie¹³ FLOYD (1461) was born in Jun 1897.
 - vii) Dade H.¹³ FLOYD (1462) was born in Jul 1899.

(g) John James Everette¹² FLOYD (1635) (He is Jerry Floyd's ancestor)



JOHN JAMES EVERETT FLOYD

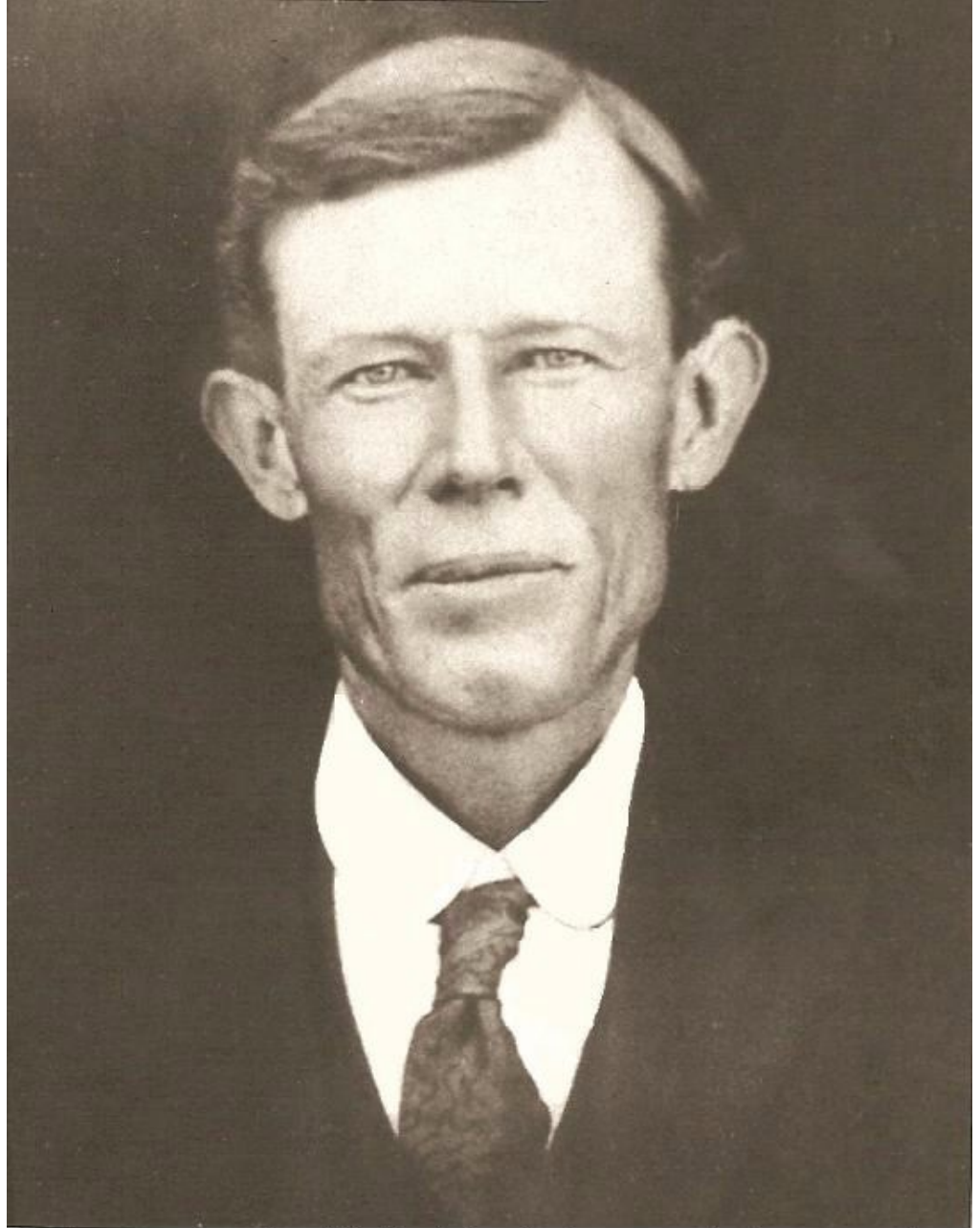
married Mary E. (--?--) (1636). He was born on 29 Nov 1863 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁹¹ He appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census of 1900 at Dodge County, GA. He died on 16 Mar 1934 aged 70.²⁹²

- i) Frank D.¹³ FLOYD (1655)
- ii) James H.¹³ FLOYD (1650) was born in Jul 1878.
- iii) Walter R.¹³ FLOYD (1651) was born in Nov 1880.
- iv) Emory S.¹³ FLOYD (1652) was born in Jun 1887.
- v) Charles G.¹³ FLOYD (1653) was born in Dec 1890.
- vi) Mable E.¹³ FLOYD (1654) was born in May 1896.

²⁹¹Jerry Floyd, "Jerry Floyd," e-mail to MVW, June 2001.

²⁹²Jerry Floyd, "Jerry Floyd," e-mail to MVW, June 2001.

(h) Seaborn Andrew¹² FLOYD (1633)²⁹³



Seaborn Andrew "Seab" Floyd, b. 3/11/1866, Pulaski Co. Ga., d. Wheeler Co. Ga. 9/10/1929, eighth of ten children born to Washington J. Floyd and wife Susan Lister. Uncle Seab is buried at Fishing Creek Bapt. Church Cemetery, Telfair Co. Ga., near Lumber City.

married Mary Lou SANDIFORD (1634). He was born on 11 Mar 1866 at Pulaski County, Ga. He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.²⁹⁴ As of 1880, he was also known as Andrew S. FLOYD (1633) He later changed his name to Seaborn A. Floyd according to Don Floyd. He appeared on the Census in 1880.²⁹⁵ He appeared on the

²⁹³ Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail message from Betty [MUMMYFOUR@msn.com] (unknown address) to MVW, Feb 2004.

²⁹⁴ 1870 Census, House # 566.

²⁹⁵ 1880 Census, shown on this census as Andrew S.

census in 1900 at Dodge County, GA.²⁹⁶ He was buried in Sep 1929 at Telfair, GA. He is buried at Fishing Creek Baptist Church Cenetery. It is a rural cemetery near Lumber City.²⁹⁷ He died on 10 Sep 1929 at Wheeler, GA, aged 63.

i) Jessie Clarence¹³ FLOYD (3019)²⁹⁸ was born on 16 Aug 1892 at Dodge County, GA.²⁹⁹ He married Mary Elizabeth DAVIS (2369), daughter of William Henry DAVIS (2996) and Mary Ann E. FLOYD (1405), on 7 Sep 1913 at Dodge County, GA. Husband and wife were first cousins according to Don Floyd.³⁰⁰



He was buried in 1980 at Hazlehurst Cemetery. He died on 22 Dec 1980 at Hazlehurst, Jeff Davis, GA, aged 88.³⁰¹

(a) William Evert¹⁴ FLOYD (3151) was born on 3 Dec 1915. He died on 26 Nov 1917 at Telfair, GA, aged 1 Buried at Fishing Creek Cemetery.³⁰²

(b) Roscoe Maurice¹⁴ FLOYD (3020)³⁰³ was born on 11 Sep 1917. He witnessed the burial of Mary Ann E. FLOYD (1405) on 17 Mar 1938 at Floyd Family Cemetery,

²⁹⁶ 1900 Census.

²⁹⁷ Jerry Floyd, "Jerry Floyd," e-mail to MVW, June 2001.

²⁹⁸ Letter from Doris Dixon (Rt. 2 Bx 468 Cochran, GA 31014) to MVW, Feb 29 2000; MVW file (Margaret V. Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, Pinellas County, FL 33701). A handwritten note from Doris says: I have not been able to determine who the father of Zachariah and Zenos is. The legend is they were a large family in North Carolina. These two boys were bound out to Quakers for their keep. They became very unhappy and ran away - making their way to Pulaski County and some surrounding counties. When asked who their father was, they replied "As far as we are concerned we don't have one." As you can see, they certainly are not twins (check birthdates); Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

²⁹⁹ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³⁰⁰ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³⁰¹ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³⁰² Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³⁰³ Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

Bleckley County, GA. He married Essie Mae HAMM (3021) on 10 Aug 1940.³⁰⁴ He died on 14 Nov 1998 aged 81.

(c) Andrew Willard¹⁴ FLOYD (3022)³⁰⁵ is still living.

i) Don¹⁵ FLOYD (3153)³⁰⁶ is still living.

(d) Clarence Robert¹⁴ FLOYD (3024)³⁰⁷ was born on 6 Sep 1922.³⁰⁸ He died on 22 Jun 1944 at France aged 21 Sergeant in the US Army and was killed in WWII at the "Normandy Landing."³⁰⁹

(e) Mavis Christine¹⁴ FLOYD (3025)³¹⁰ is still living.

i) Jean¹⁵ FAULK (3154)³¹¹ is still living.

ii) Jerry Robert¹⁵ FAULK (3157)³¹² is still living.

iii) James Gregory¹⁵ FAULK (3159) is still living.

(f) Oris Franklin¹⁴ FLOYD (3027) was born on 23 Apr 1931.³¹³ He married Betty HENRY (3874), daughter of Robert Eddy HENRY (3875) and Leah Rena DAY (3876), on 23 May 1953.³¹⁴ He married Yoshi IKEZAKI (3162) on 16 Jun 1964.³¹⁵ He died on 7 Jul 1999 aged 68.³¹⁶

i) Robert Franklin¹⁵ FLOYD (3873)³¹⁷ is still living.

(g) Jack Charles¹⁴ FLOYD (3028)³¹⁸ is still living.

i) Angie¹⁵ FLOYD (3163)³¹⁹ is still living.

ii) Dee Dee¹⁵ FLOYD (3164) is still living.

ii) Ollie¹³ FLOYD Sr. (1644) was born on 8 May 1894.³²⁰ He married Mamie Lee VARNADOE (3144) on 26 Aug 1923 at Telfair, GA.³²¹

(a) Harry¹⁴ FLOYD (3145)³²² is still living.

(b) Ollie B.¹⁴ FLOYD Jr. (3146)³²³ was born on 14 Mar 1932.³²⁴ He died on 14 May 1976 aged 44.³²⁵

(c) Harold D.¹⁴ FLOYD (3147)³²⁶ is still living.

(d) Betty¹⁴ FLOYD (3148)³²⁷ is still living.

(e) Edward A.¹⁴ FLOYD (3149)³²⁸ is still living.

(f) Marilyn¹⁴ FLOYD (3150)³²⁹ is still living.

iii) Ellis¹³ FLOYD (1645) was born in May 1896.

iv) Truman¹³ FLOYD (1646) was born in Sep 1898.

(i) Mary¹² FLOYD (1642) was born in 1868 at GA.³³⁰ She appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.

(j) Jesse T¹² FLOYD (3343)³³¹ was born in 1872 at GA.³³² He married Mae BELL (3911) circa 1905.³³³ He appeared on the census in 1910 at Dodge County, GA.³³⁴

³⁰⁴Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³⁰⁵Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

³⁰⁶Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³⁰⁷Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

³⁰⁸Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³⁰⁹Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³¹⁰Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

³¹¹Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³¹²Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³¹³Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³¹⁴Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³¹⁵Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³¹⁶Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*, Don gave death year as 2000; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³¹⁷Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

³¹⁸Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

³¹⁹Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²⁰Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²¹Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²²Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²³Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²⁴Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²⁵Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²⁶Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²⁷Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²⁸Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³²⁹Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*; Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

³³⁰1880 Census.

³³¹1880 Census; 1880 Census; 1880 Census.

³³²1880 Census.

³³³Tammy Floyd Moore, "Tammy Floyd Moore," e-mail message from unknown author e-mail (102 Lavender Lane Leesburg, GA 31763) to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004. Hereinafter cited as "Tammy."

³³⁴U.S. Dept of Commerce, Bureau of the Census, *Thirteenth Census of the U.S., 1910: Population Schedule, Micro-publication T624, National Archives, Washington, DC*; (Washington, D.C.: National Archives, 1910). Hereinafter cited as *1910 Census*.

- i) Willie W¹³ FLOYD (3912)³³⁵ was born in 1894.³³⁶
- ii) Marry E¹³ FLOYD (3913)³³⁷ was born in 1896.³³⁸
- iii) Harris H¹³ FLOYD (3914)³³⁹ was born in 1898.³⁴⁰
- iv) Nell¹³ FLOYD (3915)³⁴¹ was born in 1906 at Dodge County, GA.³⁴²
- v) Dorris Carroll¹³ FLOYD (3916)³⁴³ married Myrtle Ethal COLEMAN (3917).³⁴⁴ He was born on 31 Jan 1908 at Dodge County, GA.³⁴⁵
 - (a) Ronald Thomas¹⁴ FLOYD (3920)³⁴⁶ died in Aug 1977.³⁴⁷
 - (b) Billy¹⁴ FLOYD (3918)³⁴⁸ is still living.
 - (c) Gary Garrell¹⁴ FLOYD (3919)³⁴⁹ is still living.
 - i) Tamyra Garine¹⁵ FLOYD (3922)³⁵⁰ is still living.
 - ii) Gary Garrell¹⁵ FLOYD Jr. (3923)³⁵¹ is still living.
 - iii) Ronald Stephen¹⁵ FLOYD (3924)³⁵² was born on 25 Nov 1959.³⁵³ He died on 2 Dec 1991 aged 32.³⁵⁴

ix) Amos Kinchen¹⁷ FLOYD (1133) (I've always been curious about the middle name. It's an old one so there must be a reason it was kept. Here is a timeline I found:
Searching for Kinchen family in Washington County GA.

Kinchen Family Movement:
1640 Crediton, Devon, England
1681 Isle of Wight Virginia
1737 Edgecombe County North Carolina
1781 Washington County Georgia
1817 Laurens County Georgia
1880's Early County Georgia
1880's Thomas County Georgia And
1880' Miller County Georgia

Thanks,
Al Barrs

albarrs@wfeca.net).³⁵⁵ At about the time that Amos Kinchen Floyd was born his father, Fed acquired 202.5 acres of land in Pulaski County, Georgia and then two years later he successfully drew for a land lot in Early County. (The Early County land was mentioned by Mourning Floyd when she later conveyed this original land to her son Washington J. Floyd.) Until 1977 all of the Floyds in Pulaski County, Georgia thought they descended from this man, the pioneer named Amos Kinchen Floyd who came from North Carolina. It was not until finding of the Wardlaw family Bible maintained by Francis Mary Ann Floyd Wardlaw that evidence emerged to prove the story to be only half true. It is true that many of the present-day Floyds in Middle Georgia are descended from the original pioneers from North Carolina, but those pioneers are Fed and Mourning Floyd, not their son Amos Kinchen Floyd.

Amos Kinchen was born in Pulaski County and it is likely he never saw North Carolina. In 1841 Amos Kinchen married Anna Luttia Mc Daniel and over a period of the next twenty years the

³³⁵ 1910 Census; 1910 Census.

³³⁶ 1910 Census.

³³⁷ 1910 Census; 1910 Census.

³³⁸ 1910 Census.

³³⁹ 1910 Census; 1910 Census.

³⁴⁰ 1910 Census.

³⁴¹ 1910 Census; 1910 Census; 1910 Census.

³⁴² 1910 Census.

³⁴³ 1910 Census; 1910 Census; 1910 Census.

³⁴⁴ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁴⁵ 1910 Census; Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁴⁶ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore,

"Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁴⁷ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁴⁸ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore,

"Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁴⁹ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore,

"Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁵⁰ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore,

"Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁵¹ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore,

"Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁵² Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004; Moore,

"Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁵³ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁵⁴ Moore, "Tammy," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

³⁵⁵ Harris, *History of Pulaski County*.

couple produced nine children, seven boys and two girls. The children were: Frederick, named for his grandfather; Arch; Shadrach, named for his granduncle; Harriett; Amos, Jr.; John J.; George W. named for his uncle Washington; Mary Ann named for her aunt, Francis Mary Ann, and James Everette. Most of the Floyds living in the area in the later part of the 20th century can trace their ancestry to these children of Amos Kinchen Floyd. Amos and Anna Floyd were parents living in the very disruptive time of the Civil War. Three of their boys, Frederick, Arch, and Shadrach served in the Confederate Army. All suffered as a result of the war and none would ever own much land. Unfortunately, there are no records of their thoughts and feelings about this traumatic time. They survived the war physically, but what must it have done to them emotionally? We know no more than the official record describes, but from it we can start to imagine how difficult life was. The record states that all three Floyd brothers received indigent pension for their war wounds and service. The miracle is that they survived and produced us, and that many still live in Georgia and thrive as a result of their efforts. War hit the family hard, but it did not stop forward progress. He was born on 11 Apr 1816 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁵⁶ He married Anna Luttia MC DANIEL (1134) on 4 Apr 1841 at Pulaski County, GA, Date from "More Georgia Marriages." He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA (he is shown at house # 133 living with wife and five children. His next door neighbor is Francis Mary Ann Wardlow (his youngest sister) who is the person responsible for preserving family data in her bible)³⁵⁷

³⁵⁶Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Tombstone lists date of birth but only year of death.

³⁵⁷1850 Census.

State SCHEDULE I.—Free Inhabitants in

Ass't Marah

enumerated by me, on the

Whether deaf and dumb, blind, insane, idiotic, pauper, or convict.

Whether married in the order of visitation.

Families numbered in the order of visitation.

The Name of every Person whose usual place of abode on the first day of June, 1850, was in this family.

DESCRIPTION.

Age Sex Color White, black or mulatto.

Profession, Occupation of each Male years of age.

13

1

2

3

4

5

6

A. L. E. Lee

9 f

E. A. Lee

7 f

Thos. P. Lee

5 m

E. W. Lee

3 m

130 130 Jacob Dykes

55 m

Far

Catharine Dykes

40 f

Gabriel Dykes

17 m

Lab

Nancy Dykes

14 f

131 131 Faithy Dykes

40 f

Cherry Dykes

8 m

Catharine Dykes

1 f

132 132 Mrs. Wardlaw

24 m

Far

Wm. A. Wardlaw

23 f

133 133 Amos E. Lloyd

28 m

Far

Anna Lloyd

25 f

Frederick Lloyd

7 m

Arch Lloyd

6 m

Shadrach Lloyd

4 m

Ed. B. Lloyd

2 f

Amos Lloyd Jr

12 m

134 134 John Jones

49 m

Far

Ellen Jones

30 f

Ch Jones

14 f

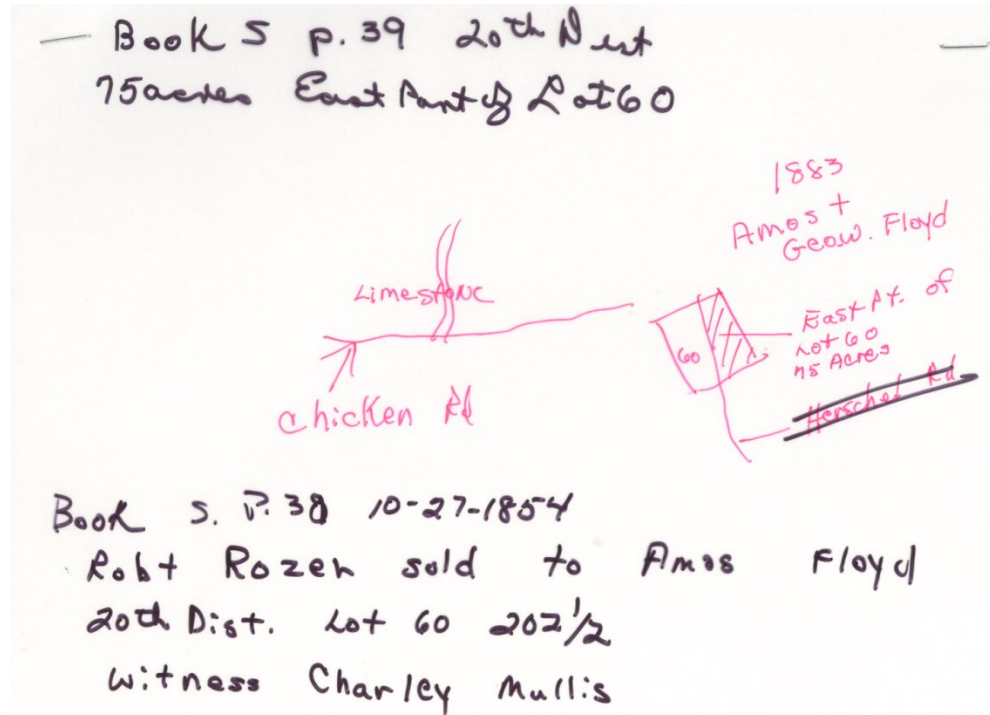
J. Jones

12 f

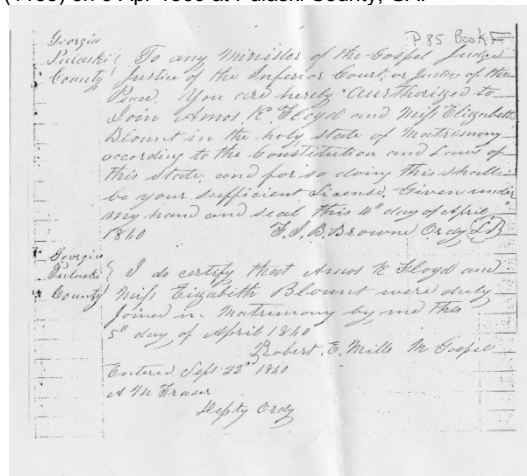
Susan Jones

11 f

He purchased land on 27 Oct 1854 at Pulaski County, GA., Robert Rozer sold 202.5 acres in the 20th District lot 60 to Amos Kinchen Floyd.³⁵⁸



He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁵⁹ He married Elizabeth BLOUNT (1135) on 5 Apr 1860 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁶⁰



He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA (He was living with wife and children next door to an adult son and both father and son were listed as "planter" indicating they survived the war in decent financial condition)³⁶¹

³⁵⁸ Pulaski County Georgia Land Records (No place: no publisher). Hereinafter cited as Pulaski Land Records.

³⁵⁹ 1860 Census., House # 49.

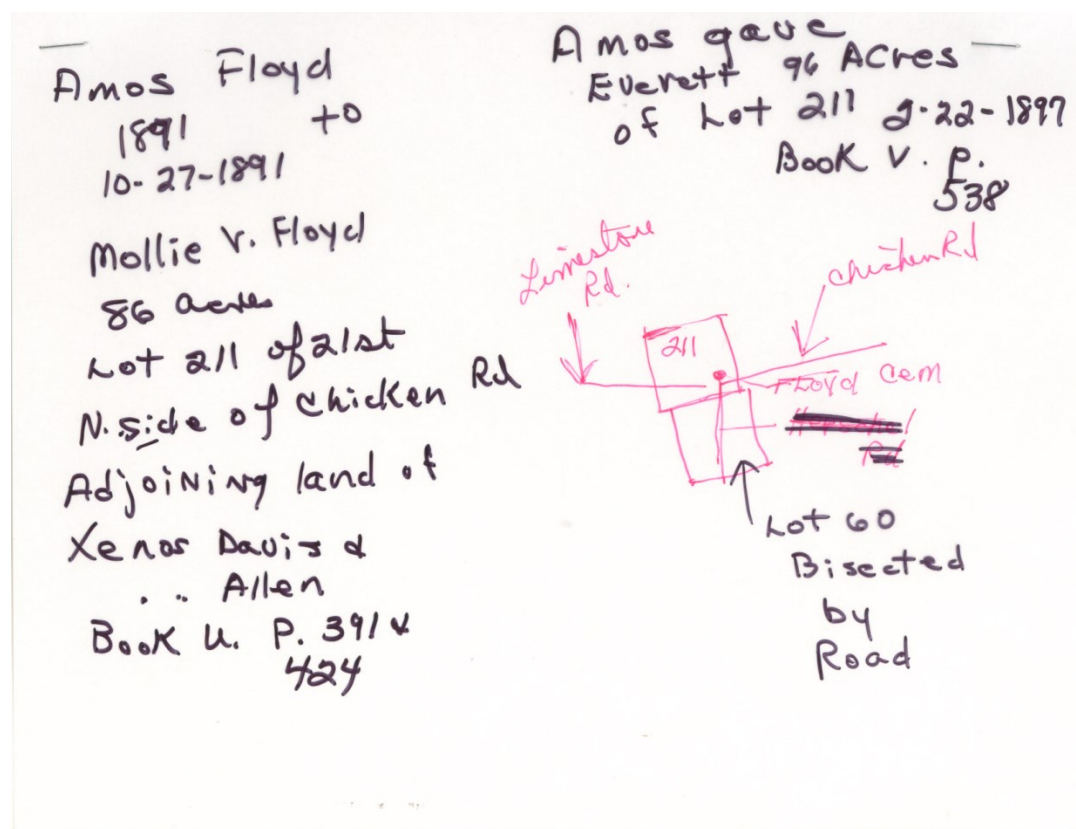
³⁶⁰ Harris, History of Pulaski County.

³⁶¹ 1870 Census., Living with wife #2 in house #890.

SCHEDULE 1.—Inhabitants in _____, in the County
of Georgia, enumerated by me on the 2 day of Aug, 187
Post Office: Hartsville

Dwelling-house, numbered in the order of visitation.		The name of every person whose place of abode on the first day of June, 1870, was in this family.	DESCRIPTION.			Profession, Occupation, or Trade of each person, male or female.	VALUE OF REAL ESTATE OWNED.		Place of Birth, naming State or Territory of U. S.; or the Country, if of foreign birth.	
1	2		3	4	5		6	7		8
883	883	Pope David M	14	M	W	H. Labor				Ga
884	884	Pool Calvin	62	M	H	Planter	500	300		La
		Vicy	48	F	H	N. House				La
		Stephen J	22	M	H	H. Labor				Ga
		Wiley F	31	M	H	" do				do
		Nancy	13	F	H	N. House				do
885	885	Blount John	35	M	H	H. Labor				do
		Matilda	47	F	H	N. House				do
		Frances	14	F	H	" do				do
886	886	Davis Thomas	35	M	H	Planter	200	200		do
		Ellen	28	F	H	N. House				do
		Elizabeth	9	F	H					do
		James	2	M	H					do
887	887	Williams Mary	30	F	H	N. House	100	100		do
		Wm	10	M	H	H. Labor				do
		Willis	8	M	H					do
		Mollie	5	F	H					do
888	888	Horne Jesse D	33	M	H	Planter	900	355		do
		Martha M	28	F	H	N. House				do
		Joel R	9	M	H					do
		Jesse F	7	M	H					do
		Martha M	6	F	H					do
		Nancy E	3	F	H					do
		Mary L	4	F	H					do
		Terrell Matilda	12	F	H	H. Labor				do
		Elizabeth	8	F	H					do
889	889	DeLoyd Frederick	37	M	H	Planter		260		do
		Roxey A.	23	F	H	N. House				do
		Stephen F	7	M	H					do
		Wm. A.	3	M	H					do
890	890	Floyd Amos	55	M	H	Planter	500	700		do
		Elizabeth	37	F	H	N. House				do

He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (he lived at house # 446 adjacent to G.W., Shadrack and Frederick Floyd. Living in the household of Amos was an Everitt age 18 and Henry Davis and wife Ann both age 33).³⁶² He purchased land on 28 Oct 1882 at Pulaski County, GA, Amos purchased 101 acres (half of LL 211 in 21st Dist) from the Estate of Morning Horne Blount. Recorded in Book V p. 96.³⁶³ He purchased land in 1883 at Pulaski County, GA., Amos conveyed to George W. Floyd the east part of lot 60 (75 acres) Lot 60 is across the Chicken Road from the Floyd cemetery. The cemetery is located behind the Max Perkins home.³⁶⁴ He purchased land on 1 Jan 1886 at Pulaski County, GA, Amos conveyed 14 acres of the southeast corner to Elizabeth Floyd.³⁶⁵ He purchased land on 27 Oct 1891 at Pulaski County, GA., Amos conveyed 86 acres to Mollie V. Floyd lot 211 of 21st District.³⁶⁶



He purchased land on 22 Feb 1897 at Pulaski County, GA., Amos conveyed 96 acres of lot 211 of 21st District to Everett Floyd.³⁶⁷ He left a will on 29 Sep 1898 at Pulaski County, GA, Amos Floyd w. Elizabeth; s Frederick, Arch, J.J., G.W. Shade, Amos; d Harriet Grimsley, Ann Davis.³⁶⁸ He was buried circa 14 Jun 1900 at Floyd Family Cemetery, Pulaski County, GA, Max Perkins lived (1980) on Limestone Rd. and it is behind his house where Amos Kinchen Floyd is buried along with other members of his family including some in-laws in what is known as the Floyd Family Cemetery.³⁶⁹

³⁶² 1880 Census.

³⁶³ Pulaski Land Records.

³⁶⁴ Pulaski Land Records.

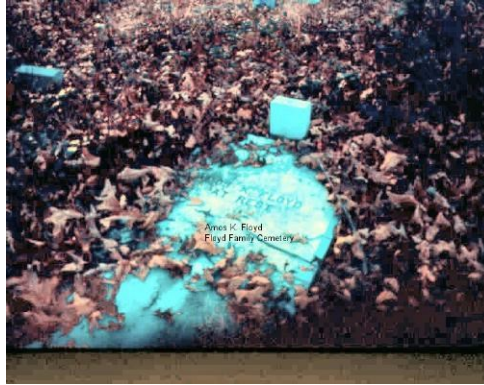
³⁶⁵ Pulaski Land Records.

³⁶⁶ Pulaski Land Records.

³⁶⁷ Pulaski Land Records.

³⁶⁸ Harris, *History of Pulaski County*.

³⁶⁹ Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*; June Adams, Betsy Smith Robin Mullis, compiler, *Bleckley County Cemeteries* (P.O Box 4812, Dublin, GA 31021: Wiregrass Genealogical Society, 2002). Hereinafter cited as *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.



He appeared on the census on 14 Jun 1900 at Pulaski County, GA (he was shown living alone with son Shade in Pulaski County Georgia)³⁷⁰

³⁷⁰ 1900 Census, v. 57, sheet 5 line 32 p.195.

State

County

Township or other division of county

Name of incorporated city, town, or village, within the above-named division.

Enumerated by me on the 14

SCHED

LOCATION.			NAME	RELATION.	PERSONAL DESCRIPTION						
IN CITY.	House Number.	Number of dwelling house, in the order of valuation.			Color or race.	Sex.	DATE OF BIRTH.		Age at last birthday.	Whether single, married, widowed, or divorced.	Number of years married.
Street.			of each person whose place of abode on June 1, 1900, was in this family. Enter surname first, then the given name and middle initial, if any. Exclude every person living on June 1, 1900. Omit children born since June 1, 1900.	Relationship of each person to the head of the family.			Month.	Year.			
			Buster Anna A.	Wife	w	F	Feb.	1826	74	m	2
			Floyd Joseph L.	Head	w	M	Dec.	1826	23	m	2
			Anna	Wife	w	F	Nov.	1827	27	m	2
			Mamie C.	Daughter	w	F	Sept.	1898	1	d	
			Floyd John J.	Head	w	M	Apr.	1852	48	m	1
			Nancy E.	Wife	w	F	Oct.	1854	41	m	1
			Henry	Son	w	M	Sept.	1877	22	d	
			James A.	Son	w	M	Jan.	1881	19	d	
			Emma	Daughter	w	F	Aug.	1887	12	d	
			Morgan H.	Son	w	M	May	1892	8	d	
			Floyd William A.	Head	w	M	Nov.	1867	33	m	2
			Mamie	Wife	w	F	Aug.	1876	23	m	2
			William C. H.	Son	w	M	Nov.	1894	6	d	
			Lucy B.	Daughter	w	F	Dec.	1894	3	d	
			Mattie L.	Daughter	w	F	Feb.	1899	1	d	
			Emily M.	Daughter	w	F	May	1900	0	d	
			Braman Elizabeth	Head	w	M	Dec.	1856	43	m	2
			Mamie	Wife	w	F	Jan.	1865	35	m	2
			James M.	Son	w	M	Aug.	1881	18	d	
			Braman M.	Daughter	w	F	Sept.	1884	15	d	
			Adda L.	Daughter	w	F	Sept.	1893	6	d	
			Caricavito Elogia	Sister in law	w	F	Apr.	1853	47	d	
			Buchan Louis	Head	w	M	May	1846	54	m	2
			Braman Elinor	Head	w	M	May	1857	41	d	
			Elinor	Son	w	M	July	1888	11	d	
			Mabel	Daughter	w	F	May	1891	9	d	
			Loian	Sister	w	F	July	1890	6	d	
			Hall James	Head	w	M	Nov.	1853	47	d	
			Lupo Rufus A.	Head	w	M	Feb.	1866	34	m	2
			John A.	Wife	w	F	Aug.	1872	28	m	2
			Woodson Timothy B.	Mother in law	w	F	Dec.	1859	40	m	2
			Floyd Amos	Head	w	M	Jan.	1818	82	m	2
			Shade	Son	w	M	June	1841	59	m	2
			Amelia	Head	w	F	July	1860	39	m	2
			James B.	Son	w	M	Sept.	1889	10	d	
			William	Daughter	w	F	Jan.	1893	7	d	
			Walter H.	Son	w	M	Jan.	1894	6	d	
			Walter B.	Son	w	M	Jan.	1897	3	d	
			Ross Nancy J.	Head	w	F	Jan.	1864	36	m	2
			Mary	Daughter	w	F	Feb.	1875	25	d	
			John	Son	w	M	Sept.	1885	14	d	
			William P.	Daughter	w	F	Feb.	1888	12	d	
			John	Son	w	M	Oct.	1890	10	d	

State Georgia
County Pulaski

SCHEDULE

Township or other division of county

Militia District
(Insert name of township, town, precinct, district, or other civil division.)

Name of incorporated city, town, or village, within the above-named division.

Enumerated by me on the 16 th

LOCATION.				NAME of each person whose place of abode on June 1, 1900, was in this family. Enter surname first, then the given name and middle initial, if any. Include every person living on June 1, 1900. Omit children born since June 1, 1900.	RELATION.	PERSONAL DESCRIPTION.							
IN CITY.		House Number.	Number of dwelling-house, in the order of valuation.			Number of family, in the order of institution.	Color or race.	Sex.	DATE OF BIRTH.		Age at last birthday.	Whether single, married, widowed, or divorced.	Number of years married.
Street.	Number.								Month.	Year.			
	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10			
51			Floyd Juliet M.	Wife	W.	F.	July 1882	17	M	3			
52			— Anna L.	Daughter	W.	F.	July 1892	7	F				
53			— Willie M.	Daughter	W.	F.	Feb 1898	1	F				
54	84	84	Carlson Paul 2 1 2	Head	B.	M.	Mch 1861	39	M	22			
55			— Fannie	Wife	B.	F.	July 1851	48	M	22			
56	85	85	Allin Richard 2 1 2	Head	B.	M.	July 1834	65	M	40			
57			— Admy	Wife	B.	F.	Apr 1786	104	M	40			
58	86	86	Victoria Higgins 3 1 3	Head	B.	F.	Feb 1846	54	M	20			
59			— Columbus	Son	B.	M.	Jan 1891	1	F				
60			Imogene Margie	Mother	B.	F.	Mch 1830	70	M				
61	87	87	Floyd James B. 3 1 3	Head	W.	M.	Sept 1826	73	M	2			
62			— Annice J.	Wife	W.	F.	July 1851	48	M	2			
63			— Viola	Daughter	W.	F.	Mch 1900	7	F				
64	88	88	Taylor Jimmy 3 1 3	Head	B.	M.	July 1834	65	M	33			
65			— Cecilia	Wife	B.	F.			M	33			
66			— Johnny	Son	B.	M.	Oct 1874	25	F				
67			— Garth	Son	B.	M.	Nov 1878	21	F				
68			— Earley	Son	B.	M.	Feb 1885	15	F				
69	89	89	Taylor Thell 3 1 3	Head	B.	M.	Feb 1877	23	M	2			
70			— Eula	Wife	B.	F.	Mch 1876	24	M	2			
71			— Willie	Son	B.	M.	July 1899	12	F				
72	90	90	Erinley John C. 3 1 3	Head	W.	M.	Apr 1846	53	M	31			
73			— Margaret M.	Wife	W.	F.	Nov 1848	51	M	31			
74			— John E.	Daughter	W.	F.	Apr 1890	10	F				
75	91	91	Sutton Charlotte 3 1 3	Head	B.	M.	Dec 1866	33	M	12			
76			— Willie	Wife	B.	F.	July 1867	32	M	12			
77			— Willie M.	Son	B.	M.	Dec 1888	11	F				
78			— Taylor	Son	B.	M.	Feb 1874	26	F				
79			— Ellice	Daughter	B.	F.	Oct 1874	25	F				
80			Therese Wamick	Daughter	B.	F.	Dec 1869	30	M				
81			— Willie	Nephew	B.	M.	May 1886	13	F				
82			— Willha	Niece	B.	F.	Apr 1874	25	F				
83			— Harwood	Nephew	B.	M.	Jan 1891	9	F				
84			— Walter	Nephew	B.	M.	Jan 1891	9	F				
85			Whiter Rosa	Nephew	B.	F.	Jan 1891	9	F				
86	92	92	Dallas Thomas B.	Head	B.	M.	Jan 1875	25	M	22			
87			— Matilda	Wife	B.	F.	Oct 1867	30	M	27			
88			— Johnie Mammie	Daughter	B.	F.	Oct 1880	19	M	4			
89			— Billie	Son	B.	M.	Dec 1882	17	M	4			
90			— Laddie B.	Daughter	B.	F.	Sept 1897	2	F				
91			— Mattie	Daughter	B.	F.	Jan 1899	1	F				

His estate was probated on 3 Sep 1900 at Pulaski County, GA, **Will of Amos Floyd dated September 29, 1892 at Pulaski County, Georgia Wills Book B 1855-1906 pp. 464 465** State of Georgia Pulaski County I Amos Floyd of said State and County being of sound and disposing mind and memory do make this my last will and testament Item 1st I give bequeath and devise to my wife Elizabeth Floyd the following property to wit. All of the household and Kitchen furniture and equal part of my estate with the balance of my children. Item 2nd I give bequeath and devise to my children Fredrick Floyd, Arch Floyd, Shade Floyd, Amos Floyd, JJ Floyd, G.W. Floyd, Harriet Grimsley and Ann Davis with my wife Elizabeth Floyd the balance of my estate both real and personal to be sold and equally divided among my wife and eight children or their heirs. Item 3rd I hereby constitute and appoint my sons JJ Floyd and GW Floyd Executors of this my last will and testament. This the 29th day of September 1898. signed with an "X" Amos Floyd Signed Sealed and published by Amos Floyd as his last will and testament in the presence of us the Subscribers our names hereto in the presence of said testator at his instance and request and of each other he signing in our presence and our signing in his presence. M.K. Allen Matte Allen Hiram M. Allen Will was proved on September 3rd 1900. He died after 29 Sep 1900 at Pulaski County, GA, His will was written on September 29th. His tombstone only gives year of death.³⁷¹

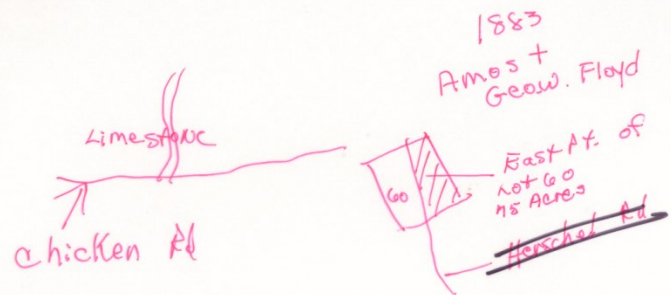


He purchased land on 4 Feb 1901 at Pulaski County, GA, The Amos Floyd Estate conveyed seven acres on the northeast corner to Everett Floyd.³⁷²

³⁷¹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Tombstone only gives year of death not date.

³⁷² *Pulaski Land Records*.

— Book 5 p. 39 20th Dist
75 acres East Part of Lot 60



Book 5. p. 38 10-27-1854
Robt Rozen sold to Ames Floyd
20th Dist. Lot 60 202 1/2
Witness Charley Mullis

As of 24 Mar 1938, he was also known as Kinch FLOYD (1133) I suppressed this information as it obviously is incorrect. Jimmie Lee Davis is check on this for me.

(a) Frederick¹² FLOYD (1380).



The Civil war records at the Georgia Department of History indicate that he received a pension for service in war in Company B Montgomery's Battalion Artillery. He also was in Dawson's Battery (Anderson's Battery Georgia Light Artillery 14th Battalion) Served as a private and received a pension in 1911. He was born in 1841 at Pulaski County, GA, Date taken from tombstone by Don Floyd. Family Search file # 184299 p. 1059 says date of birth is May 4 1842 according to Bob Bridger.³⁷³ He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁷⁴ He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA (Lived with Amos and Elizabeth). He married Roxy Ann BLOUNT (1381) in Dec 1860 Marriage date taken from his obituary. He served in the military in May 1861 at Hawkinsville, Pulaski County, GA, Enlistment date taken from obituary. Another source says he was mustered in on April 26 1862. He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (Lived in house #447 next door to his father and three houses from his brothers).³⁷⁵ He appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁷⁶ He received a military pension in 1911 (Like his brothers, Fred Floyd served in Co. B Montgomery's Battalion Artillery (CSA). None of the brothers could either read or write. He served as a private. From the late date of his pension application and the lack of any documents to the contrary, it appears that Fred Floyd was in

³⁷³Floyd, "Donald Floyd;" Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

³⁷⁴1850 Census.

³⁷⁵1880 Census.

³⁷⁶1900 Census; E.D. 42 House # 38.

better physical and monetary condition than his brothers Arch and Shade). He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.³⁷⁷ He died on 7 Jan 1924.



He was

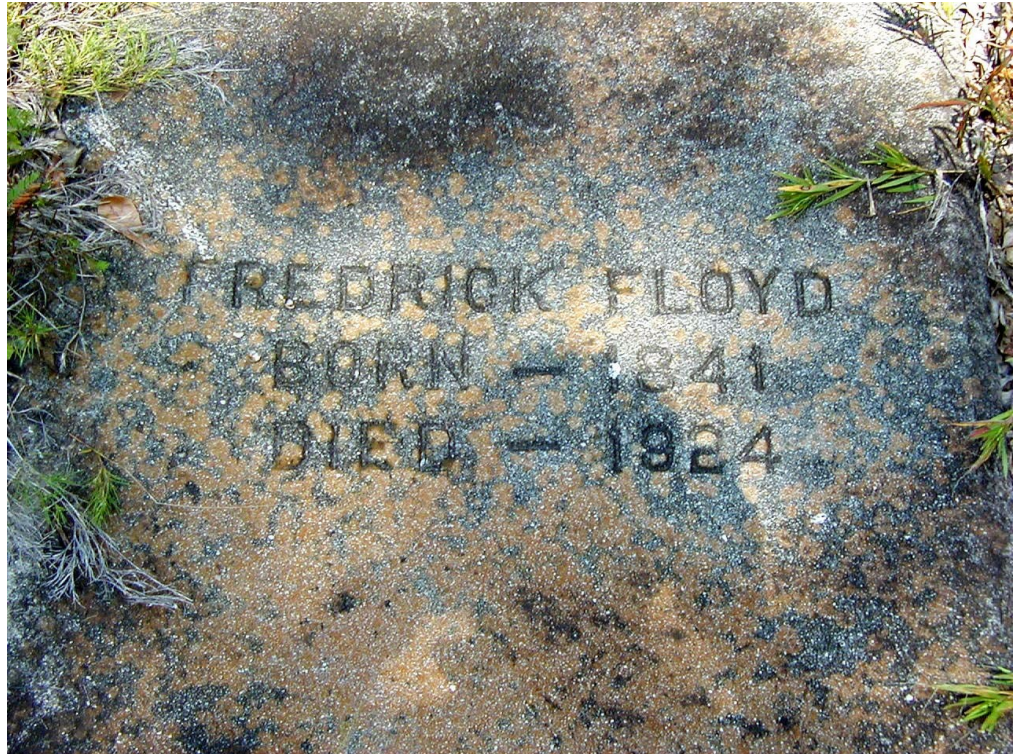
buried on 8 Jan 1924 at Bleckley County, GA. Here is his obituary taken from "Dodge County Newspaper Clippings Vol IV page 1839.":

Fred Floyd Sr. died at his home here Monday morning after an illness of pneumonia lasting about a week. Mr. Floyd is survived by his wife, three sons, S.F. Floyd of Chester, W.A. Floyd of Cochran and G.A. Floyd of Empire also 27 grandchildren, 38 great grandchildren and 5 great-great grandchildren and two sisters Mrs. Harriette Grimsley of Moultrie and Ann Davis of Plainfield. Mr. Floyd was in his 84th year. He was married to Roxie Blount in December 1860. He enlisted in Anderson's Battery in May 1861, and served the remainder of the war. Mr. Floyd lived his life in Pulaski County, near Bleckley County, within 10-12 miles of where he was born. His wife is very sick at present with pneumonia. She is in her 81st year.³⁷⁸ He His tombstone gives date of death as Jan 7 1927 according to newly published cemetery survey. Could be a typo. in 2002 at Bleckley County, GA.

³⁷⁷ 1920 Census.

³⁷⁸ Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, His tombstone reads: "Anderson's Battery, Georgia L. Arty, CSA."





i) Stephen F.³⁷⁹ FLOYD (1383) married Lizzie (--?--) (1693). He was born in Oct 1862. He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁷⁹ He married Elizabeth (Lizzie) (--?--) (1471) circa 1878.³⁸⁰ He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁸¹ He appeared on the census of 1900 at Dodge County, GA.³⁸² He appeared on the census in 1910 at Pulaski County, GA (Living in the Trippville area not far from Shade Floyd).

(a) Lona E.¹⁴ FLOYD (1504) was born in Jan 1888.

(b) Willie L.¹⁴ FLOYD (1503) was born in Jun 1888.

(c) Maud A.¹⁴ FLOYD (1505) was born in Feb 1890. She appeared on the census in 1910 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁸³

(d) Charlie M.¹⁴ FLOYD (1506) was born in Aug 1895. He appeared on the census in 1910 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁸⁴

ii) William Amos (Bill)¹³ FLOYD (1384) was born on 24 Mar 1866 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁸⁵ He appeared on the Census in 1880.³⁸⁶ He married Lucy HART (2393), daughter of Seaborn (Seburne or Cebren) Madison HART (1174) and Rebecca (Beckann) DAVIS (1155), on 23 Dec 1889 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁸⁷ He married Fannie HART (1495), daughter of Seaborn (Seburne or Cebren) Madison HART (1174) and Rebecca (Beckann) DAVIS (1155), on 21 Mar 1897 at Pulaski County, GA. In addition to the children shown the couple had two more who died as infants.³⁸⁸ He appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.³⁸⁹ He was buried in 1948 at Hart Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA. He died on 22 Jul 1948 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 82 Buried in Hart Cemetery Bleckley County, GA.

(a) Fred¹⁴ FLOYD (2884)³⁹⁰ was born in Mar 1891.³⁹¹ He married an unknown person on 28 Dec 1916.³⁹² He married Jewel HALL (2885) on 28 Dec 1916.³⁹³ He died on 13 Apr 1974 aged 83.³⁹⁴

³⁷⁹1870 Census; Living in house # 889 with parents.

³⁸⁰1880 Census; Living in house # 447 with parents.

³⁸¹1880 Census; Living in house # 447 with wife.

³⁸²unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

³⁸³1910 Census; Shown living single age 19 with parents in the Trippville area.

³⁸⁴1910 Census; Shown living with parents in the Trippville community.

³⁸⁵Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart", 1999.

³⁸⁶1880 Census; Shown living with his parents.

³⁸⁷Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁸⁸Harris, *History of Pulaski County*; Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁸⁹1900 Census.

³⁹⁰Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁹¹Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

(b) Lucy R.¹⁴ FLOYD (1497). Her married name was KILCHRISS (1497).³⁹⁵ She was born on 31 Dec 1896.³⁹⁶ She married John H. KILCHRISS (2883) on 23 Dec 1917.³⁹⁷

(c) William C. F.¹⁴ FLOYD (1496) was born in Mar 1894.

(d) Mattie Lee¹⁴ FLOYD (1498) (I had this person as a male named Matthew, but Doris Dixon told me it was a female named Mattie) was also known as Mattie Lee FLOYD (1498).³⁹⁸ Her married name was SMITH (1498).³⁹⁹ She was born on 5 Feb 1899.⁴⁰⁰ She married Mitchell SMITH (2886) on 12 Nov 1914.⁴⁰¹ She died on 27 Oct 1977 aged 78.⁴⁰²

(e) Emily Mourning¹⁴ FLOYD (1499)⁴⁰³ Her name (Mourning) indicates that there was a strong oral tradition for Mourning Floyd the immigrant even fifty years after her death. Her married name was FOSKEY (1499). She was born on 13 May 1900.⁴⁰⁴ She married Clayton FOSKEY (2887) on 31 Dec 1922. She died on 27 Jun 1983 aged 83.

i) Margaret¹⁵ FOSKEY (4702) is still living.

(f) Raburns¹⁴ FLOYD (1500) (Viola Berryhil says she knew him since he worked on



her father's farm)⁴⁰⁵

was also known as Benny RABY (1500) Doris Dixon gives this name, but elsewhere he is called Raburns Floyd. He was born on 14 Nov 1901 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁰⁶ He

³⁹²Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁹³Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁹⁴Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁹⁵Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁹⁶Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁹⁷Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁹⁸Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

³⁹⁹Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰⁰Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰¹Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰²Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰³Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰⁴Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰⁵*Pulaski County Marriages*; Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰⁶Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

married Hettie Francis FLOYD (2345) on 14 Nov 1920. He died on 8 Mar 1989 aged 87.

i) Doris⁷⁵ FLOYD (2337) is still living.

(g) Claudie Mae⁷⁴ FLOYD (2871) was born on 28 Nov 1904. She married John CRANFORD (2888) on 26 Dec 1925.⁴⁰⁷ As of 26 Dec 1925, her married name was CRANFORD (2871).⁴⁰⁸ She died on 20 Apr 1981 aged 76.⁴⁰⁹

(h) Sally⁷⁴ FLOYD (2875)⁴¹⁰ was buried in 1906 at Hart Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA, Called little Salley on her tombstone. She was born on 5 Aug 1906.⁴¹¹ She died on 27 Mar 1907.⁴¹²

(i) Nancy⁷⁴ FLOYD (2874) (She never married)⁴¹³ was born on 21 Feb 1908.⁴¹⁴ She was buried in 1935 at Hart Cemetery, Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. She died on 11 Mar 1935 aged 27.⁴¹⁵

(j) James Albert⁷⁴ FLOYD (2873)⁴¹⁶ was born on 24 Aug 1909.⁴¹⁷ He married Mamie CRANFORD (2889) on 15 Jan 1928.⁴¹⁸ He was buried in 1995 at Hart Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA.⁴¹⁹ He died on 31 Jan 1995 aged 85.⁴²⁰

(k) Rhoda Irene⁷⁴ FLOYD (2872)⁴²¹ was born on 28 May 1911.⁴²² She married Bradley BELFLOWER (2890) on 16 Mar 1937.⁴²³ As of 16 Mar 1937, her married name was BELFLOWER (2872).⁴²⁴ She died on 22 May 1983 aged 71.⁴²⁵

iii) Gus G.⁷³ FLOYD (1385) married Winnie (---?) (3669).⁴²⁶ He was born in 1874 at Bleckley County, GA.⁴²⁷

(a) Mary⁷⁴ FLOYD (3670)⁴²⁸ died. She was born in 1902.⁴²⁹

(b) James⁷⁴ FLOYD (3671)⁴³⁰ was born in 1904.⁴³¹

(c) Pearl⁷⁴ FLOYD (3675)⁴³² was born in 1905.⁴³³

(d) Roxie⁷⁴ FLOYD (3672)⁴³⁴ was born in 1906.⁴³⁵

(e) Mauiley⁷⁴ FLOYD (3673)⁴³⁶ was born in 1908.⁴³⁷

(f) Alice⁷⁴ FLOYD (3674)⁴³⁸ is still living.

(g) Obe⁷⁴ FLOYD (3676)⁴³⁹ is still living.

iv) George Augustus⁷³ FLOYD (1472) (In her 1998 review of my records Doris Floyd Dixon deleted this person. No explanation so I chose to leave him in until further proof. In 2006 I had the following message from a descendant: The family I am working on is Walter Augustus Floyd and Esther Lucas Floyd. Walter Augustus Floyd was son of George Augustus Floyd and Henny Laura Q. Stokes Floyd, who was son of Frederick Floyd and Lucy Roxanna Blount Floyd, who was son of Amos Kinchen Floyd and Anna Luttia McDaniel Floyd, who was son of Frederick Floyd and Mourning Bass Floyd. Any corrections and help would be appreciated.

⁴⁰⁷ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰⁸ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴⁰⁹ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹⁰ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹¹ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹² Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹³ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹⁴ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹⁵ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹⁶ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹⁷ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹⁸ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴¹⁹ Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

⁴²⁰ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴²¹ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴²² Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴²³ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴²⁴ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴²⁵ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁴²⁶ 1920 Census.

⁴²⁷ 1920 Census.

⁴²⁸ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁴²⁹ 1920 Census.

⁴³⁰ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁴³¹ 1920 Census.

⁴³² 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁴³³ 1920 Census.

⁴³⁴ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁴³⁵ 1920 Census.

⁴³⁶ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁴³⁷ 1920 Census.

⁴³⁸ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁴³⁹ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

John traceradams [traceradams@cox.net]) was born in Aug 1875 at GA.⁴⁴⁰ He married Henny Lara Quincy STOKES (3645) circa 1893.⁴⁴¹ He appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA (Shown living next door to parents and near to James Berryhill. E.D. 42 house # 39).⁴⁴²

- (a) Rosa L.¹⁴ FLOYD (3646)⁴⁴³ was born in Feb 1894.⁴⁴⁴
- (b) Annie B.¹⁴ FLOYD (3647)⁴⁴⁵ was born in Oct 1895.⁴⁴⁶
- (c) Walter Augustus¹⁴ FLOYD (3648)⁴⁴⁷ married Esther LUCAS (3666).⁴⁴⁸ He was born in Jun 1897.⁴⁴⁹
 - i) Vera¹⁵ FLOYD (3667)⁴⁵⁰ is still living.
 - ii) Henry¹⁵ FLOYD (3668)⁴⁵¹ is still living.
- (d) Laura A (Gertrude)¹⁴ FLOYD (3649)⁴⁵² was born in Oct 1899.⁴⁵³
- (e) Cann (Manly)¹⁴ FLOYD (5321) is still living.
- (f) Obie¹⁴ FLOYD (5322) is still living.
- (g) Jim¹⁴ FLOYD (5323) is still living.
- (h) Mary Ellen¹⁴ FLOYD (5324) is still living.
- (i) Roxanne¹⁴ FLOYD (5326) is still living.
- (j) Alice¹⁴ FLOYD (5328) is still living.
- (k) Pearl¹⁴ FLOYD (5330) is still living.



(b) Archibald¹² FLOYD (1386) was born circa 1844 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁵⁴ He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. He served in the military on 26 Apr 1862 at Hawkinsville, Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁵⁵ He married Mary A. WADE (1387) say 1870. He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁵⁶ He was Frank Wade appointed guardian 6 Feb 1888 for Joseph L., William W., & Josephus F. FLOYD, minors of Arch FLOYD. Frank Wade was the brother of Mary Wade the children's mother. It appears that when she died her husband turned them over to Frank Wade. In 1892 or so Arch Floyd married a woman named Mary and they had a child named Mattie. on 6 Feb 1888 at Pulaski County, GA. He married Mary (---) (4043) circa 1890 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census in 1900.⁴⁵⁷ He died in 1905 at Pulaski County, GA. He was buried in 1905 Bob Bridger tells me the cemetery is located at the intersections of the roads at the top is Cary, which I found with the aid of your map. Immediately below is an inverted "T" shaped building I have taken as a church. Immediately

⁴⁴⁰ 1880 Census.

⁴⁴¹ 1900 Census.

⁴⁴² 1900 Census; Shown living next door to parents and near to James Berryhill. E.D. 42 house # 39.

⁴⁴³ 1900 Census; 1900 Census; 1900 Census.

⁴⁴⁴ 1900 Census.

⁴⁴⁵ 1900 Census; 1900 Census; 1900 Census.

⁴⁴⁶ 1900 Census.

⁴⁴⁷ 1900 Census; 1900 Census; 1900 Census.

⁴⁴⁸ 1920 Census.

⁴⁴⁹ 1900 Census.

⁴⁵⁰ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁴⁵¹ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁴⁵² 1900 Census; 1900 Census; 1900 Census.

⁴⁵³ 1900 Census.

⁴⁵⁴ 1850 Census; Living with parents P. 237 house #133.

⁴⁵⁵ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; "Co. B "Anderson's Battery Georgia Light Artillery", Cara Bryant Murray Transcription of Anderson's Battery; . Hereinafter cited as "Anderson's Battery."

⁴⁵⁶ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁴⁵⁷ 1900 Census.

to the right across the road appears to be a cemetery. Think Arch Floyd might be here?
Check out this image I found on TerraServer-USA: <http://terraServer-usa.com/image.aspx?T=1&S=10&X=1418&Y=17998&Z=17&W=2&P=172+km+SE+of+Atlanta,+Georgia,+United+States&D=26+Jan+1999&O=27992&Lon=-83.3037&Lat=32.5136>.



He received a military pension on 14 Jan 1905 at Bleckley County, GA (Copy of petition to pension commissioner of Georgia states: "We the undersigned citizens of Pulaski Co., know Arch Floyd to be a deserving confederate soldier, his pecuniary condition is destitute, he is without any means of support, and is totally disabled from work on account of a large and growing cancer. We earnestly request that every consideration be given his application for a pension, and trust that you will be able to see your duty clear to place the name of this deserving confederate on the state's pension roll." It was signed by at least 80 citizens. He was 60 years old with a cancer on the right arm. He had the arm amputated above the elbow. There were many petitions on this matter.

The following affidavit can be found in the Georgia State Archives. It is a petition to Honorable J.W.. Lindsay the Pension Commissioner of Georgia. "We, the undersigned citizens of Pulaski Co. know Arch Floyd to be a deserving Confederate soldier; his pecuniary condition is destitute, he is without any means of support, and is totally disabled from work on account of a large and growing cancer. We earnestly request that every consideration be given his application for a pension, and trust that you will be able to see your duty clear to place the name of this deserving Confederate on the State's pension roll. Signed by at least 80 citizens around January 14, 1905. The file states that he is 60 years old in 1905 - that there is a cancer on his right arm which necessitated the amputation of the arm above the elbow. The file contains many letters to support request and in testament to condition").

i) Joe¹³ FLOYD (1388) was born in 1877. He appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁵⁸

⁴⁵⁸ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

- ii) Willis¹³ FLOYD (1430) was born circa 1880. He appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁵⁹
- iii) Wade H.¹³ FLOYD (1389) was born in Jan 1881. He appeared on the census of 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁶⁰



- iv) Thomas J.¹³ FLOYD (1390) was born in Feb 1882. He appeared on the census of 1900 at Pulaski County, GA. He married Pet CANNON (1431) on 2 Dec 1909 This marriage is speculation. He married Effie HOWELL (1666) after 1910.
- v) Mattie Lou¹³ FLOYD (1428) died date unknown. She was born in Sep 1893. She appeared on the census of 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁶¹ She married Cecil SMITH (1429) circa 1910. As of circa 1910, her married name was SMITH (1428).

⁴⁵⁹ unknown subject unknown repository.

⁴⁶⁰ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁴⁶¹ unknown subject unknown repository.

(c) Shadrick D.¹² FLOYD (1166)⁴⁶²



⁴⁶²unknown subject, State Archives of Georgia, GA 3033.



also went by the name of Shade FLOYD (1166). He was born on 22 Jun 1845 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁶³ He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA (In the 1860 Census he was shown living in house # 183). He served in the military on 25 Mar 1864 at Twiggs County, GA, Anderson's Battery Roster says he was mustered in Dalton two years after his brothers. Roster also states that the only other person mustered in on this date was J.M Dupree who likewise was joining an older brother. Possible Shade and J.M. Dupree traveled together by train to Dalton to join Anderson's Battery. They were then involved in the Battle and Seige of Atlanta and followed Sherman's troops as he marched to the sea.⁴⁶⁴ He married Elizza (Louisa or Louise) DAVIS (1147), daughter of Zacharias DAVIS (1141) and Elizabeth KING (1142), on 1 Jul 1866 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁶⁵ He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA (He lived next door to Zachariah Davis whose daughter he had married in 1866. In fact, he may have been living with his father-in-law).⁴⁶⁶ He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (Living in house # 445 between his brother GW and his father Amos and two doors from other brother Frederick).⁴⁶⁷ He married Bettie STEWART (1432) on 18 May 1888 at Pulaski County, GA, "Sometime prior to the 1900 Census Tom left town with his brother in-law's widow and second wife Betty "Bett"

⁴⁶³ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁴⁶⁴ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁴⁶⁵ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; *Pulaski County Marriages*; Doris Dixon, "LaVerne Papers", 1991 (Cochran Georgia). . Hereinafter cited as "La Verne papers."

⁴⁶⁶ 1870 Census; House # 870.

⁴⁶⁷ 1880 Census.

Stewart. Shade Floyd was married to Eliza Davis (Tom's sister) then Bett Stewart. Tom and Bet are found in the 1900 census living in Henry County, Alabama. Tom and Bett later moved to Rebecca Georgia where they both died. Bett died of TB and is buried in Pleasant Hill Cemetery without a headstone."

Note from Ed Harmon.⁴⁶⁸ He was Shadrick Floyd was appointed guardian 1 Feb 1892; Mary A.E. & James E. FLOYD minors of Shadrick FLOYD. (I have no clue what this means since the mother of the children died in 1888 and Shade had married Betty Burns by this time.) on 11 Feb 1892 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA (In 1900 Shade was not married and lived alone with his elderly father, Amos Kinchen Floyd, who died later that year)⁴⁶⁹

⁴⁶⁸Ed Harmond, "Ed Harmond," e-mail message from unknown author e-mail (Edward R. Harmon) to MVW, Feb 8 2006. Hereinafter cited as "Harmond."

⁴⁶⁹*1900 Census*; Living alone at age 53 with father Amos.

TWELFTH CENS

SCHEDULE

State Georgia
County Pulaski

Township or other division of county

Militia District 18
(Insert name of township, town, precinct, district, or other civil division, as the case may be.)

Name of incorporated city, town, or village, within the above-named division.

Enumerated by me on the 16th day

LOCATION.			NAME	RELATION.	PERSONAL DESCRIPTION.									
IN CITY.	House Number.	Number of dwelling, including the order of location.			Number of family in the order of location.	Relationship of each person to the head of the family.	Color or race.	Sex.	DATE OF BIRTH.	Age at last birthday.	Whether each married, widowed, or divorced.	Number of years married.	Number of live many.	Number of those children living.
Street.			1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12
51					Floyd Juliett M.	Wife	w	f	July 1882	17	M	3	1	1
52					Anna L.	Daughter	w	f	July 1892	7	F			
53					Willie M.	Daughter	w	f	Nov 1898	1	F			
54	84	94			Carlson Paul	Head	B	m	Mich 1861	49	M	22		
55					Fannie	Wife	B	f	July 1851	48	M	22	0	0
56	82	85			Allie Richard	Head	B	m	July 1834	65	M	40		
57					Adams	Wife	B	f	Apr 1796	108	M	40	18	12
58	76	86			Victor Higgins	Head	B	f	Feb 1846	34	M		8	3
59					Columbus	Son	B	m	Jan 1891	1	F			
60					Samuels Margie	Mother	B	f	Nov 1830	70	M		16	9
61	87	87			Floyd James E.	Head	w	m	Sept 1876	23	M	2		
62					Willie J.	Wife	w	f	July 1856	45	M	2	1	1
63					Viola	Daughter	w	f	Nov 1900	7	F			
64	88	88			Paylor Jimmy	Head	B	m	July 1874	45	M	33		
65					Caroline	Wife	B	f	Jan 1874	45	M	33	7	5
66					Johnny	Son	B	m	Oct 1874	25	F			
67					Quinn	Son	B	m	Nov 1878	21	F			
68					Carley	Son	B	m	Oct 1885	15	F			
69	89	89			Paylor Thel	Head	B	m	Feb 1877	23	M	2		
70					Lula	Wife	B	f	Nov 1876	24	M	2	2	1
71					Willie	Son	B	m	July 1899	15	F			
72	90	90			Ernest John C.	Head	w	m	Apr 1848	58	M	31		
73					Theresa M.	Wife	w	f	Nov 1848	57	M	31	7	3
74					John E.	Daughter	w	f	Apr 1890	10	F			
75	91	91			Sutton Charles	Head	B	m	Nov 1866	33	M	12		
76					Willie	Wife	B	f	July 1867	32	M	12	9	2
77					Willie M.	Son	B	m	Dec 1885	11	F			
78					Paul	Son	B	m	Feb 1894	6	F			
79					Ellice	Daughter	B	f	Nov 1894	5	F			
80					Theresa M.	Daughter	B	f	Nov 1867	30	M		5	4
81					Willie	Nephew	B	m	May 1886	13	F			
82					Willie	Niece	B	f	Apr 1894	5	F			
83					Harmon	Nephew	B	m	Jan 1897	3	F			
84					Walter	Nephew	B	m	Jan 1897	3	F			
85					Isabel Rosa	Niece	B	f	Jan 1896	15	F			
86	92	92			Baldwin Thomas	Head	B	m	Jan 1847	52	M	29		
87					Malinda	Wife	B	f	Oct 1862	30	M	29	3	1
88					Isabel Maria	Daughter	B	f	Oct 1880	19	M	4	2	2
89					Willie	Son	B	m	Dec 1897	3	M	4		
90					Laddie B.	Daughter	B	f	Apr 1897	2	F			
91					Maude	Daughter	B	f	Jan 1899	1	F			
92					John Henry	Son	B	m	May 1898	5	F			
93	93	93			Arthur Henry	Head	B	m	Nov 1879	41	M	9		
94					Jane	Wife	B	f	Apr 1866	36	M	9	3	2
95					For Annie	Daughter	B	f	Jan 1891	11	F			
96	94	94			William John	Head	B	m	July 1833	66	M	27		
97							B	m	Feb 1833					

TWELFTH CENSUS

SCHEDULE

State Georgia
County Pulaski

Township or other division of county Militia District 156

Name of incorporated city, town, or village, within the above-named division

Enumerated by me on the 14 day of

1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12
IN CITY.	House Number.	NAME of each person whose place of abode on June 1, 1900, was in this family. Enter surname first, then the given name and middle initial, if any. Include every person living on June 1, 1900. Omit children born since June 1, 1900.	RELATION.	Color or race.	Sex.	DATE OF BIRTH.	Age at last birthday.	Whether deaf, dumb, insane, or idiotic.	Number of years married.	Number of born alive.	Number of times alive.
Street.						Month.	Year.				
		Buster Anna A.	Wife	W	F	Feb. 1826	74	M	3	1	
	71 71	Clayd Joseph L.	Head	W	M	Dec. 1826	73	M	3		
		Anna	Wife	W	F	Nov. 1823	76	M	3	1	
		Mamie C.	Daughter	W	F	Sept. 1895	1				
	72 72	Clayd John J.	Head	W	M	Apr. 1862	38	M	18		
		Nancy E.	Wife	W	F	Oct. 1853	41	M	19	3	3
		Henry	Son	W	M	Sept. 1877	22				
		James A.	Son	W	M	Jan. 1881	19				
		Emma	Daughter	W	F	Aug. 1887	12				
		Morgan H.	Son	W	M	May 1892	8				
	72 72	Clayd William A.	Head	W	M	Nov. 1827	73	M	8		
		Mamie	Wife	W	F	Aug. 1826	73	M	3	2	2
		William C. H.	Son	W	M	Nov. 1894	6				
		Lucy B.	Daughter	W	F	Dec. 1894	5				
		Mattie L.	Daughter	W	F	Feb. 1899	1				
		Emily M.	Daughter	W	F	May 1900	0				
	74 74	Barman Embury H.	Head	W	M	Dec. 1826	73	M	20		
		Mamie	Wife	W	F	Jan. 1858	42	M	20	3	3
		James H.	Son	W	M	Aug. 1861	38				
		Barnes M.	Daughter	W	F	Sept. 1884	15				
		Adda L.	Daughter	W	F	Sept. 1892	8				
		Caricaville Eliza	Sister in law	W	F	Apr. 1852	47				
	75 75	Richard Louis	Head	W	M	May 1846	54	M			
	76 76	Barman Eliza C.	Head	W	F	May 1857	41				
		Ellis H.	Son	W	M	July 1881	11				
		Mabel	Daughter	W	F	May 1891	9				
		Loise	Daughter	W	F	July 1890	10				
	77 77	Hall James	Head	W	M	Nov. 1853	47				
	78 78	Lupo Rufus H.	Head	W	M	Feb. 1866	34	M	8		
		Rosa A.	Wife	W	F	Aug. 1872	28	M	8	0	0
		Woodson James B.	Sister in law	W	F	Dec. 1849	50	M		6	6
	79 79	Clayd Amos	Head	W	M	Jan. 1818	82	M			
		Shade	Son	W	M	June 1841	59				
	80 80	Amelia Sarah	Head	W	F	July 1860	39	M	9	4	4
		James H.	Son	W	M	Sept. 1889	10				
		Ellis H.	Daughter	W	F	June 1893	7				
		Halter H.	Son	W	M	Jan. 1896	4				
		Walter B.	Son	W	M	Jan. 1897	3				
	81 81	Ross Nancy J.	Head	W	F	Jan. 1856	44	M	16	10	10
		Nancy	Wife	W	F	Feb. 1851	49				
		Lucy L.	Son	W	M	Sept. 1865	34				
		William P.	Daughter	W	F	Feb. 1867	32				
		John L.	Son	W	M	Oct. 1870	29				
	82 82	Amie Richard	Head	W	M	Oct. 1860	39	M	13		
		Nancy E.	Wife	W	F	Nov. 1861	38	M	13	3	3
		William L.	Son	W	M	Feb. 1881	19				
		Clifford L.	Son	W	M	Dec. 1889	10				
		Mabel A.	Son	W	M	Jan. 1896	4				
		Alfred Maria E.	Sister in law	W	F	Sept. 1850	50	M		6	2
	83 83	Clayd Amos	Head	W	M	Jan. 1818	82	M			

He received a military pension on 13 Sep 1901 (Application for indigent pension states that he enlisted in Dec of 1863 and surrendered at Greensboro, NC in April of 1865. Application for pension based on infirmity and poverty. "I was wounded during the war in the hip and have never been entirely well since. Have frequent attacks of Rheumatism - general breaking down." Possess no property. Have had no real property in the years 1894-1899 and am supported by the labor of "my two sons" The physician's affidavit states "struck by a shell at Savannah, GA in 1864 during an engagement, as a result has never been strong and vigorous since. Since then has suffered with general debility of soul, also suffers from recurrent attacks of Rheumatism." Pension was granted and received through 1907. He served in CSA Company B Montgomery). He married Polly HARTLEY (2968), daughter of Fate HARTLEY (4484), on 14 Dec 1902.⁴⁷⁰ He appeared on the census in 1910 at Trippville G.M.3876, Pulaski County, GA (In 1910 Shad is shown as the head of household with a middle initial of "D". He is living with wife Polly age 38, Arthur Darsey, stepson, Millie M. Paul, step daughter, Allie Hartley, daughter-in-law and a female named Emma ? age 10, stepdaughter)⁴⁷¹

⁴⁷⁰Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁷¹1910 Census.

STATE

Georgia

COUNTY

Pulaski

TOWNSHIP OR OTHER DIVISION OF COUNTY

Truffault District (397 M M)

DEPARTMENT OF COMMERCE

THIRTEENTH CENSUS OF

NAME

NAME OF INSTITUTION

(Insert name of institution, if any, and indicate the locality in which the entries are made. See instructions.)

LOCATION.	NAME	RELATION.	PERSONAL DESCRIPTION.										Place of birth of each person and give the state or territory.
			Sex	Color or race.	Age at last birthday.	Whether single, married, widowed, divorced, or separated.	Whether deaf or dumb.	Whether insane.	Whether blind.	Whether lame.	Whether crippled.	Whether other.	
1	144/144	Siddens James O.	M	w	7	S							Georgia
2	144/144	Edge John R.	M	w	21	M	9						Georgia
3	144/144	Male	M	w	24	M	9						Georgia
4	145/145	McDaniel John H.	M	w	24	M	5						Georgia
5	145/145	Anna	w	w	22	M	5						Georgia
6	145/145	William E.	M	w	4	S							Georgia
7	145/145	Matthew J.	M	w	17	S							Georgia
8	146/146	Leahy Willie L.	M	w	34	M	4						Georgia
9	146/146	Fellia	w	w	24	M	4						Georgia
10	146/146	George M.	M	w	2	S							Georgia
11	146/146	Mary L.	w	w	18	S							Georgia
12	146/146	Wardner Charles	M	w	29	M	2						Georgia
13	146/146	Beatrice	w	w	30	M	2						Georgia
14	146/146	Hinson Thomas J.	M	w	27	M	4						Georgia
15	146/146	Hiram S.	M	w	25	M	5						Georgia
16	146/146	Edna	w	w	6	S							Georgia
17	146/146	Henry M.	M	w	4	S							Georgia
18	146/146	John L.	M	w	3	S							Georgia
19	146/146	Reamer B.	M	w	2	S							Georgia
20	146/146	Spennett	M	w	5	S							Georgia
21	146/146	Siddens Abe H.	M	w	61	M	19						Georgia
22	146/146	Fannie	w	w	48	M	19						Georgia
23	146/146	Samuel	M	w	22	S							Georgia
24	146/146	William H.	M	w	15	S							Georgia
25	146/146	Eliza	w	w	11	S							Georgia
26	146/146	O'Brien	M	w	4	S							Georgia
27	146/146	Phalad David	M	w	65	S							Georgia
28	246/246	Bryant William H.	M	w	53	M	20						Georgia
29	246/246	Charles	M	w	39	M	20						Georgia
30	246/246	Mary E.	w	w	19	S							Georgia
31	246/246	Henry	M	w	17	S							Georgia
32	246/246	Martha P.	w	w	18	S							Georgia
33	246/246	Annabella	w	w	13	S							Georgia
34	246/246	Willie E.	M	w	9	S							Georgia
35	246/246	Jim Tom	M	w	4	S							Georgia
36	246/246	Lula M.	w	w	14	S							Georgia
37	246/246	Bryant George	M	w	48	M	23						Georgia
38	246/246	Mollie	w	w	42	M	23						Georgia
39	246/246	Lila	w	w	22	S							Georgia
40	246/246	Jackson	M	w	4	S							Georgia
41	246/246	Willie M.	w	w	5	S							Georgia
42	246/246	Betsy	w	w	76	M	9						Georgia
43	246/246	Bencon Frank H.	M	w	21	M	2						Georgia
44	246/246	Minnie	w	w	15	M	1						Georgia
45	246/246	Walter A.	M	w	4	S							Georgia
46	246/246	Walter E. Chad S.	M	w	67	M	7						Georgia
47	246/246	Polly	w	w	38	M	7						Georgia
48	246/246	George Arthur	M	w	19	S							Georgia
49	246/246	David Willie M.	M	w	12	S							Georgia
50	246/246	Gene	M	w	10	S							Georgia

STATE

Georgia

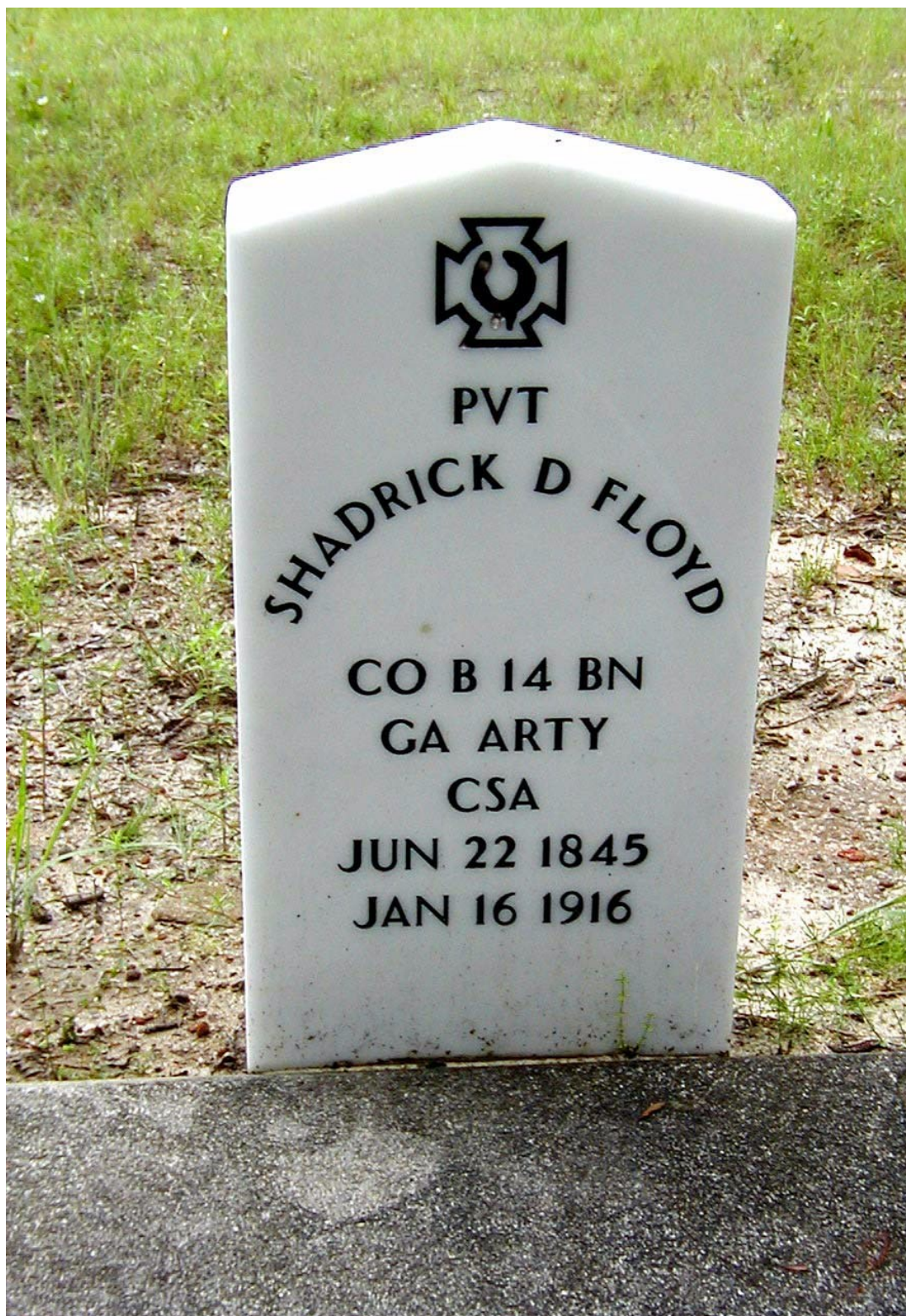
DEPARTMENT OF COMMERCE

THIRTEENTH CENSUS OF

He was buried in 1916 at Floyd Family Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA.⁴⁷²



⁴⁷²Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*; Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.



He died in 1916 at Twiggs County, GA.⁴⁷³ On June 13, 1951 Tina Floyd, his granddaughter, wrote to the Department of the Army requesting information on her grandfather's (Shade Floyd) military service. The following is the response she received: "The records show that Shade Floyd, private, Captain R.W.. Anderson's Battery, Palmer's

⁴⁷³unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

Battalion Reserve Artillery, which subsequently became Captain Anderson's Battery, Georgia Light Artillery, Confederate States Army, enlisted 25 March 1864 at Dalton, Georgia. The company muster roll for November and December 1864, last on file, shows him present. He was paroled 2 May 1865 at Greensboro, North Carolina, in accordance with the terms of a Military Convention entered into 26 April 1865 between General Joseph E. Johnston, commanding confederate Army, and Major General W. T. Sherman, commanding United States Army in North Carolina." Signed, William E. Bergin, Major General USA

From unpublished records compiled by Lillian Henderson for the State of Georgia we learn that: Shade D. Floyd enlisted as a private in Company B 14th Battalion Georgia Light Artillery on March 25, 1864. He surrendered at Greensboro, North Carolina April 26, 1864. The captain of this company was Thomas H. Dawson.

A letter addressed to Mr. Ruel Anderson of Hawkinsville, Georgia dated February 14, 1951 seeks information about Shade Floyd's service in Capt. Ruel Anderson's regiment. Addressee is the grandson of Capt. Anderson. The response is a short note stating: Your grandfather (Mr. Shade Floyd) was in my father company, Anderson's Battery. They fought in the Battle of Chattanooga and Missionary Ridge and the Battle of Atlanta and New Hope Church, Jonesboro, Georgia and other battles on down through Georgia. Signed by what appears to be Harriet (last name illegible) Note: perhaps she is the daughter of the Captain. The Civil War Records at the Georgia Department of Archives and History show S.D. Floyd receiving an Indigent Pension on the basis of service in Company B. of Montgomery's Artillery. It was signed by him with an "X" on September. 13, 1901 and states that he was born on June 22, 1845 in Pulaski Co., Georgia, was with Company B in Dalton, Georgia on December 1863 also in Anderson's Battery. He served nearly two years and surrendered in Greensboro, NC. April 1865. He based application for pension on infirmity and poverty. "I was wounded during the war in the hip and have never been entirely well since - have frequent attacks of Rheumatism - general breaking down. Possess no property (none shown for years 1894-1899) and am supported by the labor of "my two sons" In response to the question of "Do you have a homestead?" he replied "No". The affidavit was witnessed by J.C. Grimsley who said he enlisted with S. D. and served with him, surrendered with him at Greensboro and has lived within three miles of him for forty years.

Physicians Affidavit - Description of precise physical condition "... Struck by a shell at Savannah, Ga. in 1864 during an engagement, as result has never been strong and vigorous since. Since then he has suffered with general debility from soul(?), also suffers from recurrent attacks of Rheumatism. Pension was recorded as received in 1902-1906 starting at age 56.

Shade Floyd must have been embarrassed to ask for this indigent pension which required the acknowledgement and witness of his neighbors. The fact that it was needed, and that he was reduced to the level of requesting a pension gives a hint of the emotional and economic damage imposed on a whole generation by the terrible Civil War. What would Shade think if he could know that his suffering would be discovered and memorialized more than one hundred years after its occurrence? Would he recognize that his humiliating act which would be so carefully recorded in the state archives would upon its discovery shed a bright spot light on the most tragic and dark period of southern history? In an unwitting way, Shade's story like the story of his grandparents, Fed and Mourning Floyd serves to illuminate our past. Just as Frederick and Mourning were unknowing contributors to a history they could not read. And, just as their daughter, Francis Mary Ann became an accidental recorder of history when she chose to record her family's births in the Floyd family Bible, so too was Shadrach's act of humiliation became a key piece to a larger puzzle of life. Because of his need for the pension, and because of the state's persistent need to supply documentation and affidavits his descendants can better know and appreciate the heritage won for us at so great a cost. Shade Floyd owned no land, left no possessions and held no office, but he did not live in vain.

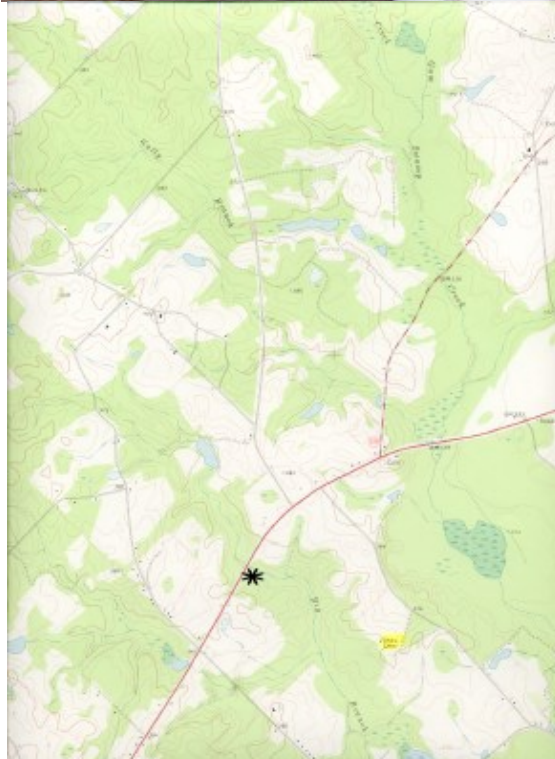
The few family stories told in the mid twentieth century indicate that when Shadrack Floyd returned from the war, the only job available was that of filling stump holes on the farm of his half brother, Everett Floyd. Considering the devastation done to the South's economy by the war it is plain that Shade would have counted himself fortunate to have even this job for support. As a young man of only twenty years who had already experienced the traumas of life, Shade married Eliza Davis on July 1, 1866. Eliza was from a large family who lived near the area of the hauntingly beautiful moss-draped cypress swamp known as Bush's Mill. Eliza would die prematurely at the age of thirty-eight and only four of her children would survive her. The four were named: Archie, Anna Letitia (Sis), Mary Elizabeth (Babe), and James Edward who was born on March 25, 1875.

Shade also worked in a turpentine still. The distillation of turpentine is tough and dirty work involving a difficult procedure. Perhaps the sight of his father working so hard for someone else was a strong lesson for James Edward Floyd. He grew up in poverty, saw what it was

like not to own land, and even knew the feeling of living in a home that belonged to someone else. Perhaps these are the lessons that forged the desire for a better life that would carry the next generation of the family into the twentieth century as land-owning successful businessmen. For the Civil War veteran, Shade Floyd, life never got much better. The turpentine still at Bailey's Park was within walking distance of the Everett Floyd place. Everett was Shade's half brother, and it was upon a piece of Everett's land that Eliza Davis Floyd, Shade's wife, was buried at a time of the year when the dogwood trees were their most glorious. What powerful feelings must have passed through the hearts of this family, emotions magnified to double size for the youngest son, James Edward Floyd who was only thirteen years old when his mother died? Certainly the events of his parents lives contributed to his discipline and conviction and the self-sufficiency that would be so evident throughout his life.

The year Shade's son, James Edward, was born (1876) was the Centennial celebration of the United States. It was a watershed time in American history with the industrial revolution becoming commonplace even in rural Georgia. The old pioneer ways were being swept out the door and the twentieth century was puffing into town on the train that ran so close to Bailey's Park. It was here around the turpentine industry that Shade Floyd found employment. The woods were full of the pine trees and a turpentine still was erected to harvest the sap which was shipped out on the railroad. As was common around industries, the owner of the company erected houses for his employees. Since there is good family tradition that Shadrack Floyd was employeeed by the still, it is therefore, quite possible that he and his family inhabited one of the company houses. He was New Tag Shadrack (Shade) Floyd is reported to have had a hot temper. He is quoted as having said: "If madness could be connected to steam, mine could pull a freight train loaded with buckshot." in Feb 2001.⁴⁷⁴ He This note from Shade's granddaughter, Annette Kaplan, describes BAILEY'S PARK. The only thing I rememberer from my childhood is that there was a small country store there and at election time it was a precinct where they counted the paper ballots and checked for Pole tax and Papa, James Edward Floyd, was always one of the officials at election time. There was also a swimming pool fed by boiling springs of icy cold, crystal clear water at the bottom of the hill with a changing room bath house for males and one side for females and we used to dive off the top into the pool. This all indicates to me that it was a small recreation area. in 2002 at Bleckely County, GA. He was In 2002, the work begun fifty years earlier by Tina Floyd was completed with the installation of a Civil War marker on Shade Floyd's grave. About 100 family members attended the ceremony which was marked by a canon salute from the local Civil War Historical group. in Nov 2002 at Bleckley County, GA.

⁴⁷⁴Floyd, "Donald Floyd."



i) Archibald R.¹³ FLOYD (1235)⁴⁷⁵



was born on 3 Jan 1868 at Pulaski County, GA, Another source says born Jan 25, 1868. He appeared on the census of 1870.⁴⁷⁶ He appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁷⁷ He married Florence DAILEY (1451) on 27 Oct 1889 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁷⁸ He married Margaret Juliette HOLLAND (1271), daughter of Jesse Jasper HOLLAND (1268) and Mary Orliffie BRYANT (1269), on 28 Nov 1897.⁴⁷⁹ He appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA (The daughter shown on this census as Anna is actually step- daughter of Margaret Juliette Holland).⁴⁸⁰ He appeared on the census in 1910 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁸¹

⁴⁷⁵Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Middle initial taken from tombstone.

⁴⁷⁶1870 Census; Living in house # 870 with parents.

⁴⁷⁷1880 Census; Living in house # 445 with parents.

⁴⁷⁸Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁷⁹Pulaski County Marriages.

⁴⁸⁰1900 Census; ED 42 Page 195A at bottom of page. Militia Dist 1503.

⁴⁸¹1910 Census.

STATE Georgia
 COUNTY Pulaski
 TOWNSHIP OR OTHER DIVISION OF COUNTY Spring Hill 1898 4/21

DEPARTMENT
 THIRTEENTH CENSUS

NAME OF INSTITUTION

(Insert name of institution, if any, and indicate the kind in which the census was made. See instructions.)

LOCATIONS	NAME	RELATION	PERSONAL DESCRIPTION											Place of birth of
			Sex	Color	Age	Mar.	Prof.	Ind.	Occ.	Rel.	Mar.	Mar.	Mar.	
152 152	John James M	Head	M	W	38	M								Georgia
	Mattie	Wife	F	W	28	M								Georgia
	James P	Son	M	W	3									Georgia
	Lizzie R	Daughter	F	W	12									Georgia
154 154	John James	Head	M	W	36	M								Georgia
	Hattie	Wife	F	W	26	M								Georgia
	B. O. A. C.	Daughter	F	W	6									Georgia
	Edna	Son	M	W	4									Georgia
	Charles	Son	M	W	3									Georgia
	Napoleon	Son	M	W	2									Georgia
	Robert	Son	M	W	1									Georgia
156 156	Samuel Stephen	Head	M	W	59	M								Georgia
	Mary C	Wife	F	W	54	M								Georgia
	John	Son	M	W	20									Georgia
	Mary	Daughter	F	W	17									Georgia
	Lina	Daughter	F	W	15									Georgia
	John C	Daughter	F	W	12									Georgia
158 158	Samuel James	Head	M	W	33	M								Georgia
	William	Wife	F	W	26	M								Georgia
	James	Son	M	W	6									Georgia
	John	Son	M	W	2									Georgia
159 159	John James C	Head	M	W	34	M								Georgia
	Maria J	Wife	F	W	26	M								Georgia
	Orville	Daughter	F	W	10									Georgia
	Andrew C	Son	M	W	7									Georgia
	John L	Daughter	F	W	5									Georgia
	Margaret	Daughter	F	W	3									Georgia
161 161	Reuben L	Daughter	F	W	12									Georgia
162 162	John James	Head	M	W	41	M								Georgia
	John	Wife	F	W	32	M								Georgia
	William M	Daughter	F	W	9									Georgia
	Olivia H	Son	M	W	9									Georgia
	Charles	Daughter	F	W	6									Georgia
	Robert	Daughter	F	W	4									Georgia
164 164	Leah John J	Head	M	W	31	M								Georgia
	William B	Wife	F	W	27	M								Georgia
	Emma B	Daughter	F	W	5									Georgia
	Emma B	Daughter	F	W	2									Georgia
165 165	William Williams C	Head	M	W	52	M								Georgia
	Margaret P	Sister	F	W	48									Georgia
	Miriam Charles	Servant	F	W	16									Georgia
	Martha Morris	Servant	F	W	15									Georgia
166 166	John Williams	Head	M	W	77	M								Georgia
	Laura	Wife	F	W	65	M								Georgia
	Mary L	Daughter	F	W	38									Georgia
	William Handal	Grandson	M	W	14									Georgia
	John Handal	Grandson	M	W	8									Georgia
	John Miller	Grandson	M	W	5									Georgia
	William M	Grandson	M	W	3									Georgia
	William	Grandson	M	W	2									Georgia

He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckely County, GA.

STATE

Georgia

9-137

COUNTY

Bleckley

FOURTEENTH

TOWNSHIP OR OTHER DIVISION OF COUNTY

Militia District 15

NAME OF INSTITUTION

(Insert name of institution, if any, and indicate the lines on which the entries are made.)

1	PLACE OF ABODE				5	6	7		8		9		10		11	
	House number or farm, etc. (See instructions.)	Number of dwelling house in order of valuation.	Number of family in order of valuation.	Number of persons whose place of abode on January 1, 1930, was in this family. Enter surname first, then the given name and initials, if any. Include every person living on January 1, 1930. Omit children born since January 1, 1930.			Relation of this person to the head of the family.	Sex	Age	Color or race.	Age of last birth.	Married.	Single.	Widowed.	Divorced.	Other.
51	✓			Toskey, Jerry	Son			M	21	8						
52	✓			Bozall, P. A.	Daughter			F	21	5						
53	✓			Clayton	Son			M	21	15						
54	136	136		Smith, William	Head	R		M	21	25						
55	✓			Fannie	Wife			F	21	22						
56	✓			Pauline	Daughter			F	21	5						
57	✓			Florence	Daughter			F	21	3						
58	✓			Oliver V.	Daughter			F	21	2						
59	✓			Searles, Carly	Boarder			M	21	17						
60	131	131		Smith, Wilbur	Head	R		M	21	25						
61	✓			Nettie C.	Wife			F	21	25						
62	✓			James	Son			M	21	8						
63	✓			Annie Ruth	Daughter			F	21	6						
64	✓			Marion	Son			M	21	4						
65	✓			J. T.	Son			M	21	15						
66	138	138		Crawford, Essie	Head	R		M	21	25						
67	✓			Nora	Wife			F	21	30						
68	✓			Mamie	Daughter			F	21	2						
69	✓			Essie J.	Son			M	21	3						
70	139	139		Floyd, James E.	Head	R		M	21	24						
71	✓			Lucile J.	Wife			F	21	24						
72	✓			Arthur	Son			M	21	17						
73	✓			Lisa	Daughter			F	21	15						
74	✓			Maurice	Daughter			F	21	13						
75	✓			Ruth	Daughter			F	21	11						
76	✓			Albert	Son			M	21	8						
77	✓			Nechel	Son			M	21	6						
78	✓			Esse J.	Son			M	21	5						
79	✓			Annelle	Daughter			F	21	14						
80	140	140		Robb, Annie	Head	R		F	21	48						
81	✓			Sege	Son			M	21	24						
82	✓			Odell	Daughter			F	21	18						
83	141	141		Holland, Henry	Head	R		M	21	32						
84	✓			Sadie	Wife			F	21	27						
85	✓			Pauline	Daughter			F	21	11						
86	✓			Elgar	Son			M	21	9						
87	✓			Johnny M.	Son			M	21	7						
88	✓			Mollie	Mother			F	21	29						
89	142	142		Hynes, Ella	Head	R		M	21	21						
90	✓			Eula	Wife			F	21	23						
91	✓			Gladys	Daughter			F	21	2						
92	✓			Lucie	Daughter			F	21	1						
93	✓			Seaborn, Nathan	Boarder			M	21	14						
94	143	143		Floyd, W. C.	Head	R		M	21	52						
95	✓			Juliette	Wife			F	21	37						
96	✓			Willie W.	Son			M	21	14						
97	✓			Gladys	Daughter			F	21	14						
98	✓			Barney Lee	Daughter			F	21	12						
99	✓			Hermon	Son			M	21	9						

He was buried in 1927 at Dodge County, GA, Buried at Bowers Cemetery at Eastman adjoining Mt. Horeb Church. His marker is wrong. Birth year is 1868 - not as shown.⁴⁸² He died on 30 Oct 1927 aged 59.⁴⁸³ A family story from Viola Floyd says that Arch Floyd's farm was next door to James E. Floyd's (Her father and brother of Arch) farm.

(a) Anna L. (Little Annie)¹⁴ FLOYD (1452) married /Purvis/ (---) (1453). She was born in Jul 1892. She appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.

(b) Infant¹⁴ FLOYD (3354)⁴⁸⁴ died on 1 Feb 1893.⁴⁸⁵

(c) Willie Mae¹⁴ FLOYD (1434) was born on 4 Nov 1899 at GA. She appeared on the census of 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.

(d) Ollie Willis¹⁴ FLOYD (1435) (Nickname of "Bud")⁴⁸⁶ was born in 1901.⁴⁸⁷ He married Corra Lee TURNER (1436) on 2 Dec 1928.

i) Frances¹⁵ FLOYD (2970)⁴⁸⁸ is still living.

ii) Archie¹⁵ FLOYD (2971) is still living.

(e) Lillie Belle¹⁴ FLOYD (1448) was born on 2 Jan 1901.⁴⁸⁹ She was buried in 1903 at Pulaski County, GA.⁴⁹⁰ She died on 16 May 1903 aged 2.⁴⁹¹

(f) Gladys¹⁴ FLOYD (1437) was born on 21 Jul 1905.⁴⁹² She married Ellis MADDOX (1438) on 19 Jun 1932. As of 19 Jun 1932, her married name was MADDOX (1437).

i) Clinton¹⁵ FLOYD (4082)⁴⁹³ is still living.

(g) Rubye¹⁴ FLOYD (1439) was born on 22 Jul 1907.⁴⁹⁴ She married James F. BARLOW (1440) on 2 Oct 1927. As of 2 Oct 1927, her married name was BARLOW (1439).

i) Annie Carolyn¹⁵ BARLOW (3054)⁴⁹⁵ is still living.

ii) James Fulton¹⁵ BARLOW (3056)⁴⁹⁶ is still living.

iii) Margarete Jean¹⁵ BARLOW (3057)⁴⁹⁷ is still living.

iv) William Earl¹⁵ BARLOW (3058)⁴⁹⁸ is still living.

(h) James Herman¹⁴ FLOYD (1441) (There were six children in this family. Notes are unclear about them. I did the best I could. Notes say: "a daughter married Janes Evans. Jas, Herman Sadie Register 29 June 1969". I have no clue what this means, but include it in case it means something to a later searcher)⁴⁹⁹ was born in 1910.⁵⁰⁰ He married Martha HOLMES (3077) on 27 Oct 1929.⁵⁰¹ He died on 16 Sep 1975.⁵⁰²

i) Jane¹⁵ FLOYD (3081) (Died young) is still living.

ii) Giles H.¹⁵ FLOYD (3079) is still living.

iii) David Franklin¹⁵ FLOYD (3080) is still living.

iv) Joan¹⁵ FLOYD (3082) (Died young) is still living.

v) William A.¹⁵ FLOYD (3078) was born in 1940. He died on 14 Jul 1962.

(i) Paul Efford¹⁴ FLOYD (2969)⁵⁰³ was born on 24 Dec 1913.⁵⁰⁴ He married Willie CHURCHWELL (2991) on 29 Jul 1932.⁵⁰⁵ He married Katie KIRKPATRICK (2992) on 13 Aug 1949.⁵⁰⁶ He died on 3 Mar 1980 aged 66.⁵⁰⁷

(j) Woodrow W.¹⁴ FLOYD (1449) is still living.

i) Danny Ray¹⁵ FLOYD (3101)⁵⁰⁸ is still living.

⁴⁸²Floyd Family Headstone, MVW file, Margaret V. Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, Pinellas County, FL 33701; Bob Bridger, 2003.

⁴⁸³Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁸⁴Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*; Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*; Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁴⁸⁵Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁴⁸⁶Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁸⁷1920 Census.

⁴⁸⁸Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁸⁹Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Cemetery record give DOB as March 20 1901.

⁴⁹⁰Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁴⁹¹Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁴⁹²Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁹³Direct information taken from first person family knowledge. Not heresay or legend; Family information.

⁴⁹⁴Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁹⁵Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁹⁶Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁹⁷Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁹⁸Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁴⁹⁹Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰⁰Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰¹Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰²Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰³Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰⁴Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰⁵Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰⁶Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰⁷Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

- ii) Monteen¹⁵ FLOYD (3085) is still living.
- iii) Marie¹⁵ FLOYD (3089)⁵⁰⁹ is still living.
- iv) Linda¹⁵ FLOYD (3095)⁵¹⁰ is still living.
- (k) Walker¹⁴ FLOYD (1446) was born on 18 Jun 1915 He may be twin with Woodrow.⁵¹¹ He was born in 1916.⁵¹² He married Reba BENSON (1447) on 23 Dec 1940 They had no children.
- (l) Ralph¹⁴ FLOYD (1444) married Dorothy Wanetta DAVIS (4073).⁵¹³ He was born on 26 Feb 1923 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA.⁵¹⁴ He appeared on the census in 1930 at Bleckley County, GA.⁵¹⁵ He married Nellie BASNERAND (1445) on 19 Dec 1941.⁵¹⁶ He died on 9 Aug 1991 at FL aged 68.
 - i) Ellis Carlton¹⁵ FLOYD (4071)⁵¹⁷ is still living.
 - ii) Patrisia Caroline¹⁵ FLOYD (4072)⁵¹⁸ is still living.
 - iii) Margaret Ann¹⁵ FLOYD (4074)⁵¹⁹ was born on 6 Dec 1954.⁵²⁰ She died on 31 Jul 1987 aged 32.⁵²¹
 - iv) Andrew¹⁵ FLOYD (4075)⁵²² is still living.
- ii) Annie Letitia¹³ FLOYD (1236) (She was called "Aunt Sis" by the family)⁵²³ married Charlie NOBLES (1433). Her married name was NOBLES (1236). She was born in 1870.⁵²⁴ She appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵²⁵ She appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵²⁶ She appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁵²⁷ She died after 1947 at Bleckley County, GA. She was living with her brother at time of death. She was buried after 1947 at Bleckley County, GA.⁵²⁸
 - (a) Jesse Monroe¹⁴ NOBLES (2982)⁵²⁹ married Christine RELIFORD (2985) Notes say "Very little is known on this family. There are three children. Rose married Gerald Dunn April 25 1955, Geraldine married a Davis and Carl.⁵³⁰ He was born in 1895.⁵³¹ He married Odell DORSEY (2983) on 20 Jul 1919.⁵³² He married Annie Mae DENTON (2984) on 3 Nov 1932.⁵³³ He died on 1 Feb 1975.⁵³⁴
 - iii) Mary Anne Elizabeth (Babe)¹³ FLOYD (1237) was born on 19 Apr 1872 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵³⁵ She appeared on the Census in 1880.⁵³⁶ She was buried in 1892 at Bleckley County, GA.⁵³⁷

⁵⁰⁸ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁰⁹ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵¹⁰ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵¹¹ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵¹² 1930 Census; Census says he was 14 in 1930. Therefore is not twin with Woodrow.

⁵¹³ Jada Rotte, "Jada Rotti," e-mail message from jada rotti [hanz@suwanneevally.net] (unknown address) to Margot Woodrough, October 2004. Hereinafter cited as "Jada."

⁵¹⁴ 1930 Census; Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004.

⁵¹⁵ 1930 Census.

⁵¹⁶ Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004.

⁵¹⁷ Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004; Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004;

Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004.

⁵¹⁸ Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004; Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004;

Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004.

⁵¹⁹ Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004; Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004;

Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004.

⁵²⁰ Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004.

⁵²¹ Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004.

⁵²² Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004; Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004;

Jada Rotte, "Jada," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, October 2004.

⁵²³ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁵²⁴ 1880 Census.

⁵²⁵ 1870 Census; House # 870 (Lutitia age 3 ?).

⁵²⁶ 1880 Census; House #445.

⁵²⁷ 1920 Census; Shown living as a widow with her one son next door to her brother James Edward Floyd.

⁵²⁸ Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁵²⁹ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers;" Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵³⁰ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵³¹ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵³² Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵³³ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵³⁴ Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵³⁵ Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁵³⁶ 1880 Census; Living in house # 445 with parents.

⁵³⁷ Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Section 1 grave # 18.



She died on 6 Dec 1892 at Pulaski County, GA, aged 20.

iv) James Edward¹³ FLOYD (1238).



INTRODUCTION FROM A TALK GIVEN BY MVW AT FLOYD FAMILY REUNION

Perhaps one of the most thrilling moments we as individuals experience is finding for the first time a connection between ourselves and our extended family of ancestors. We seem to feel a sense of belonging, of permanence, of worth, of psychic satisfaction in knowing that we are part of an ancient genetic line, that some of our own personal quirks and foibles are shared by some distant relative in the past, and that those same happy or embarrassing quirks and foibles will be shared by another in the future. Oliver Wendell Holmes, the 19th century American writer, became enchanted with the origins of his own peculiarities and inclinations and finally settled upon this charming explanation:

"My character or nature is made up of infinite particles of inherited tendencies from my ancestors - a little seed of laziness came from this grandfather, some remote grandmother has stamped me with a fear of dogs and a love of horses; there may be in me a bit of outlawry from a pirate forefather, and a dash of piety from one who was a saint. My so-called particularities, my gestures, my ways and manners, I borrow them all, without exceptions. So everything in me passes on through my children. I am sewn between ancestry and posterity."

It is the nature of man to wonder why and for what purpose - to keep on trying in the face of enormous difficulty and sometimes to become despondent at the lack of answers to the questions. Perhaps a bit of reflection on being "sewn between ancestry and posterity" will ease the burden of "whys". Consider for a moment how important we are to our ancestors. They have never known us - in fact could only have guessed at us and yet without us they could not be linked to the future. Consider also that, hard as it may seem, each of us will one day be an ancestor for generations yet unborn. Having been given an awareness of our position between ancestry and posterity, we have an obligation to leave our descendants a proper record of ourselves, and the best starting point for the story is today. Let's look around the room today for we are all here descended from James Edward and Annie Holland Floyd. They are no longer here, but their children remain and the mark they made on Bleckley County Georgia remains a reminder of the individual worth of each of us.

Ed and Annie produced a normal farm family of twelve children seven of whom are here today. Let us begin to tell our story and leave our record by telling a bit about each of the Floyd kids here today.

First, there is Aunt Shug, Viola, and I won't tell you when she was born, but I believe it was before the automobile was invented and before the Wright Brothers flew at Kitty Hawk. She's seen a lot and is still going strong. She told a story about having to run away from home to get married because her parents did not approve of her husband, Lucian Berryhill. If any of you kids of today think your parents are tough, just talk with Aunt Shug. She'll understand.

Next is Uncle Buddy. Has anyone ever seen Uncle Buddy upset, angry or anything other than steady and reliable? I think he is one of those "saints" that Oliver Wendell Holmes mentioned in the little quote I read you. He is everyone's perfect grandpa.

Uncle Herschel is the seventh child of Ed and Annie Floyd. He grew up to be a politician of sorts. Back in the fifties he thought so much of the race for the governor of the state of Georgia that he entered his mule "Rufus" as a candidate. Guess you know what he thought of the competition for the position. Herschel is Jerry's father it is through Jerry's sons, Lance and Jason that the Floyd name will be carried into the 21st century. You can think of the next three children, Annette, Mary and LaVerne as the three musketeers of the Floyd family. Is there any adventure these three have not experienced either alone or as a trio? Annette and Mary are about to strike out for Egypt to see the pyramids. This is a follow-up to their recent expedition across the United States. One wonders what Ed Floyd would think of his two girls wandering across the globe? LaVerne has owned more houses, businesses and had more husbands than anyone else in the family. There's no need to reveal the girl's ages, except to note that they are all over sixty. If you young people among us do in your lifetime half of what these three do in one year, you are in for a big life.

Uncle Aaron is another steady male Floyd. He is probably best known for all the good looking women in his household. He has the most and the best looking females. Wouldn't Ed and Annie be amazed at their children if they could be here now?

We are here today to rekindle our friendships, to remember our heritage and to encourage interest in the family among our children. Don't forget that we are caught in the fabric of ancestry and posterity and without us the fabric would not be whole. That's reason enough for each of us to get out of bed each morning.

NOTE: in 1998 the three musketeers took a trip to Greece together and in 1999 Annette and Mary became computer literate. Not bad for eighty year old ladies.

James Edward Floyd known by all as Ed Floyd was the son of a Civil War veteran who never owned his own land. His father, Shadrack Floyd, grew up knowing a grandfather named Amos Kinchen Floyd and all the many aunts, uncles and cousins associated with the ever-expanding Floyd family of Pulaski County, Georgia. Throughout his childhood he heard stories told and retold of the family's arrival in Georgia from North Carolina, but like most children he found it difficult to comprehend any period of time predating his grandfather Amos. Somehow, history seemed completely centered around his grandfather who was sixty years old when James was born and must have seemed quite ancient. It is easy to see how James Floyd could assume that this old man must have been the original settler from North Carolina who brought the family to Georgia. When he was approached in the mid 1950's and asked to contribute a family history for publication in the story of Pulaski/Bleckley County, no doubt he thought it was quite accurate to state that his grandfather, Amos Kinchen was the original pioneer from North Carolina who arrived to settle the newly opened Indian lands the fall between the Ocmulgee and Oconee Rivers in Georgia. James was wrong about his family. His ancestors from North Carolina was in fact one of the earliest settlers of the new Georgia County of Pulaski, Frederick and Mourning Floyd.

Travel frequently dictates the breadth of a mind and imagination. The life of a middle Georgia farmer in the beginning of the twentieth century was restricted to the distance that could be covered round trip in one day from the home place. A farmer seldom spent a night away from home for the animals needed constant and daily attention. Without access to television and only a local newspaper for information, it is not surprising that James Edward Floyd, would have a restricted view of his roots. Lacking education and the broad vision of travel, it is most likely that he did not have a complete awareness of the intricate web of people full of courage, foresight and even wealth whose very lives had brought him to Georgia. Certainly, "Ed" never knew that his third great grandfather, Abraham Bass, was a large land owner in North Carolina, and certainly he had no comprehension of the long journey from North Carolina that his great grandparents, Mourning Bass and Frederick Floyd made when they embarked for the "new frontier" of Georgia. One memory, however, was very clear to him. The Civil War had been such a disruptive force that the stories of its effect were widely known to Ed. He knew of the suffering the war brought to his family and of the physical and mental cruelty of the war. He told his children how, when the war ended, his father, Shadrach was left a prisoner in Greensboro, North Carolina with only one means of transportation home, his own feet. Ed Floyd may have lacked detailed knowledge of his distant origins, but the parts of his history that he did know left an indelible mark. He had known the effect of the war's impoverishment and of his own father's lack of land and a mother's early death. This knowledge left him with a strong hunger for a better future. He was living in an America of visions and hope and dreams could be as large as the July sky. The past taught James Edward Floyd to want land of his own, proper equipment and a good family strong with discipline. His first priority would be a suitable wife and he found her in Annie Jane Holland who he called the "prettiest girl in the county".

In marrying Annie he knew that he was getting a prize for not only was she pretty, but patient and strong as well. Their meeting was a natural product of an earlier courtship between Ed's brother, Arch Floyd and Annie's older sister, Margaret Juliette. The older couple married on November 28, 1897 and in the early spring on March 27, 1898 just as

the piney woods filled with dogwood, Ed and Annie were married, set up housekeeping and birthed the first of their twelve children in March of 1900.

The start of the twentieth century was a grand new beginning for the Floyd family. It was a time to break with the landlessness of the past and through hard work and perseverance to enter the modern world. Annie and Ed Floyd's first child, a daughter, was named Viola, but called "Shug" was born with the new century. Perhaps this sweet name was conferred by a doting grandmother or Aunt who found her "sweet as sugar". Indeed this was a special child whose birth preceded the automobile, the airplane, electricity, the telephone, television, radio and even the right of women to vote. This was a child who would come to represent the twentieth century for the Floyd family for she would live through all of it ----- and in her lifetime she would see men go to the moon, open her own business, defy her parents and marry a man for love, not support and always with a grace and patience that reflected her name.

If Viola was the first of the new century, James Edward Floyd and his wife Annie were the last of the old one. They were the last to use a mule for ploughing, the last to pay for everything in barter or cash, to live primarily from their land and the last to remember the south when it seemed the an outpost of civilization. Their children would see the development of the south as a major region of the country responsible for a huge portion of the economic growth and heir to the blessings and responsibilities of the 20th century. Atlanta would explode into an international city connected by air with all the capitals of the world and a Mecca for businesses seeking to reap the benefits of climate, topography, life style and opportunity for economic growth. Indeed its very history prepared the South for its rise to stardom in the final third of the 20th century. For just as Annie and Ed Floyd sometimes burned the stubble in their fields in order to add freshness and vigor to the plantings of the following season, so too did Sherman's burning of Atlanta add the enrichment and renewed vigor of a fresh start to the town. The new Atlanta grew as a young lady determined to develop beyond the provincial town of her childhood. She used the chaos and disruption of her formative years to forge a character both beautiful and progressive. Looking back was not her style - only the future mattered. It was the stress of the past, the loss and the hope that caused the new south as personified in Atlanta to flower into full maturity as the century closed. In fact, a new "Miss America" was chosen on the day in October of 1990 when the announcement came from far-away Japan that "the International Olympic Committee has chosen for the 1996 Olympics... (and there followed the longest five second pause in the history of the city). ATLANTA, GEORGIA!". The town and the south roared with joy as though all of the past had been directed to this very moment and this very goal. Atlanta would be a good home to Annette's children and grandchildren.

Annie and Ed Floyd like many of their neighbors were part of this past and their immediate descendants would live to savor the satisfactions of goals reached, battles won and the endless possibilities for a future of enlightenment. Indeed the adventures and development of the twelve Floyd children from Bleckley County, Georgia parallels and mirrors the developments that were happening to their south. Watch the children grow and you watch the South grow as well. Both started the century as barefoot country kids who walked to school. In 1990 a reunion of the family at the home place of Annie and Ed revealed well-dressed, educated adults with sophisticated tastes and a vast array of travel experiences. Annie Floyd seldom left Bleckley County except for one notable trip to Washington, D.C.. where Ed and Annie Floyd proudly posed in their "Sunday best" in front of the United States Capitol. Her children would visit China, Egypt, Europe and the Orient - places that Annie barely knew. Just as the South started the 20th century as a backwater area of barefoot dirt roads and matured into the glorious adult of Atlanta, so too did the Floyd family blossom from the soil of Georgia. Listen to the tale of the Floyd children as their fortunes will put flesh on the bones of the South. Just as Frederick and Mourning Floyd led the family from North Carolina to the new hope of Georgia at the beginning of the nineteenth century, so too would the J.E. Floyd family lead the way into the new world order of the twenty first century. The twentieth century was a gestation period in which great growth takes place in a hidden environment and then suddenly breaks through the shell and erupts full-grown into the world. This growth period took place in a small segment of Bleckley County in Georgia. Where a look at a map dated 1908 shows Ed Floyd living in the very place where his home stands still in 1992. The land in the early days did not belong to Ed for he was a tenant of James Smith. Being the son of a landless veteran meant that Ed needed time to accumulate capital to buy a farm. And, bit by bit he acquired land until circumstances improved enough that the old house could be replaced not once but twice. Typical of the time, Ed Floyd cut the lumber for the new home right on the place and allowed it to cure in the barn for a year before starting construction. True to his thrifty nature, he did not build until he had saved the materials and the cash for the new house. When construction began, the family moved down the road to a little one room house. Soon all the remains of the original home were removed except for the well, and like the growth of the spring crops, the new home sprang quickly from the ground complete with wrap-around porch, two swings, high

ceilings, a patterned wood floor in the parlor, wide center hall and a spacious kitchen. The windows were large for summer ventilation and the whole structure nestled under a tin roof that gave a merry sound in a rain storm. What a palace this was! In fact, it was one of the best homes in the county. Later additions of a pond for Annie the devoted fisherman, the smokehouse for curing bacon, an outdoor kitchen, several barns and an outhouse made the place close to self-sufficient. Pecan trees shaded the back and provided winter delicacies, and across the front of the house were planted four live oak trees named Shug, Buddy, Tina and Maureen. (A visit to the "home place" in the summer of 1992 with Shug (Viola) revealed that only the Shug oak still stands.).





. He was born on 25 Mar 1875 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵³⁸ He married Annie Jane HOLLAND (1270), daughter of Jesse Jasper HOLLAND (1268) and Mary Orliffie BRYANT (1269), on 27 Mar 1898 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵³⁹ He appeared on the census in 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁴⁰

⁵³⁸ 1880 Census, House # 445.

⁵³⁹ Pulaski County Marriages.

⁵⁴⁰ 1900 Census.

He appeared on the census in 1910 at Pulaski County, GA.
He purchased land on 18 Dec 1916 at Bleckely County, GA, Grandpa Floyd (James E.) bought the property (where Wayne's house now stands.) from J. E. Smith on 12-18-1916.

He appeared on the census in 1920 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁴¹
He was a member of church in 1950 at Mt. Horeb, Empire, Dodge County, GA, He and Annie were original members of Mt. Horeb Baptist church.

He is discussed in the newspaper for Cochran, Georgia dated Thursday, September 22, 1960 telling of his death. Funeral services for James Edward Floyd, 86, who died Monday morning in the Taylor Memorial Hospital following an illness of several weeks, were held Tuesday afternoon at the First Baptist Church of Cochran. The services were conducted by Elder Ben Lord and Edward J.W. Brantley. Burial was in the Cedar Hill Cemetery. Mr. Floyd was a lifelong resident of Bleckley County, the son of the late Shadrick and Liza Davis Floyd. He was a member of the Mt. Horeb Primitive Baptist Church and was a retired farmer. He is survived by his wife, Mrs. Annie Holland Floyd; five sons, Arthur J., Albert, Herschel and Jay Floyd all of Cochran and Aaron Floyd of Hawkinsville; seven daughters, Mrs. Viola Berryhill and Mrs. Hassen El Khadem of San Diego, California, Mrs. C. E. Rosenberger of Jacksonville, Florida, Mrs. Maurine Berryhill and Mrs. Frank Richardson of Cochran, Mrs. Annette Vollmer of Washington, D.C. and Mrs. LaVerne Dykes of Macon. Twenty-four grandchildren and twelve great grandchildren. Active pallbearers were Joe Lyles, Jr., James Berryhill, James Hamlin, Joseph Collins, Edward Wimberly and Wallace Williams. Honorary pallbearers were, Rufus Coody, Jr., Bob Scarborough, William Smith, Clifford Davis, Willie Davis, James Barlow, Luther Benson, Jessie Davis, Henry Kirkpatrick, C. M. Thompson, Morgan Floyd, Joe Floyd, Walker Davis, J. A. Webb, Leonard Ross, Robert Smith, Sam Smith, J.T. Smith, James Smith, Charlie Evans, Johnn Floyd, Jack Barlow, Henry Simpson and T. L. Williams. Fisher Funeral Home was in charge of arrangements. in 1960 at Bleckely County, GA. He was buried in 1960 at Bleckley County, GA, Buried in the Floyd plot at Cedar Hill Cemetery.⁵⁴²

He died on 19 Sep 1960 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 85. In 2002 Annette Floyd Kaplan was asked about "Bailey's Park" and the following is her response.
Bailey's Park: My first recollection of Bailey's Park as a child is that is where Papa went on election day to collect poll taxes from the voters and help run the election and see that no one voted who was not eligible to vote. Bailey's Park as I remember consisted of two or three houses, one of which was a nice two story house made of dressed lumber, as opposed to rough sawn boards which was the normal type of construction. and a small country store where the precinct for the elections for the Limestone community were held. Until our new house was built the house at Bailey's Park was the best one in the community and Uncle Archie and Aunt Julietts was second best (it actually had wall paper in at least one of the bedrooms) I remember because I heard them talk about how you could not get rid of bedbugs with wallpaper on the walls for you could not scald down the walls and kill them. Colored people papered their walls with newspapers and whatever else they could get their hands on in order to help keep the cold wind from blowing through the cracks. Those houses were always alive with bedbugs. I do not know who the original owners of Baileys Park were but judging by the surroundings they must have been well to do. At the bottom of the hill behind the main house, was a swimming pool which was fed by many boiling springs and the water was icy cold and would turn your lips blue in a very short time. There were two dressing rooms at one end of the pool—one for males and one for females. So it must have been some kind of public recreation area. The first people I remember living there were the Newmans'—renters—one of their daughters, Lola May married our cousin Joe Floyd, brother of Morgan Floyd. A few years later after Uncle Archie died and lost his farm, Aunt Juliette and her family moved into the big house and Bud and Cora Lee moved into one of the smaller ones and Efford and his wife moved into another one of the small houses. It was during this time that I swam at the pool. Shug would drive out from town in the afternoon and we would all go to the pool. Prior to that time we swam in the Jackhole (located beyond what would become Annie's Pond).

Now, where is Bailey's Park--stand on Wayne's front porch and face Annie's house - go down the road to the right about a mile until the road deadends at the Chicken road at Limestone Church. Turn left and go about the distance of three or four blocks and on the left is what was known as Bailey's Park. (You went there when you went to church with Gwen and Cookie.) I do not know where the two-grave cemetery is. I am sending a copy of this to Bob in hopes he will query his mother and see if she may shed any further light on who owned the Park and about Shack Vickers and his family.

⁵⁴¹1920 Census.

⁵⁴²Cedar Hill Cemetery, Cemetery, 2003, MVW file, Margaret V. Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, Pinellas County, FL 33701.

(a) Viola (Shug)⁵⁴³ FLOYD (1517) was born on 20 Mar 1900 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census of 1900 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁴³ She married Lucian Osmond BERRYHILL (1518), son of James Thomas BERRYHILL (1541) and Alcy Ann [Sannie] COODY (1542), on 29 Jun 1918. As of 29 Jun 1918, her married name was BERRYHILL (1517). She lived in 1990 at 767 North Avenue, Macon, Georgia 31211. The 20th century was only three months old when "Shug" Floyd was born to Annie and Ed Floyd. She represents the beginning of the generation in which the hopes and dreams of all the preceeding generations of Floyds, Basses and Hollands would come to fulfillment. For the first time there would be time for education, travel and creative leisure. The old way of living that meant living from crop to crop, moving when the land wore out and depending on the whims of nature were easing away. The 20th century would define "freedom" far more broadly than any time before. If ever there was a "free" spirit it rested in Viola Floyd. The first child is always special in a family, and in the case of a rural family it becomes even more magnified. The first female child is destined to become her mother's prime assistant. She would grow up quickly and learn early to depend upon herself for, as her mother's surrogate, she would be delegated many household chores and babysitting duties as the family grew. Viola was particularly suited to this role for she had a quiet determined way. However, beneath this facade of early maturity was a soul flapping its wings of freedom almost as though it could feel the winds of change blowing across the new century.

From an early age she loved to go down to the swampy area just north of the house and watch the mules walk endlessly in circles around the cane mill as her father fed stalks of sugar cane into the squeezing machine from which oozed the sweet liquid soon to become syrup. The crushed cane stalks gradually formed a thick mat underfoot adding to the exotic atmosphere of the cool swampy lowland with its mysterious Cypress trees growing in the mirror-black limpid water. The trees appeared as a crowd of solemn old men grey bearded with Spanish moss that hung almost to their knees. This place with the dark shadows that led endlessly into another world was a place for fantasy, for dreaming of other worlds that lay deep in the future.

Childhood play for all country children was an exercise in imagination for the lack of dolls meant that often it was necessary to "play house" by drawing the floor plan of a house in the sandy dust and breaking twigs to represent the members of the family. Three miles south of Viola's home was a piney wood with a turpentine still. When she could she stopped by the still with flowers collected from the garden and ever so carefully she dipped each flower into the fragrant sticky resin gently coating each petal as she watched the flower become frozen forever in the crystallizing sap. And when sheer youthful energy engulfed her there was always time for climbing to the top of the nearest sawdust piles which rose like giant any hills near the saw mill. Once at the top there was the thrilling leap out into nowhere and then the feathery landing in the pillow of sawdust. Life with its rounds of family and farm chores punctuated by times of childhood play and dreaming was the same as it had been for many generations before and seemed sufficient.

Certainly it was ample until Viola met her future husband. Lucian Berryhill lived about five miles away in the town of Cochran and no doubt they met at school or church. What began as a girlhood infatuation would develop into a serious relationship and would serve as the opening through which Viola's spirit would fly into the vast future of the new century. She was barely fourteen when World War 1 began and certainly could not know the effect that this event so far away would have on her life. Soon Lucian was called for military service and left with Shug's promise to marry in his heart.

For many the war was a one way trip to Europe, but Lucian returned although under circumstances that seemed impossible to comprehend. Lucian's father, a man who had never before left the State of Georgia, received word that he must travel to Baltimore, Maryland to meet his returning son. He recalled for the family that when he entered the enormous railroad terminal he felt as if he must have passed into heaven for nowhere else could he imagine a building so large. It was not heaven, rather more like hell when he learned that Lucian was blinded by mustard gas. Shug was shocked, angered and bewildered by the news, but her affection was undiminished and she remained determined to marry Lucian as she had promised. One afternoon as she was helping her mother cut fabric for a new dress she announced that she intended to marry Lucian. From days of discussion, she knew that her parents were against her marriage to a blind man, but it was too late to contain the spirit and heart that had caught the whiff of freedom that blew in the air of a world transformed by war. Nevertheless, it was shocking when Annie Floyd lay down the scissors she was using on Shug's new dress and walked from the room

⁵⁴³ 1900 Census; Shown living with parents as family # 42.

without a word leaving her daughter to finish alone a garment that would eventually become her wedding dress.

Shug's finished the dress alone and on the wedding day with no respite from her parents opposition, prepared to walk the two miles to her friends house for the wedding. Almost unbelievably, it rained so hard on that day in late June that she was not able to get to the wedding. The disappointment only fueled her determination as she became stronger yet for having withstood this newest set-back. Finally, on June 29, 1918 Viola Floyd, thoroughly modern woman that she had become, married Lucian Berryhill. When it was over she reflected that at eighteen, her marriage was a full four years later than her mother's marriage to the landless Ed Floyd at age fourteen.

Marriage to a blind man meant that Viola would be the chief wage earner for her family and since the automobile had entered society, she would need to learn to drive a car. Lucian taught her to drive. She sat behind the wheel and followed his directions. At age 90 she has a lifetime of driving experience and a reputation for having been a fast and carefree driver. One of her sons remarked that she "drives like a blind man taught her".

Necessity and spirit meant that Viola Berryhill would be the first of a long line of liberated women in the Floyd family. Previously, the word career was synonymous motherhood, now it meant "dream what you are meant to be and do it". Shug looked around to find a niche and found the place right on the doorstep.

The year 1920 was a census year. The recording of the census has always been important to the citizens of any county for it creates a record of who lived where and did what, but when Viola took a job as a taker of the census for the businesses of Cochran, she did so out of need, not out of a sense of the importance of the task. After only a few days of taking the census she realized that there were opportunities in the hairdressing business. With the courage of the daughter who defied her parents marriage wishes she enrolled in trade school, earned her license, opened a shop and quickly became the first of the family to be a business woman. The world would never again be the same.

Viola Berryhill's encounter with census taking is cause to think about this national counting that is done every ten years. It has been regularly applied since begun in 1790. Records have been faithfully accumulated by census takers every ten years and stored away in archives. With the coming of microfilm since World War II these records have become accessible to the public. Now, those records so carefully handwritten in the 19th century are available through technology to the 20th century. They are a window through which the future can look back at its past and see an image. A look at the census for 1850 is almost like standing face to face with the families of the past. You see their names, ages and relationship detailed on the pages and you know that the census enumerator stood face to face with these people asking for the information that is on the page in front of you. Then you skip to the next set of names or go back a few sets of names and realize that you are encountering not only your own ancestors, but their friends and neighbors as well. One wants to yell "hello, how are you? Do you know I'm here? Do you know I care?", but you are a ghost they cannot see. You see them, but they do not know you. Will the ghost of the future look back at our census of 1970, 1980, 1990 and wave at us? Preserving our stories and passing them along is our wave to the future. Best of all, we can look back and gather stories from the past, stories from those who forgot to wave and by including the past with our own story we can make a giant wave to the future with words of Bon Voyage. Just as the spaceship Voyager carries a gold disk full of remembrances of earth destined for far galaxies of the universe, so we too can form and send our own little gold disk to the future to let them know that we care and to remind them that without us they would still be cosmic dust.

Viola did not think of this as she followed her soaring spirit. She just followed her heart, but that is the remarkable thing - all alone and undirected she took a giant leap for her whole family. For this she needs to be remembered. On the occasion of her ninetieth birthday she was fooled into attending a surprise party. Friends told her that they wanted her to accompany them to an all day "sing" when in fact they were taking her to a party. How lovely that an almost forgotten pass time of a "sing" was the excuse for a party to honor this thoroughly modern woman - a bit of the past mixed nicely with the present. In Jun 1999 At a family gathering on the occasion of her brother's funeral she was asked if she could remember the birthdates of her eleven brothers and sisters. She could and did recite them perfectly. She is ninety nine years old! On 18 Mar 2000 Viola Berryhill celebrated her 100th birthday with about one hundred family and friends who gathered at the Luna Lake Lodge at the Warner Robins Air Force Base. Nieces, grandchildren, grand nieces and sisters came from as far away as Mexico, California, and Pittsburgh. Viola was in great shape except the morning of her party she woke up blind. It scared everyone to death, but the problem was finally diagnosed as a misplaced contact lens. Even at the age of 100 she was inserting her own lens.

The countryside was just awakening to spring with Redbud in full bloom and Dogwood starting their emergence. A highlight of the party was the showing of a family reunion video made at the old home place in 1947. The Woodrough family visited the old home place after the party and spent time touring the fields with Wayne Floyd. It was quite a treat for Page and Steve and their spouses Elena and Mark. Obnitiary of she was Viola F. Berryhill -COCHRAN - Funeral services for Mrs. Viola F. Berryhill, 102, of Cochran, who died Monday, June 24, 2002 in Crisp Regional Hospital in Cordele, will be held Thursday, June 27, 2002 at 3P.M. in the Chapel of Fisher Funeral Home with Elder Raybon Lord officiating. -Mrs. Berryhill was a native of Bleckley County, the daughter of the late J.E. and Ann Holland Floyd and was the widow of Lucian O. Berryhill, Sr. She was a former member of Mt. Horeb Primitive Baptist Church and was a member of Oak Grove Primitive Baptist Church. She was a Retired Cosmetologist. -Survivors include: 2 sons and daughters-in-law, Lucian O. and Bessie Lou Berryhill of Cordele and Bobby G. and Sue Berryhill of Newnan; 3 sisters, Annett Kaplan of Macon, Mary El Khadem of San Diego, CA and LaVerne Dykes of Macon; 1 brother, Aaron Floyd of Hawkinsville; 6 grandchildren and 9 great-grandchildren. -Family will meet friends at Fisher Funeral Home Wednesday night from 7:00 until 9:00P.M. and will be at the residence of Mr. and Mrs. Wayne Floyd, Limestone Road, Cochran. -Fisher Funeral Home has charge of arrangements. on 24 Jun 2002. She died on 24 Jun 2002 at Cordele aged 102 She died at 3:30PM after suffering a massive heart attach last night.

Here is a note that MVW wrote to her sisters, Annette and LaVerne
My heart is broken for you. Even though we knew it was coming it is still something we are unprepared to accept. I put my arms around both of you. You have both been so steadfast and loving and I am so very happy that Annette and even Becky was able to be with her one more time. Aunt Shug is an icon of the family as is Bob for all the time he has put into her care. She has been a part of my life since I was a baby. I know she was the same for both of you. Her passing is a terrible loss, but more than that, her life was a wonderful gain for so many people. She lived a good and useful life and showered love on so many people. It was a life lived to its fullest potential. Who can ask for more than that? Therefore, we must rejoice and be glad. We must celebrate a job well done. It is not a time for sadness, but rather a time for joy and reaffirmation. She would not want sadness. Lets remember her with great joy. My favorite story is the one told by Bob. We all know what a terrible driver she was. Bob once said, "you can tell she was taught to drive by a blind man." Lets each tell those "Shug Stories." I want to be there for the funeral. Please let me know the plans as soon as possible. Love and great hugs for both of you. Margot. She was buried on 27 Jun 2002 at Coody Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA, Cemetery is located west of Limestone Road behind the old Berryhill home. Note that the small abandoned home across the street was where Viola lived when she was first married.⁵⁴⁴

- i) Wallace Edward¹⁵ BERRYHILL (1543) was born on 14 Jul 1920 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He died on 31 Aug 1921 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA, aged 1.
- ii) Lucian Osmond¹⁵ BERRYHILL (1544) is still living.
- iii) James Floyd¹⁵ BERRYHILL (1548) was born on 14 Jun 1927 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He died on 7 Aug 1928 aged 1.
- iv) Bobby Gene¹⁵ BERRYHILL (1546) is still living.
- (b) Arthur Edward (Buddy)¹⁴ FLOYD (1519) was born on 31 Aug 1902 at Pulaski County, GA. He married Trudie MC DANIEL (1520), daughter of Thomas Hartley MC DANIEL (2119) and Samantha Jane FAIRCLOTH (2322), on 24 Dec 1933. He lived in 1992 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He was buried in 1999 at Cedar Hill, Bleckley County, GA.⁵⁴⁵ He died on 8 Jun 1999 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA, aged 96.
 - i) Morris¹⁵ FLOYD (1565) is still living.
 - ii) Willodeen¹⁵ FLOYD (1567) is still living.
 - iii) Wayne¹⁵ FLOYD (1568) is still living.
- (c) Tina Lee¹⁴ FLOYD (1521) was born on 14 Nov 1904 at Pulaski County, GA. She was employed by Tina left the farm and went to live in town with her sister Viola (Shug) and Lucian Berryhill. She got a job as the telephone operator. When a customer called "central" it was Tina who they reached. Tina's cousin, Manila became a teacher and she and her older sister went to live in Jacksonville. Tina borrowed \$500. from Shug and Lucian and went to Jacksonville as well and took a business course. It was here that she met Kelly Rosenberger. circa 1921 at Jacksonville, Duval, FL. She married Carl Edward ROSENBERGER (2822) on 30 Oct 1933 at Jacksonville, Duval, FL.

⁵⁴⁴unknown author, *Directions to the Coody Cemetery*. (No place: no publisher).

⁵⁴⁵Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

As of 30 Oct 1933, her married name was ROSENBERGER (1521). She died on 26 Jan 1979 at Jacksonville, Duval, FL, aged 74. Obituary of she was Tina Floyd Rosenberg died Friday in Jacksonville after a brief illness. The funeral mass will be celebrated at St. Matthews Catholic Church with burial at Cochran City Cemetery on 27 Jan 1979 at Jacksonville, Duval, FL.

Tina Lee Floyd matured to be a sophisticated image of her mother. With her hair pulled straight back, the same full face and the generous figure, she was what a southerner might call the "spitting image" of her mother. Tina was different in temperament though. She had the fiery temperament of her father with a bit of "Queen Victoria" thrown in. She was a woman of ambition and possessed of a huge imagination. Even at the time of her death at age 75 in 1979 she still retained a bit of the "little girl". Her last Christmas was spent in the hospital and even then she fantasized about going home to see the Christmas Tree. Christmas had always been magical for her, and she delighted in making charming hand-painted ornaments for family members.

In her lifetime Tina crocheted enough stitches to circle the globe several times. There is hardly a family member who does not own one of her caps fashioned in her colorful mix of yarns. She was never without a project and even when at work she would frequently insert her French conversation tapes into the dictaphone machine in order to spend a few moments practicing. Her room at home was full of magazines and projects waiting for completion.

She loved beautiful jewelry and wore it like a queen. She more than any other family member cared about the history of the Floyd family and many stories and facts would have been lost without her active imagination and curiosity.

A visit to Tina's house was like a visit with royalty for she seemed to have all the finer things of life. She had beautiful china, crystal, silver and even a silver hairbrush.

Doing dishes at her house was a special treat for the china cabinet had a wonderful odor of cedar-safeness about it. Things put into that cabinet seemed sure to be valuable and cherished. And, most wonderful of all was the bell under the carpet of the dining room just near Tina's chair. It was used for the incredible luxury of summoning the maid!

i) Floyd Edward¹⁵ ROSENBERGER (1694) was born on 14 Jun 1945 at Jacksonville, Duval, FL. He lived in 1990 at Jacksonville, Duval, FL. He died on 5 Feb 2006 at Duval, FL, aged 60 **Rosenberger, Floyd Edward** - ROSENBERGER - Floyd Edward, 60, passed away 02/05/2006. GREENLAWN FUNERAL HOME.....

Published in the Florida Times-Union on 2/11/2006.

(d) Vera Maurine¹⁴ FLOYD (1523). For sweetness and love there is no other word than Maureen the fourth child of Annie and Ed Floyd. She always was sunshine and happiness and within three days of her final illness she was very active in planning the Floyd family reunion. She always seemed to be doing things for others and was well known by all the people of Cochran because for years she worked at Lyles Department Store. Toward the end of her life she accomplished a cherished dream of constructing her dream home. She chose the lot and supervised the building of her perfect spot. How lovely that she, who had spent so much time making others feel good, would have this opportunity to express herself and in spite of serious illness she lived in her new home for many years enjoying well the time she had so richly earned. It was entirely appropriate that her final kindness was the organization of a Thanksgiving family reunion for the Floyd Family in the Bi-Centennial year of 1976. At the party she was the picture of health and yet within two days she entered the last phase of her illness and after six months in the hospital and suffering the removal of a leg, she died on March 17, 1977. At a subsequent family reunion held in 1986 her grandson Russell created a videotape record of the family. What a wonder it would be to have this type of videotape of the distant past. She was also known as Maurine FLOYD (1523). She was born on 9 Nov 1906 at Pulaski County, GA. She married Linder Rinaldo BERRYHILL (1524), son of James Thomas BERRYHILL (1541) and Alcy Ann [Sannie] COODY (1542), on 3 Dec 1922.⁵⁴⁶ As of 3 Dec 1922, her married name was BERRYHILL (1523). She died on 17 Mar 1977 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA, aged 70. Obituary of she was Funeral services were held at 3:00 in the southside Baptist church. Burial was in the Coody Family Cemetery. Mathis Funeral Home was in charge of arrangements. on 23 Mar 1977 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. She was buried in 1977 at Bleckley County, GA, Buried at Coody-Berryhill Cemetery according to her grandson Russell.

i) Robert Calvin¹⁵ BERRYHILL (1578) was born on 4 Jan 1924 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He married Katie Naomi WHITE (1579), daughter of William Morgan WHITE (2150) and Ella Nora FENNELL (2147), on 7 May 1948.

⁵⁴⁶Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

He lived in 1990 at 704 9th Street, Cochran, GA. He was employed in 1990 at Dry Cleaning, Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He died on 26 Jul 2004 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 80. A message from Russell Davidson announced his death: Uncle Calvin passed away at about 9 pm last night. He has had a rough year, spending several weeks in the Medical Center in Macon. He's been home from the hospital about a month and a half. He's been going to "rehab" weekly, to help him gain strength and walk better. He had even been to the doctor yesterday afternoon. Greg said he seemed to be weaker, since Saturday. Home Health was supposed to come today, to start looking after him.

Greg had put him in bed about 8:30. He heard him struggling to breathe, shortly before 9pm. He tried to help, but he was quickly gone. Russell Davidson.⁵⁴⁷ Obituary of he was Calvin Berryhill -COCHRAN - Services for Calvin Berryhill, 80, who died Monday are Thursday at 11A.M. at Southside Baptist Church. Burial is in Pulaski-Bleckley Memorial Gardens. -Mr. Berryhill, born in Bleckley County, was owner of Calvin's Cleaners. He was an WWII Army Veteran, Mason and former Cochran City Councilman and Mayor Pro-tem. He was a deacon at Southside Baptist Church. -Survivors are two sons, Greg Berryhill and Philip Berryhill both of Cochran. -Donations may be made to Southside Church Building Fund, 615 Jessup St., Cochran, GA 31014. -The family is at the Berryhill residence 704 Ninth St. and will greet friends from 7:00 until 9:00P.M. on 27 Jul 2004 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA.

ii) Vera Wynelle⁵⁴⁸ BERRYHILL (1574). Vera Wynelle BERRYHILL (1574) lived at Mrs. Wynelle B. Gardner, Rt. 1 Box 480, Malgene Dr., Cochran, GA, 31014. She was employed at Secretary WRAFB. She was born on 12 Jul 1925 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. She married Grady Lee DAVIDSON (1580), son of Winston Winfield DAVIDSON (2132) and Dora REID (2133), in 1946. As of 1946, her married name was DAVIDSON (1574). She and Grady Lee DAVIDSON (1580) were divorced in 1953. She married John Silas GARDNER (1575), son of James Henry GARDNER (2130) and Louetta SAWYER (2131), on 14 Nov 1953 at GA. As of 14 Nov 1953, her married name was GARDNER (1574). She lived in 1990 at Rt. 1 Box 117-G5, Cochran, Georgia 31014. She died on 6 Jun 2000 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA, aged 74. She died after a six year fight with ovarian cancer.⁵⁴⁸ She was buried on 10 Jun 2000 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. She was buried at the Coody-Berryhill Cemetery.⁵⁴⁹

iii) Charles⁵⁵⁰ BERRYHILL (1680) was born on 21 Dec 1931 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He married Marlene JONES (3104) on 1 Dec 1956.⁵⁵⁰ He married Shirley COOPER (1681), daughter of Vance COOPER (2122) and Myrtice ALLEN (2123), on 18 Oct 1973.⁵⁵¹ He lived in 1990 at Rt. 2 Box 432, Cochran, Georgia, 31014. Obituary of he was Charles (Smiley) Berryhill -COCHRAN - Funeral services for Mr. Charles (Smiley) Berryhill, 70, of Cochran, who died June 25, 2002 at his residence, will be held Thursday, June 27, 2002 at 11A.M. in the Chapel of Fisher Funeral Home with Rev. George Smith, Rev. Ronnie Powell and Rev. Jeff Cummings officiating. Burial will be in Coody Cemetery. -Mr. Berryhill was a life long resident of Bleckley County, the son of the late Linder R. and Maurine F. Berryhill. He was a member of Limestone Baptist Church and was a retired truck driver with Lumber Transport. He was an active 30 year member of Cochran Chapter of AA. He was a veteran of the United States Army. He was preceded in death by a sister, Wynelle B. Garner. -Survivors include: wife, Shirley C. Berryhill of Cochran; 1 son, Herschel Wade Belflower of Eastman; 2 daughters, Sheila Paulsen of Hawkinsville and Charlotte Belflower of Tucson, AZ; 1 brother, Calvin Berryhill of Cochran; 2 grandchildren, Haleigh Paulsen of Hawkinsville and Brandi Fordham of Perry. -Family will meet friends at Fisher Funeral Home Wednesday night from 7:00 until 9:00P.M. and may be contacted at the Berryhill residence, Eastman Highway, Cochran. -Fisher Funeral Home has charge of arrangements. on 25 Jun 2002 at Bleckley County, GA. He died on 25 Jun 2002 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 70. He was buried on 27 Jun 2002 at Coody Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA.

(e) Ruth Lillian⁵⁵² FLOYD (1525) was born on 9 Jan 1909 at Pulaski County, GA. She married Frank C. RICHARDSON (1526), son of (---) RICHARDSON (3535) and Letitia (---) (3692), on 17 Jan 1926.⁵⁵² As of 17 Jan 1926, her married name was RICHARDSON (1525). She died on 22 Aug 1969 aged 60.⁵⁵³ Ruth Floyd was a

⁵⁴⁷Family information.

⁵⁴⁸Family information.

⁵⁴⁹Family information.

⁵⁵⁰Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁵¹Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁵²Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁵³Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

giving person. She was generous and kind It is likely that she never traveled far from her life in Pulaski County. Her time was spent as the cook in the elementary school where no doubt her friendly outlook on life ideally suited her for the job.

i) Betty Ruth¹⁵ RICHARDSON (2989) married Blackie ALIFF (2990).⁵⁵⁴ Her married name was ALIFF (2989).

ii) Robert Edwin¹⁵ RICHARDSON (1592) is still living.

iii) Shirley Ann¹⁵ RICHARDSON (2986) married Perry SASSER (2987).⁵⁵⁵ Her married name was SASSER (2986). She was born on 25 Oct 1943 at GA.⁵⁵⁶ She died on 25 Jun 1982 at Bleckley County, GA., aged 38.⁵⁵⁷

(f) James Albert¹⁴ FLOYD (1527) was born on 27 May 1912 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He married Lillie Mae SMITH (1528) on 12 Oct 1940 at ., Bleckley County, GA.⁵⁵⁸ He died on 26 Mar 1975 aged 62.⁵⁵⁹ James Albert Floyd looked less like the Floyds than most. His hair was jet black and his features sharp. Early in his marriage he lived in the oldest house in the county. The house still stands at the edge of Morris Floyd's property and is occupied by a black family. During Albert's occupancy the very rustic living room/bedroom was adorned with a blue velvet sofa. Both of Albert's daughters grew to be fine ladies of Cochran. Cookie became the outstanding teacher for the county and Gwendolyn had a noteworthy career in business.

Here is what his sister Mary says of him: As I remember James Albert Floyd he was tall, dark, and very handsome!! Yes, he did not have the fair, freckly skin that most of us (or some of us) had. He had that skin that would tan easily and as a grown man usually had a little sharp mustache and sometimes smoked a pipe and to me that was the making of a "sexy looking man." Albert was married to Lilly May and for the life of me I cannot think of her maiden name. Now back to Albert, when he decided to marry all three boys proposed to their girlfriends and all got married at the same time (If I remember correctly). If someone with a better memory than mine disputes this - take their word rather than mine.

i) Gwendolyn¹⁵ FLOYD (1593) is still living.

ii) Patricia Ann¹⁵ FLOYD (1594) is still living.

(g) William Herschel¹⁴ FLOYD (1529) was employed at Farming. He was born on 9 Jul 1914 at Pulaski County, GA. He married Annie Carter WIMBERLY (1530), daughter of Edward Taylor WIMBERLY (1597) and Mary Elizabeth BLACKSHEAR (1598), on 20 Dec 1941.⁵⁶⁰ He died on 21 Oct 1989 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA, aged 75. Here is a note written by his sister Mary: Herschel was always sort of my favorite of the three boys. He paid more attention to me even if it did involve having me do something for him which was the case most of the time. When I was a young girl he could just speak my name gently and I would do most anything for him including ironing his shirts and POLISHING HIS SHOES!!!! Yes, you read that right. Anyway, when I was about 14 or 15 I had once a week when it was my turn to prepare *supper*. We always had the main big meal and I mean (BIG) in the middle of the day, so supper was eating whatever was left over plus usually a *fill in. * My fill in was tomato and rice soup (which I love to this day and I'm almost (80) now. Always when it was my night to cook everyone knew we were going to have tomato and rice soup and chocolate pudding. I was crazy about the soup and Herschel loved the chocolate pudding!! Once I had a boyfriend, whom I considered very good looking, but Herschel knew too much about his sisters and did not consider them *nice*, therefore his family was not nice enough for me to date their brother so he ran the young man off and told him never to set foot on our property again. (why did I like Herschel?) Later in life

after I had grown up and moved away from home I always made a point of visiting Herschel and Annie (Wimberely) was her last name before they got married. He knew I liked to fish and would go to town (5 miles) away and bring fish bait (worms) for me. I guess this was *My Candy*. He was terribly rough with Annie but never in my entire life did he speak harshly to me or LaVerne. But Annie and Annette - he would yell at them in a *flat minute*. I am sure that is why Annette did not get along with him. Herschel was a fun loving person and LaVerne could make him laugh, of course LaV. could make most anyone laugh she has always been such a fun person to be with because she is so happy go lucky by nature. Once when I was visiting Herschel and Annie, My son Joe and his band had been playing in Louisiana and all came to visit with me at Herschel's. Everyone had their musical instruments with them except Pete the drummer. Herschel rounded up two tin washtubs for Pete to

⁵⁵⁴Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁵⁵Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁵⁶Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

⁵⁵⁷Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

⁵⁵⁸unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁵⁵⁹Doris Dixon, "La Verne papers."

⁵⁶⁰Harris, *History of Pulaski County*.

play and we had the most fun with that little band and those two tubs. My Mona and Joe's girlfriend (Carla Wagner) came with them and Herschel always loved Mona so much. When she was just a little girl he would let her ride on the donkey or horse and for that she loved her Uncle Herschel. So this time she's about 21-22 and Herschel went to Hawkinsville and rented a horse and wagon with seats and the band and everyone rode all over the town having a ball waving at everyone. Pete had never been on a farm before and he was having the time of his life. I look back now and it was a fun time to be alive. When Herschel was in the Hospital with prostate cancer I had a chance to wrap my arms around him and say just how much I loved him and he told me the same. At his funeral some man with a deep voice stood up and sang *JUST A CLOSER WALK WITH THEE*. That is the most beautiful song to me and I hope someone will sing it at my funeral or maybe play it on a tape. Mona had painted a sign for him to hang over the entrance of the barn which read *I'm proud to be a Country Boy*. He had built in that barn a complete Kitchen with several long tables and lots of chairs so he could entertain his family and friends by serving all the catfish and Hush Puppies one could eat. It was so much fun and such a happy time. I wish I could live over part of my youth. Once he ran his donkey for the office of a city official. The three boys played on a baseball team and for some reason free cokes were given away and I always gave mine to Herschel. To me he was a pussy cat that liked to roar like a lion. I truly did love him. END OF STORY- written by Mary Floyd.

i) Jerry Herschel¹⁵ FLOYD (1599) is still living.

(h) Jesse Joseph¹⁴ FLOYD (1531) was born on 2 Mar 1916 at Pulaski County, GA. He married Alice (Wilma) BEMBRY (1532) on 12 Oct 1940. He was buried in May 1977 at Cedar Hill; Family Plot, Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He died on 20 May 1977 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 61.⁵⁶¹ Obnitiary of he was Funeral was held Saturday at 4:00 at Fisher Funeral Home. Burial was in the family lot at Cedar Hill Cemetery. on 25 May 1977 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. Jesse Floyd known to the family as Jay seems to have had the same disconnected life as his grandfather, Jesse Jasper. Here is a child with his father's red hair and his mother's Holland features who was always known as a gentle soul ready to help. Here is his story as told by his sister Mary: Jay was born Jessie Joseph Floyd known to family and friends as Jay. He was Mama's pet. (Everyone claimed I was Papa's pet.) He would do for her without any complaining. He milked the cows and delighted in squirting some in the cat's face most the time but managed to get some in the mouth. He killed all the chickens mama asked him to do and scalded them in hot water so the feathers were easier to pull out which was his job also. Mama raised all the chickens we ate and we did eat a lot. Our meat diet was chicken and pork and sometime old *Kit* fish which I hated. Kit fish is very strong fish packed in salt and must be soaked over night before you can cook and eat it. On rare occasions someone would come by selling fresh beef and Mama or Papa would purchase some and we would have that for breakfast with biscuit and gravy. It was usually the kind of beef that had to be beaten with a mallet on the corner of the wooden kitchen table and Mama would smother it in gravy and letting it cook in a covered pan for a while. This was a special treat for us children. On Third Sundays when Mama would invite the entire church to come and eat dinner with us Jay would have to kill and pick the feathers off of 4 or 5 chickens. Also there was a lot of cake baking going on and Mama would get him in the kitchen beating up the pound cake. Remember we did not have an electric beater at this time and every cake had to be beaten by hand which took a strong arm to beat 3 or 4 cakes. He did many, many jobs around the house such as bringing in all the wood we needed to heat the wood stove. Jay had an easy nature about him that the other boys did not have and I am afraid Mama took advantage of that out of necessity but he did not mind. Jay had red hair and would let us Girls *Finger wave* it because he wanted curly hair and the kids liked to play with him. Jay was Annette's favorite of the three boys (everyone seemed to pick one or two and say that was their favorite.) Annette and Jay had to ride to school in a horse and buggy. Later Papa gave that old horse named Kate to us kids to play with and we would swing on her neck, pull her tail and just have fun with her and she loved it and so did we. We would hitch her to the buggy and go to town and gather up some kids and take them out in the country with us which they loved. Papa would make Pop Guns for us out of reeds which we would sit in the China Berry Tree and shoot berries at and cat, chicken, or dog that came by. We couldn't hurt them only scare them. The three boys could really get into trouble such as tying ten cans to the cat's tail which didn't last long because they couldn't tie it tight enough. When they grew a little older and had a car they tied branches from a tree to the back of it and drove up and down the dirt road just to see how much dust they could do. The three of them belonged to a local baseball team and Jay was the pitcher and a darn good one because he was left handed the batter had a hard time

⁵⁶¹ Family information.

with his balls. Albert was First stop and I don't remember what position Herschel played. Maybe he went just to get my free coke.

- i) Jan¹⁵ FLOYD (1605) is still living.
- (i) Margaret Annette¹⁴ FLOYD (2821).⁵⁶²

In 1999, armed with her new computer and word processor Annette Floyd Vollmer Kaplan began to write her memories. They are rich with detail of life in the Ed and Annie Floyd Family. Get a cold drink and put your feet up for a trip back to the beginning of the 20th century. Annette and her family were witness to the last remnant of the old ways. Fed and Mourning Floyd would have felt somewhat comfortable living in the same county that Annette describes. They would have seen signs of rapid and dramatic change, but they would have seen much that was familiar. Even the early Basses and Floyds from North Carolina and Virginia would have seen many familiar habits and foods, and certainly the turn of the planting seasons would have been familiar. Annie and Ed and their children represent the end of those days. Let's take a look before we blast into the 21st century.

I don't remember very much about June 22, 1918. But I have been told a few things, which I will try to set down for posterity. It was a happy day at the farm in Georgia. They had a new baby girl! Not that they needed another baby, but babies were inevitable about every two years and they were so happy to have a girl instead of another boy. The three just prior ones had been boys and they were pretty tired of boys by June 22.

Enough babies already had been born into this rural farm family, but they just kept coming. You see, I was the ninth in a series, which would end up being 12 in all. There was to be a double – twins – next time around so there were really only 11 births in all, and the final one was to be a redhead named LaVerne. She has lived up to all her redhead potential. She was called carrot-top for obvious reasons. But this is not about her but rather about me as best I can remember of my life and what I don't remember firsthand, then some of what I was told.

My earliest recollection is of a very sad occasion – the death of my parents' first grandson, Wallace. I don't really remember his death but the sadness. We came home in the wagon and I was placed on a pallet (a folded quilt) beside the front door while the wagon was unloaded. I myself was not too well, being covered with ulcers on my legs – a plague called erysipelas. I was to suffer from this malady for most of my childhood years. Every summer I would develop this dread disease from the slightest scratch, mosquito or flea bite. And there were plenty of those. You will never have heard of this disease for it is called by more modern names now but it was quite serious and was a staph infection, which, before antibiotics, often was fatal. Those of you who know LaVerne know that she has a round scar on her right cheek. This was caused by the same infection. One of my cousins, Willie Nell Floyd, died at a very early age, in her teens, when she developed this disease on her face from a pimple

Basically my childhood was happy and without any great momentous events that I can remember. We swam in the nearby creeks and fished in them as well. We fished at a place called the boneyard on Little Limestone Creek. I don't know why it was called the boneyard except I seem to remember hearing that when farm animals died they were taken there to be disposed of (eaten by the buzzards) sort of far from the house. Anyway, it was a good place to fish. Another good fishing and swimming place was the jackhole – I guess we caught jackfish (a form of pickerel) there. Then there was Blue Springs – what beautiful water – ice cold and crystal clear. We would stand in it up to our chins with our teeth chattering and see if we could count our toes on the bottom. We often went there for Fourth of July fish fries and picnics. These were community gatherings – not just our immediate family. All the farm families in the Limestone community would load up their children, dogs, watermelons, frying pans, etc., and head for Blue Springs for a day of fishing, swimming, and just having a good time. The women would watch the kids and the men would go fishing all morning. The men would return with their catch, build up fires and the fish would be cooked for our lunch. Watermelons that had been cooling all morning in the icy water of the spring would be cut and eaten. Normally we did not eat watermelon at meal times but it was a four o'clock in the afternoon happening. You would hear someone say, well it's about watermelon cutting time and we would gather around the watermelon bench in the front yard and cut three or four melons which had been resting on the front porch for several days.

⁵⁶² unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

We never thought about it at the time, but if one of the kids had become distressed in the cold water, there would have been no one to rescue us for none of the women could swim a stroke. We would have had to rely on another of the kids to get us out. Luckily most of us learned to swim almost by the time we learned to walk – well not quite that early – but we did not really remember when we could not swim.

We never had bathing suits to swim in. We would not have been allowed to wear them because they would have been much too immodest, and Papa would have skinned us alive if he saw us in one. Not to worry about that, they were unheard of. We all wore cut-off blue jeans, only they were called overalls in those days and were strictly what farmers and their kids wore to pick or chop cotton. We would not have been caught dead in them even for sweeping the yards. They were standard everyday dress for the males of the family but girls – never.

Talk about sweeping yards. Have you ever heard of such a thing? Never? Well, we did – every Saturday morning. But let me go back just a little and tell you about yard brooms. We had several colored families who lived on the farm and helped with the farm work. But they also did extra chores such as washing the clothes – I'll tell you about that later – and gathering yard broom material. They would go out into the woods and gather gallberry bushes, a low growing shrubby type undergrowth found in low-lying wet places. These bushes had a bushy head that formed on the end of about a six-foot high spindly stalk of very tough wood. The stems were about the thickness of two No. 2 pencils. These were gathered and brought home and tied into bundles of eight or 10, wrapped very tightly with torn up strips of old sheet or other material and tied. They were then laid on the meat bench (hog-killing story later) to dry out and shed their leaves. After a week or so they were dried out enough to sweep the yards.

I had the job of sweeping the outside front yard. Long ago when the first girls started to arrive in the family, Papa decided to plant an oak tree to commemorate the birth of each little darling. Unfortunately he chose a water oak, which produces leaves about twice the size of your thumbnail and curved and shaped in the same fashion. Try sweeping them off of a sandy yard with a gallberry brush broom if you really want to have fun on your day off. I was a meticulous sweeper and swept walking backward so as not to make any tracks in the newly swept yard. When I finished it looked like the fine Japanese sand gardens you see in pictures today. Imagine my distress when I saw that a chicken had walked on it and made tracks before Sunday church folks came to dinner. No, we did not have lawns, we had sand. And if a blade of grass dared try to peek up it was snatched out by the roots! Such impertinence, grass trying to grow in our clean-swept yards.

Some years later we thought about making a lawn, and my sister Tina came home over Thanksgiving one year with her car loaded with St. Augustine grass cuttings from her lawn and got everyone busy plowing and digging up the front yard and sticking out sprigs of grass. That night it came a hard freeze, the earliest in memory, and no one was sure whether the Florida grass would survive. I don't remember whether it did because I had already moved to Washington by this time and was not in on the grass-planting project. In any case, the point is we eventually got a lawn after I was grown, married and moved away.

There was another type of yard broom – one made from dog fennel. This tall weed grew in the ditches, along the fences and in fence jambs. Do you know what a fence jamb is? It is not to put on your toast or hot biscuit. A fence jamb is made in a split rail fence. The rails are laid in a herringbone fashion and sometimes stretch for miles. The rails are laid on top of each other and are not fastened together at all, but they will last for a generation and they are wonderful for climbing or just sitting on top of in the sun. And, of course, the ground-nesting birds such as quail love them for building their nests. Blackberries also grow in the jambs. We picked these and Mama made wonderful blackberry pie and we went around with blue mouths after having this for dinner.

Mama also made wonderful blackberry jelly and jam and canned berries so we could have pies in the winter. But the best of all, she made blackberry wine for the church communion service. Communion only occurred once a year – third Sunday in August, Big Meetin' Day – so it didn't take much for that, but she made a lot while she was doing it so we would have some to drink ourselves. Delicious. To this day, I only really like sweet wine. There is a trick to wine making. To test whether there is enough sugar in it, you carefully wash a fresh-laid egg and put it into the wine and if it floats there is enough sugar. I never knew how Mama knew all this but she did. Ours

was a non-drinking family but once in awhile we could have a hot toddy if we had the croup or Mama was trying to make the measles pop out on us. We also had homemade eggnog and syllabub at Christmas. When I went to Macon to school and came home on weekends, Mama would slip a little bottle of wine in my bag to take back to school to help cramps from the "curse." That's what your period was called back then, "the curse," and it was whispered as if you were doing something unspeakable. But these things were not talked about. Our neighbor up the road told me about it after it happened to me and scared me half to death for I was sure I was dying.

Papa always tried very hard to have a hog killing before Christmas so we could have a fresh ham for boiling for Christmas dinner and fresh sausages for breakfast. The weather did not always cooperate with him. He would go out very early in the morning to check the frost and temperature to see if it was hog killing weather. When I am in Georgia in the winter and it is a crisp cold morning someone will come in and if you ask about the weather they are likely to say "hog killing weather out there" and those of my generation would know immediately what they meant – cold as hell and you had better bundle up before going out.

Hog killing day was a big day for the entire area. Previous arrangements had been made with certain neighbors that they would be available to help in "Mr. Ed and Miss Annie's" hog killing. When you hear old folks say that they had a hog killing time at a party it means they really had a ball. Everyone was in a good mood and looking forward to a couple of days of socializing with all the neighbors who were helping. Some volunteered to cook dinner while all the others worked outside. Dinner would have been such goodies as fresh liver, turnips cooked with fresh backbone, sweet breads etc. Blackberry pies would be served from the berries canned in the summer, peach cobbler would be made from previously canned peaches and any other good thing that anyone thought of cooking. It was really a very festive time, and we kids always wanted to miss school so we could participate. But this was not allowed.

When Papa decided that the morning was just right I would wake up to the sound of the grindstone in the back yard being turned furiously and all of the butcher knives and case knives and every other cutting instrument being sharpened until a man could get a pretty good shave with them if he really wanted to. The next sign would be the smell of a wood fire outside around the scalding kettle, simply a discarded syrup kettle, which had been saved for scalding hogs. They were scalded so the hair would scrape off easily. We also scalded chickens so you could pluck the feathers readily when you were going to cook one for Sunday dinner. We had either fried chicken or chicken and dumplings for almost every Sunday dinner, but especially if the preacher was coming home with Mama and Papa from church.

But back to hog killing. It would hit me with the awful realization that this was the day the pigs were being killed when I saw Papa come into his bedroom (which is where the fire was burning and where us yunguns were trying to get or keep warm), go to the closet and take out the rifle and some shots and I would know it was going to happen. I covered my ears so I could not hear the shots or the pigs squeal when they were hit. This part was awful to me. But once past this stage, hog killing day got very exciting and interesting. We had a long pole out at the barnyard suspended between two other upright posts and this is where the snow white scraped carcasses were hung by their back feet. Papa or one of my grown brothers or one of the colored men on the farm would then go down the line of pigs, sharp knife in hand and someone else holding a basket to catch the entrails, and the pigs were eviscerated one by one. If it was a big hog killing there could be as many as 10 or 15 pigs done in one day. And there were so many of us that ours was a big two-day event.

The entrails were then given to one of the black women to clean. The chitterlings would later be scraped until they were as thin as tissue paper and used for stuffing the sausages. We had a rather large table in the back yard – a permanent fixture in all farmyards – where the pigs were laid out for Papa to cut up. This table was made by four or six posts being sunk into the ground and then a table top constructed on these posts. We had a similar one in the front yard, which was called the watermelon bench – because it was narrower than a table – and this is where we cut watermelons about four o'clock every afternoon after July 4, when the first melons got ripe. Watermelons were a must for the fourth of July! The meat bench would be covered with fresh-cut pine boughs on which the carcasses were laid and Papa proceeded with cutting them up into hams, shoulders, heads, feet, backbone, spareribs, etc. Each cut was put into a separate cotton basket, which also had been lined with pine boughs.

In the meantime, the women were busy "ridding guts" – trimming all the fat off the intestines and putting it into one of the wash pots to dry out the lard. This fat residue was cracklins and made the best cracklin bread you ever tasted. This process was called rendering the lard. Papa and his helpers would prepare the meat cuts for curing. I don't know what he put into the coarse salt, bought in 100-pound bags, but he rubbed each piece, except the backbones and spareribs with this salt mixture to preserve it. All of the fresh backbone and spareribs would be used immediately by our family and the neighbors who had helped with the work as we had no other refrigeration to preserve it except for the cold weather.

By the end of the first day all of the basic work would be done and the second day would be devoted to making sausages and rendering the hard fat into lard. God, why didn't we all die of cholesterol? Well, obviously no one knew there was cholesterol so how could you die from it?

We had a smokehouse nearby the backdoor to the kitchen and this was the ultimate destination of all of these shoulders, hams, and sides (if you listen to the stock market for very long you will hear them talking about the price of pork bellies futures). That's what these sides of meat are. There was a plant growing on the farm that we called bear grass. Well, it is in fact a form of yucca, which is fibrous, strong and very tough. Maybe that's why it was called bear grass. Anyway, this is what was used to hang the meat up with in order to smoke it. Papa would cut behind the tendon on the ham and shoulders, insert a piece of this yucca and use that as if it were wire to slip over the hanging poles suspended over the fire pit in the middle of the smokehouse. A simple slit of about an inch or so was made in the corner of the sides through which a leaf of this yucca was inserted and tied to make a hanger for them. They were all subsequently hung up and a fire was made in the hole in the ground of the smokehouse. The fire was made with green hickory branches and it was never permitted to burn freely but just smolder to make a lot of smoke. And that's how you get hickory smoked ham. Except nowadays I am sure they just rub them with some artificial flavoring that tastes like hickory smoke.

The second day of the hog killing was devoted to making sausages, rendering the hard fat, making Brunswick stew, souse meat, pickled pigs' feet and all of the other preserving. Mama said everything was used but the squeal. There is a saying that you like to eat sausages but you don't want to watch them being made. That was certainly not true for me. I loved helping make the sausages. Mama grew very hot peppers and sage in the garden in the summer and stored this for seasoning the sausages. She would put in some hot pepper, salt and sage and then make a test patty which was cooked on a griddle brought from the kitchen and placed on the hot coals around the lard rendering pot. Everyone stood around waiting for the tasting – sort of like a wine tasting party – and there usually were at least three separate tastings, the seasonings being altered slightly each time, until everyone was satisfied that they were just right. Of course, Aunt Sis wanted hers much hotter, so Mama would humor her by making some extra hot for her. She also drank her coffee boiling hot as soon as it was poured while the rest of the family "sauced and blowed" theirs. Except me. I never drank coffee because Mama would give me castor oil in coffee so I learned to hate it. In later years if one of us did not like something or was unusually fussy about something we were told we were "as curious as Sis." This didn't mean inquisitive but it meant peculiar. Funny how words meant such different things then and there. More about words later on, assuming I don't get sick and tired of this remembering thing.

When the final approval was given of the sausage seasonings, then came the time of stuffing and this is what I loved to do. We had a sausage grinder and it had a stuffing attachment to it. The casings (scraped clean entrails) were put over this stuffing tube, sort of like pulling on your nylons and then the fun began. Someone would hold the loose end and someone else would turn the crank while someone else fed the ground meat into the machine. I liked to turn the crank and I would make it fly and watch with glee as the sausage came out fat and round at the other end with the aroma of sage hickory smoke and cold, crisp, clear Georgia air. Ecstasy!

This is where I fell asleep last night with the smell of sausages and biscuits and homemade syrup floating through my head. At least that let me go to sleep without much trouble. I will write about making syrup later on – yes, we made it by the gallon, grew and ground the cane and cooked the cane juice into syrup. And we had parties doing this. What fun it was to go to a cane grinding. But back to the sausages.

When the last bit of ground sausage meat was stuffed, the sausages were taken to the smokehouse and draped on long poles suspended from the ceiling of the

smokehouse. There they would also be smoked along with the other hanging meat. Some of the grease would begin to drip out of them as they began to "cure." For the rest of the winter we would have sausages and biscuits for breakfast, along with grits and eggs sometimes. We would alternate this by having country cured ham instead of sausages. If we did not eat all of the sausages by spring then Mama would can them to have over the summer. They could not be left hanging in the spring or they would get "rancid" and bugs would get into them, so she would pack them into an old butter churn and cover them with some of the homemade lard to preserve them for use in the summer. But basically, sausages were a winter food. In the summer we wanted fresh meat like rabbits, squirrel and other things. The boys would go hunting and bring these home and this was a real treat. By now we were tired of ham and sausages.

Sometimes the weather simply would not cooperate with hog killings, so a solution had to be found to keeping all of this meat cold enough so it would not spoil before it could be preserved. My father solved this problem by constructing a huge icebox in the smokehouse. It had a very heavy lid that could be raised and lowered if you had two strong men to do it. It was divided into sections, one for 100-pound blocks of ice, alternating with sections twice as wide in which to pack the meat. If the weather turned warm, Papa and the boys, mainly Buddy, would go to town in the wagon and go to the ice house and load the wagon with these blocks of ice and bring them home and pack the meat and ice into the icebox until the warm spell had passed. There were no weather reports available to us and we relied on the Farmers Almanac to a great extent to predict the weather. Certainly five-day forecasts were far into the distant future.

Papa was a pretty good weatherman. He would go out to the end of our front porch and look up at the clouds and could pretty much tell whether a shower was coming our way. He could mostly judge whether the cold snap coming would be sufficient to take care of the hog killing weather he needed before embarking on this task. He seldom missed! Can you imagine existing today without weather reports, storm and tornado warnings? And how can you plan a vacation in Greece or Turkey without getting on the Internet and checking the weather in those countries?

Spring was a wonderful time – everything was getting a new start – fresh vegetables from the garden, a welcome relief from turnips, collards, dried peas and beans and sweet potatoes. These things made up most of our diet with the addition of whatever canned fruits and vegetables we had been able to put up the summer before. Mama always planted her garden, especially string beans on Good Friday. I grew up knowing nothing about Good Friday except that it was the day for planting string beans. Garden or English peas as we called them (we now call them green peas) were planted very early, maybe even before Christmas. Irish potatoes (white potatoes as opposed to sweet potatoes) were also planted early. How delicious when we got the first mess of these peas. It might not be more than two cups full for our whole family, but Mama saved the tender hulls and cooked them and she added dumplings to make out a mess. I have no idea why a serving for everyone was called a "mess" but it was. The boys and Papa would go off to catch a "mess" of fish, and in order to make a good "mess" the fish would be supplemented with hushpuppies. Mess also meant "don't you dare scatter things and leave them for someone else to clean up your mess." In the military "mess" means where and what you eat so I guess it all ties together.

Spring also meant that school would soon be out. We only went to school until April 18 and before that time there would be run-away-from-school-day, either April fool's day or as close to it as possible. I went to a two-room school called Smith School where there could not have been 50 students. Every spring we older kids would plan to run away from school for a day. Of course, we were very conspiratorial in our plans, although I am sure the teachers knew as much about our plans as we did for there would always be a tattletale in the group. Anyway, we older ones would all disappear from school and only leave the younguns – those too little to keep up. We would end up doing nothing more for the entire day than going for a romp in the woods and playing on the sawdust pile back in the woods. We would pick wild flowers, violets, honeysuckle and yellow jasmine and get barefooted for the first time in the spring. Lord, we were tired of having to wear shoes every day. We always went barefoot except on Sundays when we were hauled off to the Primitive Baptist Church called Mt. Horeb, which was where my father and mother went to church on third Sunday of each month.

Our school had two rooms – one devoted to the first through fourth grade and the other to the fifth through seventh grade. Most kids went no further than the seventh

grade. I was lucky. I got to go to town to high school. What a treat that was. I remember the day that Papa took me to town and to Cochran High School to talk to the principal, Mr. T. M. Purcell. Mr. Purcell was a very distinguished looking man with snow white hair. He immediately dubbed me "Flapper," I guess because I had such blonde hair that he must have thought I looked like his version of a flapper. He never called me anything but Flapper for the entire time I attended Cochran High School. He is also the one who dubbed LaVerne "Carrot Top" because of her red hair. He was a wonderful man and we loved him in spite of being in awe and afraid of him. We never wanted to be sent to see Mr. Purcell – this was big-time trouble.

But back to Smith School, five miles out from town. I especially remember two teachers – Sara Frances Horn and Pauline Hinson. They boarded at our house because they had no way to get to the school from town and our house was within walking distance (about a mile) from the school. We had the best house in the community and Mama put a bed in the "living room" for the teachers. Other houses in the community did not have living rooms. We did. And furthermore, we had the only white painted house outside of town. Only houses in town were painted. We had floors with no cracks between the boards and our house was sealed, which meant there were no cracks between the boards of the walls. Some years prior Papa had made arrangements for a sawmill to come to our woods and cut trees and make lumber for our new house. That is what accounted for the sawdust piles that we played on in the woods.

Our teachers were quite talented and innovative. For example, every year at the end of school we would put on plays, pantomimes, minstrels and lovely end-of-the-year programs. Buddy and Jay and I did black-face minstrels in addition to the regular plays. Our faces were painted black with burnt cork and our hair was made by unraveling black stockings and stitching the yarn to a cutoff top of a stocking and pulling this over our own hair. We put on three-act plays, which Sara Frances ordered from a place called Dennisons. We did monologues and dialogues and dances. I usually was in these plays because I could memorize lines and pages and pages of monologue, not that I was such a talented actress!

All of the grownups in the community participated in these programs. The men came and constructed an outdoor stage attached to the front of the school house. The room in which the older kids were taught had a built-in stage and this was used primarily for Christmas pageants and other small productions, but it was much too small for our big productions. In addition, the schoolroom could not accommodate everyone who came to see the big programs (everyone in the community – no one missed). For seats outside for the new stage, they laid long boards across kegs or whatever they had to make seats for the audience; they strung up telephone wire around the stage and the women made curtains from their bed sheets and hung them to make a curtain. We had pans filled with some kind of powder across the front of the stage and when the program was over this powder was ignited and made the most beautiful colored lights for the grand finale. Mama made many of the costumes. She made dozens of colored crepe paper dresses for the dancers. She made angel wings for the angels and she had a good imagination on how to make these things. Wire would be bent into the shape of wings and covered with white gauze and then edged with Christmas tree tinsel to make them shine.

Our three-act plays would be taken to other schools such as Cary and Davis and Salem schools and put on for the benefit of those communities. These were serious productions for which we practiced two nights each week until we had them down to perfection. Going up to school at night to practice was a real treat for me – I had a chance to be with the teachers, not as student but to listen to grownup talk. Buddy always went with us whether he was in the play or not – he was our protector against any strange night happenings such as seeing mysterious lights and other ghostly things prowling around. On one occasion there was some real drama. We looked out the schoolhouse window and saw a red glow on the other side of some nearby woods. Someone yelled "house afire" and we flew out of the schoolhouse forgetting our practice and everything else, and raced up the road and to our horror it was the home of a neighbor, Mr. Big Green Smith.

All we could do was watch in horror as they lost their home and everything in it. Even the smokehouse could not be saved. Happily the barn was saved, but not before all of the mules had been set free so they could escape in case the barn caught fire.

Sometimes Buddy was our tormenter. He would fake a scare just to make our hair stand on end. He really was quite devilish. I remember when the school kids all got lice in their hair and the teachers were afraid that they might have gotten them and asked Buddy to examine their heads for them. Buddy caught some lice on the pigs

and put them in a folded paper in his pocket and at the right moment presented them to the teachers and pretended he had caught them on their heads. You can imagine the panic and consternation they underwent until he could no longer hold back his laughter and had to confess his trick. Our hair got combed with a fine toothed comb until our scalps were raw looking for lice and I am reasonably sure this is how the saying "go over with a fine toothed comb" came into being. Know of a better explanation?

Our school was heated by potbellied stoves in each room and the boys brought the wood in each day to burn in them. Some days the heat would be so intense in the stove that the outside would get literally red hot. We had a "privy" back behind the school in the edge of the woods where we went to the toilet. We had a well where we lowered a bucket and hauled up water for us to drink. We did not have drinking cups, but we grew gourds of all sizes, which we used for all sorts of things. During the summer we would have dried some of the small gourds and cut the side off and this would have been saved to take to school to be used as our drinking cup. Also, at home we had a long-necked gourd which would have been cut in the same fashion and used as the dipper in the water bucket that set on the shelf on the back porch. Periodically these gourds, as well as the water bucket (made of cedar shakes and held together with brass bands around them) would be taken out to the sand bed in front of the house and scrubbed shining clean with the brass bands gleaming. A mixture of soft potash soap and sand would be used for this purpose. Mama, of course, had made the potash soap at home from grease and cans of Red Devil Lye. This same soap was used to scrub floors, wash clothes and in a pinch when we did not have "sweet" soap we had to take a bath with it.

Taking a bath sometimes meant just washing our feet before going to bed. But when we got into the washtub for a real bath whoever had drawn the water from the well and set it out in the sun all afternoon to get warm a little got to get into the tub first. From then on whoever could muscle in ahead of the others got to go next. I hated having to wash my feet and legs with the potash soap. Afterward if you stood in front of the fire your skin would feel like it was shrinking. We would back up to the fireplace in the winter and raise our skirt in the back to get our behinds good and warm. We kept the foot tub, a small version of the washtub, sitting on one corner of the hearth so we could all wash our feet before going to bed.

On the other corner of the hearth was a crockery churn filled with milk that was set there in the warmth to encourage the milk to "turn" to clabber, so we could churn and get fresh butter and buttermilk. This fresh buttermilk and hot cornbread made a wonderful supper on a cold night. We had many cows, three or four, that we milked every day, night and morning, winter and summer. Jay and I were the milkers. Sometimes the cow would get impatient or aggravated if your long fingernails dug in and she would kick us. One cold morning just such a thing happened to me and she kept on kicking and got her foot into the bucket and spilled milk all over me. It was very cold and by the time I got to the kitchen door the milk had frozen on me. The cats used to follow us to the cow pen and Jay could hit a bull's-eye with a stream of milk at 10 feet. The cat would open her mouth and Jay would squirt milk into it.

Jay and I were great friends. He was my typical older brother and would fight my battles at school and on the way home. He was two years older than I but we both went to the same grade when we began high school in town. He later dropped out and I was on my own but the first year we drove our old faithful mule called Brown Kate to school. She was quite old and feeble and unable to do any farm work anymore and was the only one we kids were allowed to drive hitched to the buggy. One day poor Brown Kate died and Jay and I were in a dilemma about going to school. Papa finally decided that Jay could handle Alice, a long legged high stepping creature so he let us take her to school. It just happened that Jay and I were both in a school play and we were studying our lines on the way home from school. Jay had wrapped the reins around the whip holder as we often had done with Brown Kate, when we met a motorcycle coming up the road. Alice jumped the ditch, buggy and all and tried to run away. Jay jumped out of the buggy and grabbed the bridle and calmed her down enough so he could cover her head with his jacket to get her past the motorcycle. All the while I was still in the buggy terrified. We didn't dare tell Papa about our escapade.

We had beautiful mules – I remember one named Daisy. She was the most beautiful mule I had ever seen, sort of a pinkish blonde with a brown streak down her back. Papa bought her from the gypsy mule traders who came to town every winter and camped on some vacant lots on the road up to the college. I never got to see the gypsies but from what I was told about them with their guitars and violins and singing,

next to going in the circus, I was sure being a gypsy was the best thing in the world to do. But we were kept strictly at home when they were in town.

The circus came to town one year and marched some elephants through Cochran and set up a tent out on the road to Macon. Mama took us to town on Saturday afternoon to see the circus. I was 5 or 6, maybe as much as 10. I don't remember. All I remember is I sat with some other little girls across the tent from Mama and when they asked for five little girls to come ride the elephant I popped out of my seat and ran out and got on the elephant and rode around the tent. Mama could not believe I had done such a thing but I did. I even remember that I was wearing a purple popcorn check dress that day (who could forget that).

I wanted to tell you more about the gourds we grew. They were used as martin gourds. A martin is a kind of swallow that flies around at dusk and catches mosquitoes. We always had at least one martin pole and a dozen or more gourds for them to use for nests. They would come sweeping in and they were so beautiful. I think I remember them being called blue martins. We also had bats that would swoop around about dusk. I think they too were catching mosquitoes. The gourds were arranged in a tier of three or four tiers with several gourds at each level, sort of a bird condominium or high-rise building.

It is time I went back to reflect on my grandparents and parents a little. My grandmother Orlifia Bryant Holland was a widow who had been abandoned by her charming, handsome rogue of a husband named Jesse Jasper Holland. As best I know, he simply picked up and walked away from his wife and two children, two young girls. Mama and Aunt Juliette, were left to fend for themselves as best they could. My grandmother's sister, Aunt Jane Bryant was either already living with them or came to live with them to help out as best she could. The two women and two small girls abandoned on a farm must have had a very tough time. Their only income would have been what they could earn by their daily work in someone's field. I remember that Aunt Jane had a spinning wheel and made thread from cotton they had picked in the fields. I remember hearing Mama talk about having to pick the seeds out of the cotton every night before going to sleep. Each had to fill her shoes with cotton she had picked seeds from. Granny and Aunt Jane would card the cotton and Aunt Jane would then put it on the spinning wheel. The way you card cotton is to take small amounts of cotton and lay it on a small board with projecting wires and then take another board of the same kind and comb the cotton back and forth until it was clean and fluffy. A cotton card looks like an oversize wire hairbrush only the board is sloped and the handle is attached in the middle of the back of the card. Times were tough.

Papa and his brother, Uncle Archie, lived not too far away from these women and children. Papa told me he married Mama so he could look after her and take care of her. She was only 13 when they married and she was only 14 years older than her oldest daughter, Viola (Shug) who will be 100 years old in March 2000. My name, Margaret Annette, was given me as a combination of Annie and Margaret Juliette. I have always liked my name but I was told that it was not given to me until I was over a year old! For the first year of my life I was simply called "little sister." I had three older sisters still at home when I was born and I was sort of their pet. They crocheted and made tatting to go on everything I wore and embroidered and smocked dresses for me. Then when the twins came along two years later they were the darlings. The final one was the redhead LaVerne who was the baby of the family all her life. I remained close to my older sisters and to my younger ones, too, for that matter, all my life.

Grandpa Holland remarried and produced four more children – Aunt Eva, Aunt Florence, Aunt Ruby and Uncle Jay. They were half sisters and brother to my mother and Aunt Juliette. Papa's brother Uncle Archie married Aunt Juliette, so my first cousins are all double first cousins.

Grandpa Holland drifted off to Florida and at some point he had a little country store and at another he spent his time hunting, fishing and trapping in the Everglades. He knew all about the Seminole Indians in Florida and about alligators and panthers (we called them painters) in the Everglades. From time to time he would come to visit us and we would sit on the front porch while he regaled us with tales of his adventures. Some true, I am sure, and I am equally sure some were not. We children adored him. He brought oranges and grapefruit from Florida and this was a real treat because in those days they were not readily available at Thompson's general store in town. I believe he married two more times before he died, which was right much for those days! He sure told hair-raising stories; so much so that we would be afraid to go in to bed unless a grownup went into the house with us.

We got out of school early in the spring so we could help with the farm work. We helped with the planting and cultivating, the planting of the kitchen gardens (we usually had three of these) and all of the many chores that must be performed on a farm. We brought in water and filled the tank on the stove so we could have hot water when a fire was built in the stove the next morning. We gathered the eggs from the henhouse, fed the chickens, hogs and mules milked the cows, brought in stove wood to be used for cooking, and brought in kindling to start the fire. We always had to shuck the corn that was fed to the animals. This meant large baskets full to feed a half dozen mules and maybe as many as 50 hogs. We shelled the corn to feed the chickens (removed the grains from the cobs). The cobs were saved and taken to the privy to be used as toilet paper when we ran out of Sears Roebuck catalogs! How I hated having to use the "shiny" pages, the ones with pictures of the latest fashions on them for toilet paper. But the corncobs were much worse. There were no indoor toilets and no toilet paper. In the winter the cold wind would blow up through the holes where you were sitting and freeze your butt off. Believe me, no one lingered in the privy with their favorite book or magazines. We didn't have many books, just our schoolbooks and no magazines. We did receive a daily newspaper, The Macon Telegraph, for as long as I can remember. It was delivered to our house by the postman who drove around the mail route, RFD (rural free delivery) No. 2. Add Cochran, Ga., to that and any mail from anywhere in the world would be brought to our house. After I moved away Mama would even "dress" (clean) a chicken once in awhile and mail it off to me from this rural route and mark the box perishable and it would be refrigerated and sent on to me and arrive in good order. She also mailed me sweet potatoes, pecans, cakes and pies the same way and I received them with great delight. It was a real treat to get a "care" package from home long before care packages came into being for our soldiers in World War II.

We worked on the farm in the fields but were not supposed to ever look like we were field workers, sunburned. So Mama made us put on sunbonnets every time we stepped out of the house "or we would end up as brown as ginger cakes." Along with these sunbonnets, we wore the boys' overalls, long sleeved shirts buttoned at the wrist and on top of this we wore long gloves made from cutting the foot off some old black stockings and making a hole for the thumb and only allowing the first joint of our fingers to protrude in order to stop any single ray of sun from touching our complexion. We did not have creams and lotions for our faces but we used buttermilk on our skin and sometimes slices of cucumber to help us be more beautiful.

Mary was always very beautiful but not as beautiful as she wanted to be or thought she was. She had freckles and she hated them. She would generally succeed in talking me out of the few pennies I earned working in the field in order to buy Stillman's freckle cream, which was supposed to remove them. I later learned it had mercury in it as a bleach and it is a wonder she did not poison herself with it. We had an all-purpose medication for cuts, etc., called Cloverine salve. I think it was nothing more than vasoline with a little perfume in it. We also had iodine, which was used on cuts. This burned like fire when applied to a cut and on me it would blister the skin around the cut. I must have been allergic to something in iodine.

We made it fun to do some of the chores we were required to do. For example, the peanuts, which were to be used for planting, had to be shelled by hand, and since we had quite large fields devoted to growing peanuts this meant that we had to shell a lot of them. So every night we each were parceled out a portion of peanuts to shell before going to bed. After a while we got tired of this deal and decided to have peanut shellings. Our house had a big wide hall that went all the way through the house so on the day of the peanut shelling we took all of the chairs and lined them up in the hallway, along each wall, and invited all of the young people in the community to come to a peanut shelling. When they arrived they were given shoe boxes, pans and roasters from the kitchen and any other suitable container for the peanuts, and lined up in the chairs and put to work to see who could shell the most peanuts by bedtime, around 8:30 or 9 o'clock. We would shell our fingers off as we laughed and talked and if Mama and Papa were not looking, seeing if we could hit someone down the line with a well thrown peanut. Sometimes we would "parch" (roast) peanuts and cook syrup down and make peanut brittle while we were shelling the peanuts. This was always a fun time with our friends and we looked forward to peanut shellings.

Another fun thing was cane grinding. We had a cane mill down at the bottom of the hill and we made syrup for our family as well as for the other families in the community. Usually the cane was ground early in the mornings and then the syrup would be cooked down during the day. The neighbors hauled their cane down and stacked it along the fence, and Papa knew which stack belonged to which family. The

neighbors paid him for cooking their syrup by giving him every fourth gallon he made. When we decided to have a cane grinding we would pass the word up the road to the neighbors and they would all gather at the cane mill late in the afternoon and the mill would still be grinding juice. We younguns would play games, drink cane juice and sit around and tell ghost stories about "hants" and hanted houses. I never knew there was such a word until I looked it up two days ago when I was thinking about writing about this. It really is in the dictionary. I thought it was just our way of saying things.

The fiber from the cane stalk is called pumings. And this was piled up in a large mound and left to disintegrate. These mounds afforded many happy hours of play for us. We rolled down them, we slid down them on our back sides and we caught bullis vines in the spring and shook the muscadines (official name of bullises) and swung out from the top of the mound a-la-Tarzan and Jane. Great fun.

Being paid in syrup for making it for the neighbors meant that we had much more syrup than our family could possibly use, although we used a lot. Papa would take a few gallons at the time and take it to town and trade it out at Thompson's general store for the things he needed to buy for our use. We did not have to buy very much since we grew almost everything we ate. About all he had to buy was flour for making biscuits, black pepper, which Mama bought, along with vanilla flavoring, from the Watkins man, coffee, tea and such other things that we did not grow. Mama also bought liniment and fly spray from the Watkins man. The Watkins man was a person who traveled the country selling patent medicine, Vicks salve for croups and colds and mustard for mustard plasters for your chest when you had a deep cough, and other items farm families might need. He came by our house about once a month and called out in a loud and cheery voice, "Anything in the Watkins line todayyyyyy?" His car smelled so good, like cloves, black pepper, vanilla flavoring and all kinds of other goodies and we usually needed something.

Mama sent her surplus butter and eggs to town by Papa and he sold them at Thompson's store but he got money for them and this was Mama's butter and egg money, which she hoarded so when she got a chance to go to town she had a few dollars of her own that she could spend for a length of voile or other material to make herself or one of us a Sunday dress. This material would have been bought at Thompson's Dry Goods store. Periodically Papa would have instructions from Mama to go to Thompson's and pick up needles, thread, buttons, snaps or a bolt of material so she could make us girls dresses either for church or school. Mama was a very good seamstress and made all of our clothes. I don't ever remember seeing her cut anything out by a pattern except a pattern she had cut out of newspaper. If she saw someone with a dress she liked she would ask them to let her cut a pattern off of it and then she would make dresses for herself or for us like it. All of us would get a dress off of the same bolt of fabric but they would not look alike because Mama would trim them all in a different way so we did not look like peas in a pod, she said.

Other fun things were cake walks, taffy pullings, box suppers and once in a great while we could go to someone else's house for square dancing. Dancing and card playing were not allowed in our house when we were growing up. A cake walk was a gathering, at the school mostly, where a big circle would be drawn on the floor with numbers printed on it. Each number represented a cake that someone had baked and donated. Everyone marched around the circle while someone played the fiddle or some other simple instrument such as the jew's-harp or harmonica and when the music stopped whoever was on the number that had been selected beforehand won the cake represented by the number. Each walker had to pay a small amount, maybe a quarter or fifty cents to walk, and the school made a few dollars for its use. This money could have been used to buy the plays we put on, I suppose.

A box supper was a little different. The girls in the community would pack a box supper for two and wrap it up as nicely as they could and decorate the outside to make it as attractive as possible. The box would contain fried chicken, potato salad, sliced tomato or tomato sandwiches, pimento cheese sandwiches, slices of cake and/or pie and any other goody they could think of and it would be put up for auction. Whoever made the highest bid got the box and the girl who made it to eat supper with him. Whichever of the boys who had saved the most money would keep the bidding going until he got the one he wanted. Sometimes you had to eat with someone you didn't really like just because he outbid your "feller."

Mama made all of our clothes. I don't recall ever having a "bought ready made" dress as we called them, until I was grown and saved enough cotton-picking money to buy one. She made our underwear out of flour sacks. We bought flour by the 50-pound bag. Behind the kitchen door we had a meal box, which Papa had built. It was a box

with two compartments, one side for corn meal and the other for flour. It stood off the floor on legs and had a lid that could be lifted up to get the flour or meal, and Mama also kept her biscuit tray in the side with the flour. I spent many hours sitting on top of this box in the warmth of the kitchen. Sometimes reading a book or just watching and listening to what was going on in the kitchen. It was a cozy warm corner and whoever was sitting on the meal box usually got told when to stick another piece of wood in the stove and when to run out to the woodpile and bring in a turn of wood. Another funny use of the word "turn," meaning armload.

When the flour sacks were empty, they were carefully washed to remove the printing which said "Birdsey's Best" in white letters on a red background, and saved to be used for many things, among them making drawers for Papa and the boys and underpants for us. The sacks were a thin cool fabric and were used for dish towels, milk straining cloth and many other things. These flour sack underpants we wore every day. Underpants were called bloomers in those days. One summer Mama got some black sateen, a soft shiny material, and made us black sateen bloomers. This was years before shorts for girls were heard of. But Mary, La Verne and I promptly tucked the tail of our dresses into the bloomers and ergo, we had turned the bloomers into a forerunner of shorts.

In later years flour sacks and chicken feed sacks were printed with pretty prints and were used to make aprons and sometimes even dresses for the little girls. The cornmeal was ground from corn which we grew on the farm. We would shuck and shell the corn, and Papa and Buddy would take it to a grist mill and have it ground into cornmeal. We ate cornbread with all of our vegetables and ate hot biscuits every morning for breakfast. In much later years Mama would send to town for "lightbread" to make sandwiches for the school kids but aside from that we only ate biscuits and cornbread.

Being retired for a number of years I never paid much attention to the day of the week or month, so when I really wanted to know "when it was" I usually had to search around for a calendar or check the weather channel on the TV to see what day and time it was. Can you believe, I discovered I could just glance down in the right hand corner of my computer screen and glean this valuable information?

Here I am 82 years old and working on a computer! I am headed pell-mell down the information superhighway to the year 2000! Except they don't say 2000, they say Y2K. It took me awhile to figure out what they meant by Y2K but I finally did. There are all kinds of predictions of gloom and doom about these monsters crashing when the clock strikes midnight and I remember the story of Cinderella when her carriage turned back into a pumpkin at the stroke of midnight and wonder if that is what they are talking about. Yes, I named my computer "The Monster." It does monstrous things. Mary named hers "Sweet Pea" but hers is blue so it needed a gentler name than my beige one.

We lived at the top of a red clay hill in Georgia and when it rained hard, if there were any cars on the road you could be sure that sooner or later there would be a call from our front yard for Mr. Ed to come and pull someone out of the ditch. No ice I ever drove over in Washington years later was as slick and dangerous to drive over as a red clay hill in Georgia. Believe me, I have spent many days in the ditch on this information super highway and I have many crashes stored up on my C Drive to prove it. However, yesterday was a red letter day for me. I finally got out of the ditch on downloading and retrieving documents that are being sent to me by e-mail, which is how I am communicating these days. It is not enough just to push the download button and think you have got it. You may have it but where the hell is it. All this does is just pitch the thing into a giant size wastebasket and you can't find it when you need it. I just assume that many of my downloaded e-mails ended up in e-mail heaven. These dead bodies will have to be removed from my C Drive but I will have to do this with strict supervision so as not to delete (pitch out) things I really need, or want.

How did I ever get involved with a computer in the first place? I had lived back when we drove a mule and buggy to town and cooked our meals on a wood burning "Home Comfort" range – never mind that I now do almost all of my cooking with a microwave oven – and swept the yards instead of mowing the lawn and suddenly here I am involved with a computer thereby putting to rest the old saying "YOU CAN'T TEACH AN OLD DOG NEW TRICKS," but I haven't learned them all yet!

One day my beloved Steve (my son-in-law) came over and announced that it was time for me to have a computer. I protested rather vigorously but where Steve is

concerned I am somewhat of a pushover so he dragged me out to the garage and demanded the keys to my car, which has a large trunk and hauled me off to the computer store. I had no earthly idea what we were looking for but he did. He conducts his entire law practice alone on his computer from a room in his condo at St. Pete Beach and only types with one finger in the bargain. Here I am typing with nine fingers; the thumb of the left hand does nothing to help out in typing. After about an hour of looking at all of the equipment in the computer store it was time to make a decision. Meanwhile, I had found a chair and plopped myself down to wait until the reason for my being there arrived – handing over the Visa card and signing it.

I could not believe the mountain of boxes we had acquired. They filled the huge trunk of my car and also the back seat. We hauled all of this merchandise back to my condo and Steve tore into the boxes like a kid on Christmas morning. He worked until midnight setting the thing up and explaining to me the rudiments of how it worked. I looked on in utter consternation and terror. I was also flabbergasted that I had been so foolish as to spend \$1,500 on this thing about which I knew less than nothing and for which I had no earthly need, and furthermore I was terrified of touching it. When Steve came back to help me get started two days later he said I had opened and left open 32 windows. Not knowing what a window was I did not know what he was talking about. I had simply “clicked the mouse” trying to make the thing go. My only previous experience with a mouse was one where you put a little cheese on a trap and tried to catch him. Now this thing in my hand is a mouse!

Steve knew that I enjoyed playing bridge and solitaire so he installed these two games for me. For the first month I practiced these games trying to learn how to control this mouse – which in itself is not easy to do if you are not accustomed to mice. Mine sometimes runs a little wild when I am trying to zero in on something.

Anyway, yesterday was a red letter day for me. I managed to drag what I am writing out of Word Perfect where I am working and saved it, attached it to an e-mail and flashed it off to my darling granddaughter Page in Pittsburgh with a copy to her mother at St. Petersburg Beach, and I could have sent copies to my sister and niece in California with one fell swoop. Talk about progress, I have come a long way, baby, from that day in the computer store. And from the two-room school house in Georgia.

Much to my amazement, this computer has brought various members of our family much closer together. We are communicating with each other much more than ever before. I talked Mary (or rather Mona, her daughter) into getting one. We now write to each other every day and are on the buddy line fairly frequently. Mona got one for Mary, not herself. Mona is an artist who does all of her work on the computer, and her husband is a stock broker, so that is a real computer family – their kids do their homework on the computer

Talk about the information super highway, we all went to Greece last summer with Steve and Margo going to Turkey before I left for Greece, and we were in daily communication by e-mail so that I could follow their progress in Istanbul and all of Turkey right from my condo in Largo. I knew when they visited the Blue Mosque and when they visited Topkapi Palace, and when they joined us in Athens, we sent and received e-mails to and from our relatives in Atlanta, California, Pittsburgh and wherever else we chose.

I even remember the first time I ever saw an airplane. Mama went out to the smokehouse to cut some meat or get a soup bone or something of the sort and called frantically to us in the kitchen to hurry outside and see what was up in the sky – it was not a bird or Superman but a plane. Later on I went to a field just outside Cochran and went for a ride. For \$1 you could go up for about a five- or ten-minute ride. It was beautiful up there looking down and seeing the fields and houses below.

Learning to operate a computer was not altogether different from my experience in learning to drive a car. When I was about 16 years old suddenly Cochran acquired a shirt factory. This meant jobs in town that paid real money to those of us farm kids who could grab one of these jobs. I was one of them who succeeded in getting one – but how was I to get to town to accept this job? By this time we had acquired a family car, a big black Chevrolet with extra wheels on each side next to the engine, on the running board. It was quite impressive looking – but how to make it get from the farm to town and the shirt factory and back to the farm was far beyond my capabilities. Those who could drive, namely Buddy and Albert, two of my brothers, did not have time or the inclination to drive me to and from my new job each day. What was I to do? Shug, my oldest sister, was out at our house on Sunday before I was scheduled to go to work at 7 a.m. on Monday and she knew how to drive. She had to drive as

her husband, Lucian, was blind and could not drive. Her son always said you could tell she had been taught how to drive by a blind man! The reason for this remark being that she was inclined to get to talking and looking at something and heading the car in the direction of her gaze. However, she managed to drive well into her 90s, and the last car she bought was a Thunderbird, which she said she had always wanted. I never knew her to be involved in an accident or get in the ditch on those red clay hills between the farm and Cochran where she lived.

She volunteered to take me out on Sunday afternoon and teach me how to drive. So away we went. We drove around the countryside for two or three hours and she let me steer the car and showed me how to push in the clutch and change the gears, and decided I knew enough to drive to town the next day to go to work. So I drove back to our house. Only a couple of problems. The brakes did not work very well and you sort of had to coast to a stop, and she had not shown me how to use the reverse gear. I would not have been able to back up even if she had because how can you see where you are going if you are going backward! Anyway, morning came and I had to go to work. I made it to the factory and looked for a wide open place to park so I would neither have to depend on the brakes nor my ability to back up. When time came to go home I drove all the way around the building so as not to need to maneuver to get back out and onto the road to go home. At the end of a week of driving my palms had corns on them from holding the steering wheel so tightly, trying to drive and stop the car. I thought the tighter I held on the better I could control the thing as I had done in driving old Brown Kate to school. Eventually I did learn to drive the car and have been driving ever since – accident free so far, and without glasses

Mama always had a saying: "Take it a little bit at the time, like the cat eating the grindstone!" And that is certainly what I had to do learning to drive both a car and a C Drive. I wonder why it is called a C Drive. Maybe it means computer drive. Why not an A drive like the old model A Fords?

But before there were Model A Fords, there were Model T Fords, lovingly called "Tin Lizzies." Buddy bought one of these models and as in "Oklahoma" it had eisenglass curtains that you buttoned all around in case there was a change in the weather. I don't believe I could have learned to drive one of these models. First you had to crank it. On the steering wheel there were a couple of levers that had to be set – one was called the magneto and maybe the other was the spark, I don't remember. These had to be set just right and then you stuck the crank in the front end under the radiator and cranked and cranked and cranked. Finally, after much cranking the thing would begin to sputter and you had to be quick to get out of the way as it would start to move as if to run over the cranker. Fortunately I was too young and small ever to try to drive this car. Herschel later bought a Ford Roadster with a rumble seat that you opened up. There was a lid back where you might expect a trunk to be and when you lifted it there was a seat big enough for two and you rode sitting on the outside of the car. You also could remove the top from over the driver and passenger and everyone was sitting outside and riding! I was allowed to drive this vehicle but only if Herschel was in the passenger's seat. Then he bought a red Pontiac convertible – boy that was living. He would drive up those red clay hills when they were covered with mud and slick as glass put on the brakes and throw this car into a spin and spin around in the middle of the road two or three times. I put that car into the ditch one time and someone had to come with a mule and pull me out. I got into the ditch one other time in my driving on the farm. One day there was no one to drive Mama and Papa to church but me. By this time we had acquired a beautiful Ford V-8 and I was to drive the new car. Everything was fine until I met a car right in the middle of a big sand bed. Wanting to make sure I did not damage the new car I pulled as far over as possible and the sandy shoulder simply melted from under me and I was in the ditch. If you have ever driven in the sand at the beach you know how challenging this can be. I doubt you are allowed to drive on the beach any more but when I was young driving on the beach at Jacksonville, St. Augustine and Daytona, was what we most liked to do.

This almost cost me my life once when I was riding with a friend at Jacksonville Beach when his car was hit by a speeding driver as we attempted to turn around on the beach. The other car hit my side of the car up where the front door hinged onto the body of the car and threw me out across the beach. I landed on my back and was paralyzed for several days while Tina, and Kelly, her husband, and Mama spent a great deal of their time with me in the hospital. Tina and Kelly had sent for Mama to come down to Jacksonville when they saw how badly injured I was. Eventually my legs regained their feelings and I recovered completely. I have often wondered if that accident might have contributed to the backaches I have suffered in later life.

The country roads are all paved now but when I was a girl growing up they were just dirt roads. The chain gang, prisoners who wore black and white striped uniforms and were chained together, worked the roads. Several times each year the gang would be brought out, along with a very large road scraper and the washboard and rutty surface would be scraped smooth and the extra dirt would be piled up along the shoulders and left. You sure hoped there would not come a rain for awhile for if it did all of this scraping and smoothing and piling of dirt along the sides would turn the road into a quagmire. The first car that came along would make ruts and all of the subsequent cars would have to stay in the ruts in order to travel. One of the most harrowing experiences I ever had on muddy roads was once when I went to Macon with Shug and Lucian and we stayed too long and "dark caught us." It poured rain and we had to come all the way from Macon in the rain over red clay hills for the entire 40 miles at night.

That is in the same category as once when Steve, Margo and I decided to drive from Washington, D.C., to Cincinnati over a George Washington Birthday weekend to visit his family. We left Friday after work and were going to drive all night. We hit snow in the mountains and drove over some harrowing mountain roads with hairpin turns and switchbacks. Not a light or sign of habitation to be seen anywhere. Unfortunately there were many large trucks on the same road that night. Eventually, we reached a small town but the only hotel was full. We finally got a room in a run-down motel, with no heat and not much light but at least it was better than an icy mountain road at midnight!

May 8, 1999. Well, here I am back again this morning on this memory thing. I don't quite know how I got talked into doing this except my dear daughter, Margot, must have thought I needed to do something to justify the purchase of "The Monster," my computer. Being very frugal people, you just don't buy something and let it sit there and not earn its keep, so I was assigned a project to "get the good out of this thing" as my mother would have said. Writing these memories is sort of like cleaning out the closets of your brain. You know that it won't be long before you will have to move out of this old house and if you don't write down the stuff you have stashed back thinking that some day you might need it, then no one will ever know you had it when the house is bulldozed under and it as well as the house will be gone forever. So I keep opening old dusty boxes and bags of memories that have been saved. Not because you thought you would ever use them again but like some old clothes that no longer fit, you liked them and you could not just pitch them out. I am forever running across things that I did not remember putting away. Many of these things I have not thought of in years and am surprised myself when they pop out at me.

The other day I even remembered a dream I used to have about flying, long before I knew that people really could fly if they had an airplane. In my dream I would climb up on the meat bench in the back yard and fly all the way around the house and land on the watermelon bench in the front yard. Imagine my disappointment after this dream and I went out and tried it only to land on my feet on the ground when I jumped off the meat bench. I do remember when my children were young and we took the long and arduous drive from Washington, D.C., where we lived, back to the farm to visit my parents, the girls would say "Mommie, tell us about olden days." We did not have radios in cars in those days and to entertain them on the long trip I would regale them with tales about when I was a little girl. I guess this desire stuck with Margo and she still wants me to tell her about "olden" days. Olden days for me go back to the time when I lived on the farm and if we heard a car coming up the road we would all run as fast as we could to the front yard just to see it go whizzing by at about 10 miles or so an hour! There were no freeways in those olden days and we drove all the way from Washington to Cochran on two-lane highways, with the last five miles out to the farm on dirt roads – and how I hoped it would not be raining when I hit this dirt road, for I still dreaded those red clay, slippery hills in spite of the fact that by now I was well accustomed to driving on ice and snow. Those hills still intimidated me.

I drove a car for 20-odd years even before I needed a driver's license. When I got my first driver's license all I had to do was tell them that I wanted one and thank goodness I did not have to take a test. I had never done any parallel parking in my life and had no idea what it was or how to do it. We always just pulled in head first to the curb and stopped when we hit the sidewalk. They still park that way in Cochran.

I even remember when there were no radios. We did have a gramophone. Papa bought it for our new house with the living room, so we could play records. One of our first records was one that came with the machine and it was called "The Fox Chase." This was the sound of dogs barking and running through the woods as if they were

chasing a fox with a little music, mostly harmonica playing to dramatize the chase. We played this hours on end. I can still hear it in my head.

We were delighted when Shug and Lucian, who lived in town, got a radio – a crystal set – and we would go to her house in town to listen to the radio. There were such programs as Amos and Andy, a blackface skit about black people. We tried to go to town every week to listen to this program. Finally, we got a radio for the farm – a Philco – which ran on a car battery. The symbol was a white dog sitting in front of what looked like a big bullhorn with his head cocked to the side and the words underneath said “Listening to his master’s voice

Many years later after I had lived in Washington for quite some time, my mother came to visit me. Part of the entertainment for her was to take her down to Bethesda, Md., and stand on the sidewalk in front of a store and look at TV in the window of the store. This thought puts me to thinking what it may be like for all of you following after me. Here I sit at a computer writing all of this. What will you be writing or thinking about when you are 82 years old? I wish I could pop in on you and see! Maybe some of you will be living on the moon by then. I am sure that this information super highway will look like a two-lane road or even maybe an old country dirt road by then. That’s the bad thing about moving out of this old house, I wonder what the new neighborhood will look like.

I just got a telephone call saying they had the perfect apartment for me at the retirement home where I am going to live. These places were always called “Old Folks Homes” when I was growing up. Funny, I don’t much feel like old folks except when my back and hips hurt and I have trouble getting the groceries in from the car to the kitchen and then standing at the sink or counter preparing a meal. A man came yesterday to repair the wall in my computer room (imagine me with a computer room – that’s what I now call the front bedroom of my condo) and told me I could not be much older than he. He said he was 65 and when I told him I was 82 he refused to believe I was the same age as his mother. Boy, what a lift that gave me. It made my day! I still drive my car alone to and from Macon, Ga., a couple of times each year to visit family members who still live there, although driving is not quite as much fun as it used to be. We really should flatter each other once in awhile just to make someone feel good. It doesn’t cost anything and it is only a white lie and not really a sin at all. I have spent a lot of my life trying to figure out what was “sin” and what was not. My parents went to church regularly and took us younguns with them. We were not required to actually go into the church when we got there but were left outside in the churchyard to play with the kids of other church members who had brought them along because there were no baby sitters to leave them with at home. If you were a parent you drug your kids along wherever you went.

Anyway, Mama and Papa belonged to Mt. Horeb Primitive Baptist Church. The Baptist church nearest to our house was Missionary Baptist and they had an organ in the church. Primitive Baptist churches did not have music and the hymns were sung a cappella. In addition, they performed foot-washing rituals. Every third Saturday and Sunday in August was “Big Meeting” time and this was when communion would be taken and feet would be washed. Mama always prepared the bread and wine for this service and took it to church. She baked the unleavened bread on a griddle on the top of the Home Comfort range in the kitchen, wrapped it carefully in a clean piece of flour sack or other cloth and took it to church to be broken into small pieces and given to the church members as the sacrament. I can still hear my cousin Jim Floyd sitting on the front row of the church and “striking the pitch” with his beautiful voice and then all others would join in the singing. I still have Mama’s old song book someplace. Sunday Big Meeting would be an all-day affair, sometimes with as many as three preachers preaching so you can see why the kids were left in the yard to play. Otherwise pretty soon there would have been pandemonium in the church when the restless kids all got to “squalling.” Boy, those old preachers, especially Brother Spivey (who looked somewhat like Teddy Roosevelt) could preach hellfire, brimstone and damnation, with pounding on the pulpit for emphasis. And then there was Brother Jim Frank Dykes who looked something like Inkabod Crane must have looked. He was not as powerful a preacher as Spivey. Brother Josh Chance finally became the pastor of the church and my mother and father became closest friends with Brother Josh and Sister Mandy. Their great-grandson, Sammy Raffield, is married to Mama and Papa’s granddaughter, Judy Floyd. Well, one or more of the preachers would preach in the morning and finally break for dinner on the ground about 12:30. Dinner on the ground, ah how wonderful that was! All of the women in the church would have been baking and cooking all kinds of goodies for Big Meeting. They would have fried chicken and ham, potato salad, baked cakes and pies, made chicken pie, cooked butter beans and black eyed peas, fried and boiled okra made biscuits and cornbread

and maybe even have brought a loaf of "lightbread" with pimento and cheese to spread on it. Pickles of every sort would have been brought: pickled peaches and cucumbers, corn relish and preserves, jams and jellies, boxes and baskets full of every imaginable thing to eat. The men would have set up a table, 15 or 20 feet long, out under the pine trees in the churchyard. The table would have been constructed of rough sawn boards laid across saw horses to form a table. The women would have packed their best white tablecloths to spread out on this table and then would have proceeded to unpack all of the boxes and baskets of food. They would have brought plates and knives and forks from their kitchens at home as there were no such things as paper plates and plastic knives and forks in those days. All of this would be piled high on the table for everyone to eat. What feasts they were.

After eating all we could, the remains would be packed up in the boxes and made ready to take back home. After a visit to the privy in the edge of the woods, the congregation would reassemble to continue with the preaching and foot washing. The church had small metal wash pans, which were stored in a small cabinet fastened to the wall beside the pulpit. These basins were kept there to be used each third Sunday in August. About four o'clock in the afternoon, the meeting would break up and people would begin to return to their homes.

These Primitive Baptist churches were scattered all around the countryside, and each met on a different Saturday and Sunday of the month. Trail Branch met on the fourth Saturday and Sunday. Sweet Home met on the first Saturday and Sunday. Hawkinsville met on the second Saturday and Sunday. When there was a fifth Saturday and Sunday, then one of the churches would request that Fifth Sunday meeting be held at their church. One of the reasons they met on these Sundays was to enable different members of the home church to go to another church and hear their preacher. Cousin Jim and Cousin Ava Floyd always came by and took Mama and Papa with them when they were going to Trail Branch, Sweet Home or any other church.

Our Lord cousins lived in the Trail Branch community, and since their meeting was the fourth Sunday and they came to our third Sunday meeting, then sometimes I was allowed to go spend a week with the Lords, and Mama and Papa could get me the next Sunday when they went to Trail Branch. How I did love going to Cousin Robert and Cousin Dolly Lord's house for a visit! Ruth, Rosa, Susie, Ben, Ivy, Lorene, Louise, Minton and many other names I can't remember. Oh yes, Nanny Barfield, who lived across the field. We had to pass their house on the way to the Bee Tree hole where we went swimming. We also went for hayrides in the wagon and Cousin Robert had billy goats, which I never saw anywhere else.

The preachers at these churches were, themselves, farmers just like all farmers, except they "had been called to preach." They were sort of circuit rider preachers and were paid the few dollars, five or ten, however much could be collected, to help pay for their gas to travel from their communities to the meeting places to preach. If they were preaching at Mt. Horeb, they would come to church and preach on Saturday and go home with someone to spend the night Saturday night – frequently at our house or Cousin Jim's house. If they stayed at our house, then on Saturday night Mama and Papa would get word around the community that there would be singing at our house on Saturday afternoon or night and many neighbors would come to join in.

Any third Saturday night you could almost be sure we would have someone spending the night – either the preacher or one of the visiting church members. And when dinner was not served on the ground at church, several people would come home with Mama and Papa from church. After I got old enough to be left behind at home I was put in charge of seeing that the front porch was swept, the younguns washed and into clean clothes and a clean white starched tablecloth was on the table and the table was set ready for dinner to be served as soon as they got home from church. Our table would seat eight or 10 people and frequently there would be three sittings, beginning with the men and gradually getting down to the younguns. By this time there would be nothing left of the fried chicken except maybe a wing and of the chicken and dumplings except a foot or two and some dumplings. Yes, Mama cooked the chicken feet. They gave the dumplings a good flavor she said. They were skinned beforehand and were pristine white and Mama always ate them. She said she liked them but I never tried them. Mama also always ate the chicken back. I suspect she chose this piece so as to let the others have the best pieces.

I have never been what I would call a religious person. I sort of believed in live and let live and do unto others as you wanted to be done to and it has served me pretty well all these years. I don't ever remember hearing very much about how God loved me or any of the things I hear the preachers talking about these days on TV. About the only

time I heard about God being loving was when someone who was exasperated at you or something else and they would say rather sternly, "Oh, for the love of God," why did you do or not do something about which they were not particularly pleased. It seemed to me the Wrath of God was a more likely state of affairs. It appeared, from things I heard all the time that God was pretty displeased about something most of the time and I had better watch out or his wrath would come down on my head when I least expected it.

I heard all about heaven with streets paved with gold, which seemed a little far-fetched to a girl who lived on a red clay road that got slick as glass when it rained and who earned about three or four dollars at the most for a week of working in the field. It sure seemed like a waste of money to pave a street with gold to me. In the summer the church just down the road from us, Limestone Missionary Baptist Church, had a week of Big Meeting (they sometimes called it revival) and even though our family did not belong to that denomination, we children went there to church every night. This meant that I had more than a dozen white shirts to starch and iron for the boys to wear to church. In those days we did not have electricity so naturally there were no electric irons. This being June, it was pretty hot already in Georgia, but never mind the shirts had to be ironed. So I built up a fire of oak logs in the fireplace in Mama and Papa's room and stood the flat irons on end in front of the fire and heated them and this is how I ironed these broadcloth shirts. No wrinkle proof fabric in those days either. If you accidentally got the iron too hot or did not wipe any ashes completely off and smudged one of these shirts, you had to rewash and starch it and start the process all over again. By the time I finished this job I was standing in a puddle of sweat. Of course, there were no electric fans to turn on – there was no electricity, remember? Can you imagine having to go to bed that night in a room where a hot oak fire had been going all day? And it a featherbed to boot. What does "to boot" mean? I guess it means "in the bargain."

With four boys going every night even if they wore a shirt three times it meant a dozen to "do up." We went to church to be with our friends, not to be religious or "get religion." We would not have dreamed of becoming a member of that church. As a matter of fact, you were supposed to wait to join any church until you were called, I suppose by God, to join. Buddy is now 98 years old and has never joined the church, so if he doesn't hurry up he will not hear his call. But he went to church all his life. I suppose he was torn between which denomination to belong as he married a "Missionary Baptist," so there was a difference of opinion.

You sure did not want to join the church in the winter and have to wade out into that ice cold creek to be baptized. Sometimes they would almost have to crack the ice to get in, and as soon as you came up from the water someone else would have waded out dragging a coat on their arm to lay around your soaking wet shoulders. That takes guts or faith or whatever you want to call it. I never got struck dumb as St. Paul did on the road to Damascus.

Papa and Cousin Jim and Brother Josh would sit around for hours on end reading and discussing the "scriptures." None of the three had ever attended school for more than a year or two, so I don't have any idea if they could even pronounce the words, much less understand what they meant. They would sing about Beulah Land and crossing over the Jordan, only they pronounced it "Jurdan" as it is still pronounced in Georgia. Cairo as in Egypt, is pronounced Karo in Georgia, and Houston as in Texas, is called "Howstan."

The family Bible was an enormous book about four inches thick and the size of a Webster's unabridged dictionary, the kind you find in libraries on a stand all to itself. You could not possibly sit and read it as you would a regular book. It would break your arms in short order, so the only solution was to sit hunched over a table and try to read it. Births, deaths, and marriages were all recorded on special pages provided for those records. Those were the vital statistics for most families.

These country churches belonged to the "Ebenezer Association" and periodically each church would get the "sosation" meeting. Boy what a time that would be. The men would go to the church where this meeting was being conducted and construct a "brush arbor" out under the trees. They would build a frame as if for a house, with branches of trees cut and laid across the top for cover, a quite large structure, since people would be coming from miles around from the various communities to attend this meeting. The benches from the church would be hauled out and set up under this arbor and additional benches constructed from lumber to take care of the crowd of people. This meeting would go on for three or four days, with the first day or two being taken up by the business of the various churches. The remaining days would

be devoted to preaching and singing with dinner on the ground both Saturday and Sunday.

We would spend weeks preparing for these meetings, cooking everything in sight to be taken for these dinners. The house would have been cleaned from stem to stern, featherbeds and quilts taken out and draped over the yard fence to sun and air, floors scrubbed clean, water buckets scoured, yards swept, kerosene lamps cleaned and filled with fresh kerosene and any other cleaning Mama or Papa could think of. This was an important time and lots of people would be coming to our house to spend the nights – so many that pallets would have to be made on the floor so everyone would have a place to sleep. We younguns loved to sleep on those pallets with our friends, and would talk all night if Papa did not call out for us to get quiet and go to sleep. A giant size slumber party for the kids.

We also had all day sings at various places such as the school house and Jay Bird Springs. These were similar to all-day meetings except there would not be any preaching. Quartets, solo singers, duets and general audience participation would go on all day. The songs would be mostly church hymns and some Negro spirituals. But ballads and folk songs would also be included at these sings. All of my older sisters had taken singing lessons and from an itinerant singing teacher before I was born. They sang “square” notes but did not know how to read “round” notes to this day. I don’t know the difference. Here again all the participants would have brought boxes and baskets of food, which was served and shared by all.

Cotton picking time unfortunately coincided with third Sunday in August and we knew we had to hit the cotton patch before daylight on Monday morning after Big Meeting. We had many acres planted with cotton so this meant many weeks in the field picking cotton. Mama would take her sewing machine out to the front porch where it would be cooler than in the house and make cotton sacks. This was a long narrow sack made of heavy canvas, with a strap to put around your shoulder, in which you dropped the locks of cotton as you picked them. These sacks were made long enough so that the bottom dragged on the ground behind you as you walked to relieve the weight you had to carry. They would become very heavy by the time you got them filled. You would pick one row down and one back to the place where you emptied these bags either onto a burlap cotton sheet on the ground or into a hand-woven cotton basket. Buddy and the field hands usually picked down the middle between two rows, carrying two rows at a time. I could never keep up with the others and Buddy was always having to come over to my row and catch me up. He let me empty my sack in his basket or on his cotton sheet and when we picked for another farmer and got paid for it he gave me credit for having picked a hundred pounds and that is what I would earn for the day. Sometimes I would end up with two or three dollars for the week. This is what Mary talked me out of for her freckle cream.

Picking cotton was hard, back-breaking work. But even so, we sometimes had fun doing it. If a watermelon vine had volunteered and come up in the middle of the cotton patch and we found a ripe melon on it, it was great to “bust” it open and eat it right there in the field.

We had several colored families living on our farm and we also hired transient workers, farm workers from other family farms, to help us with such things as picking cotton when they were not needed or working on their home farms. There could be as many as maybe 15 or 20 pickers in a field at one time. We would get the colored people to start singing spirituals late in the afternoon. About “an hour by sun,” Papa or Buddy would announce they were going to the house to get the wagon and we would pass the word that it was about “quittin time” and you would hear the call go out, finish up your row, it’s quittin time. The wagon would come across the field and Papa and the boys would weigh up. Buddy could pick 400 pounds in a day if the cotton was good,

Papa kept a record in a little notebook of how much each worker picked for the day so he could pay them at the end of the week. He kept a record of how much the rest of us picked so he would know when a bale had been picked. We younguns always climbed up on top of the cotton in the wagon and rode home – getting to the house just at dusk, and we still had to do our chores such as bring in stove wood, fill the tank and bring in fresh water for the night, bring in the slop jar (a container for the bedroom so you didn’t have to go out to the privy in the dark) in case you had “to go.” After chores, we would eat supper, sit around a little while, wash our feet and go to bed. Up before dawn the next morning and off to the field for another day. How we prayed for a rain shower so we could come to the house and rest. We did not have shoes to wear in the field. We got shoes pretty soon after school started – at least by

the time cold weather came – and so we went barefoot the rest of the time. The ground would get as hot as fire in the middle of the day so we tried to step in the shade of the cotton stalks and if we walked across the corn field we jumped from one spot of shade to the next as the corn stalks were planted about four feet apart and our legs could not reach that far.

My mother and father had little or no schooling but they were both very bright. Papa could figure up how much he owed a cotton picker who picked 587 pounds of cotton at the rate of 75 cents per hundred, and Mama was also good at figures. I learned from her how to count everything in fives and tens instead of just adding straight.

Taking the first bale of cotton to the gin in Cochran was a day of celebration. Papa would come home with a 100-pound block of ice from the ice house in town and cans of condensed milk for making homemade ice cream. Papa would not touch milk or even let one of the other family members drink out of his coffee cup if they put milk in their coffee, (he swore he could taste it) but he dearly loved ice cream. He would usually bring home a mess of mullet fish from town, which Mama would cook for supper. We did not usually cook at supper time, just ate what was left over from dinner. Papa liked the pot likker from the vegetables with some cornbread broken up in it for supper. We always had a large pan of baked sweet potatoes and often we would have a sweet potato and a glass of milk for supper. These fish would have been shipped in from Savannah or from Florida as they were not a fresh water fish as we caught in the creeks around our farm. He would also bring home kit fish. This was a fish that was packed in coarse rock salt and sold in a yellow wooden tub. I think these were shipped in from some place up north. These Mama would rinse off and let them stand overnight in clear cold water to get rid of some of the salt and cook them for breakfast along with little thin hoecakes of cornbread. I loved these fish and always looked forward to getting them because we wanted a change from all the fresh fish we had.

The leftover ice from the ice cream making would be carefully wrapped in newspapers and burlap bags and placed in a tub so we could have ice tea or iced bullis juice for dinner the next day. Having something cold to drink was a rare treat for us. We had no refrigerator until Papa built one many years after we moved into our new house.

At some point in my early childhood, when I was 6 or 7 years old, I guess, Papa decided it was time to build a new house for the family. I don't remember very much about living in the old house but I do remember that he arranged for a sawmill to be brought into our woods and set up at the back side of the "New Ground." This was the land he had acquired and cleared after he had been farming the "Old Field" for a number of years. To this day, those fields are still called the "New Ground" and the "Old Field." There were many large pine trees in these woods and the sawmill began to cut them down and saw them into lumber. This lumber was hauled up to our house and stacked in triangular-shaped stacks and left there to cure. I spent many happy hours climbing over these stacks of lumber. There were several of them and we turned them into our playhouses and went to visit each other in them as if they were our homes. The neighbor girls and boys would come to visit and play with us.

Then finally came the day when we had to move out of the old house so that it could be torn down and replaced by the new one. Parts of the old house were to be salvaged if possible and incorporated into the new one. We moved about a quarter of a mile down the road into a much smaller tenant house on the farm and I do remember living in that house while our new house was being built. We were crowded into two or three rooms and even Ruth, one of my older sisters was still living at home so there would have been 12 of us, including Mama and Papa, in that small house. I believe Ruth married while we lived there for I do not remember her moving back into the new house when we went home.

We watched as our new house was being built. The stacks of lumber were hauled into Cochran to the planing mill to be planed into smooth boards, to be grooved for sealing the rooms and for all sorts of cuts and changes to be made to the rough sawn boards. Grandpa Holland came up from Florida to help with the building of the new house. I think I am correct in saying that he built the windows or maybe it was the window screens. Our new house was the talk of the community – we were building a mansion with glass door knobs even, something unheard of for farmhouses. And we were going to have a living room. We always called it "the front room," a room where no one slept but where people just sat, mostly company. This was unheard of for the time and place. We were going to have a dining room – a room used just for eating –

when everyone else in the community ate in the kitchen. In other words, we were really “going up town” out in the country!

Our old house had a kitchen that was separated from the main house by a sort of breezeway where the water buckets and wash pans were kept so you could wash up before going into the kitchen to eat. Many years later when I visited China and went for a meal at one of the communes, I found the same type wash basins on a shelf outside the dining area and we were invited to wash our hands there before eating. A small world and 50 years behind the U.S.

Finally the great day came for moving back home. While we had watched the house unfold, we had never been inside to see what it looked like or even gotten closer than the road in front to gaze at the progress. Without letting us know anything about it, Papa had gone to town and bought a new buggy, which he hitched up and drove the quarter mile down the road to fetch Mama and the younguns to our new house. We were dumbstruck when we got there and could examine all of the wonders – painted walls and even painted floors. Glass doorknobs and screens on the windows to keep the flies and mosquitoes out and a bright shiny tin roof. Papa built two swings for our front porch and we had a ball swinging in them. In later years I was to spend many happy hours sitting in one of those swings and talking with my own father about “olden times.” We were millionaires, in our minds. All of the beds were feather and we even had two iron bedsteads. The fireplaces had decorative fronts on them and mantle pieces above them. The living room fireplace was even built out of bricks set in a decorative pattern and the living room floor was not just straight boards but set in a log cabin design and painted. Who had ever heard of painting floors! We were accustomed to rough sawn boards for floors with large cracks between the boards and I had up until that time been accustomed to seeing my sisters scouring the floors with potash soap mixed with fine sand and a scouring broom made from corn shucks. Papa made the scouring broom by taking a board about two inches thick and about eight inches wide by about 16 inches long and boring holes about an inch and a half in diameter. These holes were bored at an angle and a long handle was inserted in the top to use in pushing the broom. The same design as today’s push brooms used for sweeping garages, warehouses, etc. Shucks would have been forced through the holes, and the floors were scoured with these shucks. I am sure you get the picture.

We did not have rugs or any kind of carpet, but in the kitchen and in Mama’s room we had linoleum rugs. They had flowers and other bright and colorful designs on them and were very pretty. In the kitchen stood a shiny new Home Comfort range waiting for the hundreds of meals my mother would cook over the years on this wood-burning stove and for the thousands of jars of fruits and vegetables she would can during her remaining life. Instead of the usual “side table” in the kitchen, we had a kitchen counter atop built-in cabinets and it was covered with a tin counter top! Very modern and up-to-date for those days. We had no sink in the counter, but we had no running water in the house and washed the dishes in a dishpan on this counter. Our lights were kerosene lamps – electricity and running water in the house were many years in the future.

Mama pounded many pieces of steak on the corner of this counter to tenderize them for cooking country fried steaks and gravy. Periodically Papa or someone else in the community would butcher a beef and we would have this steak. I don’t ever remember having a roast or any other kind of beef and I suspect it was because the men did not know how to do anything but cut all the beef into slices for this purpose. When someone butchered a beef, it would be cut up and placed in the wagon and whoever had butchered it would peddle the entire beef throughout the community, keeping for his family as much as he thought could be used up before it spoiled. The hides would be carefully cured and kept for making seats in chairs when the old seats were worn out. The hair would be left on these seats. These cowhide seats would last almost forever. My brother still has two small rockers with these cowhide seats, and I am sure they are more than 75 years old and have been in daily use in his farmhouse all these year

Papa had shoe lasts of various sizes and when the soles of our shoes wore out, he went to town and bought leather and replaced them. He kept his tack hammer, tacks, drawing knife for cutting the leather and other tools in a small tool house in the barn. He kept his tool house locked, and woe unto the one who ever got into this stash of tools and disturbed them. He had hammers and chisels and saws and other tools that no one was allowed to touch, ever. Of course, there were old tools that we were allowed to use if we needed them.

Once, many years later after we both had married and moved away, Mary and I came home for a visit and decided we did not like one of the barns, which was across the road in front of the house, and we decided to tear it down, so we made good use of these old tools. We tried to get the boys to move it and they refused, so she and I went at the job ourselves. Papa always kept a supply of nice lumber in the barn and when someone in the community died he would be called upon to build their casket. Mama kept a supply of white satin material with which she lined these caskets. She would sit down at her sewing machine and gather this material into a ruffle for the lining and for the pillow, which she made from cotton that had been carded and put aside for just this purpose. These caskets were made in the shape you see in pictures from the Middle East today. Wide at one end to accommodate the shoulders and slim at the other for the legs and feet. There were no undertakers called in, no one was embalmed, and the men of the community took their shovels and went to the cemetery and dug the grave, and after the funeral they put the earth over the casket and mounded it up. A wooden board would be stood on end to mark the head of the grave. The women of the community would wash the body and put it into its best clothes for burial, and it would be placed in the casket and set before an open window to keep it as cool as possible until time for the funeral. When it was time for the funeral, the casket was transported to the church if the person was a member of a church and a sermon would be preached and hymns would be sung. If not a member of a church then graveside services would be conducted. Everyone visited around the church and cemetery, for this was a time when you saw many of your old friends and acquaintances.

Many years before my grandfather Holland died, he had found a special cedar tree, which he sawed down and had made into boards for his casket, which he planned for Eddie to build. My father's name was James Edward Floyd. Mama and family members such as Grandpa Holland, called him Eddie as did close friends. Everyone else called him Mr. Ed. Grandpa may even have acquired these boards when the lumber was being sawed to build our house. All I know is that it was stored in the rafters of the barn or garage for many years before it was used and we always knew those were for Grandpa's coffin. When I was in high school in Cochran, about 1933 or 1934, I got news that rocked me to the core. My nephew, Lucian Berryhill, found me between classes and told me that Grandpa had died. I thought he meant his grandpa, my father. No, not Papa, but Grandpa Holland. I knew Grandpa Holland had been sick for quite some time and was then living at our home. Mama and Papa had put a cot in their room on which he slept so he would be in a warm room and they could look after him at night. One day while Mama was in the kitchen cooking and Papa was out doing chores, Grandpa, who could not get up alone, somehow managed to get from this cot to the closet where Papa kept his pistol in a small trunk and get the gun and back to the cot where he shot himself. Papa kept the pistol for only one purpose – to go out before daylight on Christmas morning and shoot it to announce to the world that it was Christmas morning. This is the only time it was ever shot to my knowledge. But Grandpa knew the gun was there and this handsome, bon vivant of a man could not bear the thoughts of lying there helplessly for who knew how long waiting to die. Again, he did things his way, as he had done all his life.

I never knew how he traveled from Cochran to the Everglades in those days but he did. He spent winters hunting and trapping there, coming home from time to time to tell us his tales of adventure. After our new house was built, he would arrive unexpectedly in an open touring car. We would look out the window and see a cloud of rolling dust moving up the road from about a mile away and we would race to the front porch or yard to see whoever pass. It would be Grandpa – one hand on the horn to scare the chickens and pigs from the road and the other waving his big white Panama hat. How handsome he was. I later saw Clark Gable in the movies and he was a dead ringer for Grandpa Holland. No wonder he had four wives – he was irresistible. He had a beautiful mustache, which he kept meticulously combed and waxed and a head of magnificent black hair and what tales he could and did tell. He would not drink coffee, but every morning of his life he drank a cup of boiling hot water at breakfast instead of coffee. He said it was good for his digestion.

Mama was always busy doing something – cooking, sewing, canning, preserving, mending and patching – nothing was thrown away. Clothes were patched and mended until they were "threadbare." Collars and cuffs were turned when they wore out on the outside, and pockets were patched in trousers until eventually she would have to replace them.

She saved all of her scraps and if she was not busy doing other things, she spent afternoons piecing up quilts by hand. She tried always to have two or three quilt tops pieced up so that she was ready to have a quilting at almost any time. All of our beds were covered with quilts as there were no blankets. Quilts were used in the wagon for

children to sit and lie on and on the floor for pallets when there were more people to sleep than beds to sleep on. Papa made her a quilting frame, which in the old house was hung from the ceiling in her bedroom. In the new house she simply placed the rails of the frame across the backs of chairs. When it was time for the quilting party a number of neighbor women were invited to come spend the day with Mama, and they would quilt all day. Someone would be in the kitchen cooking dinner, and when it was time to eat the men would come in from the fields and eat dinner with the women. Mama, Aunt Juliette, Aunt Sis and neighbor women would participate in these quiltings. They would laugh and talk and tell jokes, some of which might be a little naughty. Mama and Aunt Juliette, especially, liked somewhat "smutty" stories and would laugh until tears came down their faces. Both of these sisters were great practical jokers and when they pulled a practical joke that sort of backfired they would say "that sure got away" with him or her. Also to express embarrassment they would say "that got away with me so bad" or "that sure got off" with me.

Someone who was vain or "prissy" was called "stuck up." Or you might hear: "She thinks she is something on a stick." If one of us kept pestering Mama, she would say, "Oh, go to grass and chew pussley." Was she talking about parsley or purslane? I never knew.

Another thing Mama did was "lye hominy." We would shell maybe a peck of corn and Mama would put it into the wash pot filled with cold water and pour Red Devil Lye in and let it set until the husk came off the corn and the grains were soft. Then the corn would be rinsed many times in clear cold water to be sure all the lye was rinsed out. Rinsed was pronounced "wrenched" as you might do to your wrist or ankle.

She also made lye soap in the wash pot. This was done by placing scraps of fat meat in the wash pot and adding this same Red Devil Lye to it, and it would be turned into soap.

Basically the wash pots were used for boiling clothes, one for white clothes, another for lightly colored clothes, such as our dresses and towels, and the third for the work overalls and shirts of the men.

Monday was washday at our house and each Monday morning shortly after sunup three colored women, Cindy Chapman and her daughters, Ellen, and I can't remember the name of the other, would show up at our house to do the piles of dirty clothes. There were three washtubs on a "bench" out at the wash place and beginning with the white clothes they would be put through the three tubs where they would be scrubbed by each of the women on a washboard, a corrugated board where they would have had three separate soapings and scrubbings. After the third tub, they would be placed in the wash pot for white clothes and subsequently boiled in soapy water for maybe an hour while the colored clothes were being washed and prepared for the wash pot. The work clothes would be placed on the battling block and with a stick about the size of my lower arm, would be "battled" (beaten) to loosen the dirt and then they would be placed in their pot of boiling water and boiled while the white and lightly colored clothes were being rinsed. The three tubs were emptied of the dirty soapy water and would be refilled with clean clear water drawn from the well by means of lowering a bucket and "drawing" water from the well. Imagine how many times the bucket had to go down to draw six tubs and three wash pots full of water. When everything was rinsed thoroughly in the three tubs of water, then they were wrung out by hand and hung on the clothesline to dry in the sun. You never slept on sheets and pillow cases that smelled so good as did those dried in the fresh Georgia air and sun. It took these three women most of the day to get the clothes on the line to dry and if a shower came up before they were dry we would hear Mama call "there's a cloud coming up, run quickly and help me get the clothes in off the line!" Such scurrying around – no time to fold them as we went – snatch them off and run into the house and fold later.

Sheets and pillow cases were all made by Mama from unbleached muslin sheeting, which had to be seamed down the middle and hemmed. We hated new sheets because they were rough to sleep on and much preferred those that had been washed many times and softened up. Sheets were not ironed, but pillow cases were and the "Sunday" pillow cases were starched, to boot. Sunday pillow cases would be embroidered and the hems were edged with either tatting or crochet. Tatting was used on many things as all of the older girls made tatting for everything. I tried to learn how to make tatting last summer when I found Tina's tatting shuttle but could not get beyond the basic stitch, and Shug can no longer see the stitches well enough to teach me. What a pity.

All tablecloths were starched and ironed as were napkins. We only used the white tablecloth and napkins on Sunday, however. During the week we ate off oilcloth tablecloths and did not have napkins. The flour sack dish cloths served for napkins if we used anything. Papa always had a "dishrag" at his place and we sort of passed it around. However, when we left the table we went immediately to wash the grease off our hands.

Note – Annette stopped recording her memories then picked up the project again. Here is the final installment that was discovered after her death on May 11, 2006.

AFK Memories

It worked, I had not forgotten how to set up a document and save it so guess my old brain is still at least partially operational. I wanted a separate page for this in case I decide at a later date not to include this. What I am about to relate is still very painful for me even at this late stage of my life. Perhaps that is why I could not get started back on my memories.

When Shug moved to Macon to take a beauty course after the death of her husband, Lucian, there was no way for me to finish high school in Cochran so she decided to trade her baby, Bobby, off to Mama for me. Shug could not care for an infant and go to school in Macon so she arranged for Mama to keep him in exchange for me going with her to Macon to finish school. Each Saturday night after she finished at the school, we got in the car and drove to Cochran and spent the night with Mama and Papa and the family and then drove back to Macon on Sunday night. In order for Shug to get me into the high school in Macon, she had to adopt me since I was entitled to go to school only if I were her dependent.

I left all of my childhood friends and family in Cochran, including my first love, John Embry Parkerson. behind when I left and went off to a place where I did not know anyone except my sister, her son Lucian, and her niece on her husband's side so no relation to me. This was quite a trauma for me Shug's course only lasted six months so as a result she moved at the end of her course, not back to Cochran but to the adjacent town of Hawkinsville where she opened a beauty shop. This left me in Macon with no place to live so she made arrangements for a room for me at a boarding house on Cherry Street.

There were six girls living at this boarding house and I learned much later that two of them were prostitutes. But they were beautiful and full of fun and very protective of me and would not let me go out alone with a boy. I did learn a few facts of life like birth control, which I had never heard of up until that time and they even showed me what they used! This was all talked about in whispers. How quaint this all sounds now when you can find a dozen or more different types on any grocery or drugstore counter today to say nothing of them being passed out to the kids in schools. Why have we always been so inhibited when speaking about such a vital part of life as human sexuality, without which of course there would cease to be humanity. Unless you believe literally in virgin birth.

I managed to finish the year of school after Shug left and commuted to Cochran on the train every Friday afternoon after school and back to Macon on Sunday afternoon to be ready for Monday classes.

School was finally over and I went back to the farm to live. Tina wanted me to go to Jacksonville to live with her and go to business school but Papa would not allow it. I was only sixteen and too young to be away from home, never mind that I had already been away for nine months in Macon both with and without an older sister to look after me.

Came June and I would be seventeen on the 22nd. On second Sunday we went to church in Hawkinsville and the son of Mama and Papa's friends Fred and Ida Hogg (she being cousin Ava Floyd's sister) came to our house. He was a good friend of my brothers and also of mine. Jay and I did our chores and asked for permission to go to town to get the Sunday paper so we could see the "funnies" and also so Jay could see a girl he liked in Cochran. Jay, Willie Fred Hogg and I went to town. Unfortunately, it was after dark when we got home and Papa was very angry that I had stayed out after dark with a boy. I had been with two boys, one of whom was my brother who would have killed for me. This made no difference to Papa. He proceeded to get a switch the size of my finger and proceeded to "cut the blood" out of my back. I was terrified but refused to cry which angered him even more. I even said, you had better make this one a good one for you will never lay a finger on me

again. The boys finally came to my rescue and made Papa stop beating me. Here I am 82 years old and can hardly see how to type this for the tears that still come to my eyes when I talk about it. I knew then and there that I had to get away and live my own life but how. I worked at the shirt factory in Cochran and made about ten dollars a week. I finally got permission to move into a room in Cochran and share it with another girl and not drive back and forth over those muddy clay hills., I paid about \$3.00 per week for room and board and was frantically saving every penny I could get to buy a bus ticket to Jacksonville. Imagine my distress when I had saved enough and was ready to go for my ticket only to discover that my roommate or someone else had robbed me of all my savings!

I was in utter despair. I felt trapped and could see no way out of the predicament I was in. I took the only action that I could see open to me. Jay and his then girlfriend, later to become his wife, Willie Fred and I took a ride on Christmas Eve and wound up parked at Embry's Mill which was a favorite place for young people to park in those days. Everyone rode out to Embry's Mill to see if any of their friends were there. It was a beautiful spot where we picnicked and swam in the summer. Willie Fred, who was five years older than I and a life long friend of the family and almost like a brother to me, had fallen in love with me and as we sat on the back bumper of the car talking, he knew of what had happened to me and of my great unhappiness said quietly and simply to me, why don't you marry me and get away from home. After hesitating a few minutes I decided, why not. If I were married no one could stop me from leaving then. I regretted using this man for this purpose all the rest of my life. I was so unfair to him.

We got back in the car and told Jay and Alice what we were going to do and they drove us to the home of the Ordinary and we got him and his wife out of bed and he married us. I don't think you even needed a license back then. I certainly don't remember anything about one. We stopped at home and told Mama what we had done and then went on to his house and told his parents. We had no money, not even Five dollars, and no place to go. His sister and her husband were spending the night with her parents and they let us go to their house a couple of miles down the road to spend the night.

We stayed in the house with his parents, occupying a room with the two youngest boys, about six and eight years of age until spring. By spring we had saved enough money \$25.00 to order a three piece bedroom set from Sears and we moved into a two room shack up the road. Our families gave us a few dishes and a pot or two and someone donated a two-eye wood stove, a homemade kitchen table and two chairs and that was all we had. Tina came home in the fall and I went back home with her. Albert and Willie Fred followed me to Jacksonville and tried to persuade me to return but I refused. At last I was free and there was no turning back. I never saw Willie Fred again but I carried my guilt for treating him the way I did all my life.

This ends my life story in Georgia. Sure it was still home and I loved it but I had cut my ties. Somehow I would make a life for myself beyond the horizons I could see from the farm kitchen windows. There was a great big world on the other side of that pine forest at the back of the field. Sure, I had treated someone badly in order to break free but I had to go.

Tina enrolled me in Duval Vocational School which was a free trade school where I could learn typing, shorthand and bookkeeping. In addition, there was a program whereby I could help the math teacher and get paid about \$3 or \$4 a week. I had a very meager wardrobe, two or three dresses, a pair of shoes and a sweater and that was it. I wore Tina's clothes to school and met her every day at lunch and she bought lunch for me. I slept on her sofa and helped around the house with the chores as best I could. Both she and Kelly went to work on me to teach me correct English, table manners, how to dance and in general behave like a lady instead of the hayseed that I was. I learned to type and take shorthand and before I could finish my classes she got me a job in a law office with two of her friends who were lawyers. They could not pay me but they could give me experience, without which it was impossible to get a job, so I worked free. Tell me how one was expected to get experience if no one would give you a job unless you had experience. Finally, they upped my pay from \$0.00 to \$3.50 per week. I was on my way.

Tina and I had always been very close while I was growing up and she always tried to bring me something special when she came home. I know now what a sacrifice this was for her as she was making a very small salary and she had to live out of what she made and repay Lucian the money he had loaned her to go to Jacksonville to take her business course.

I suspect one of the reasons Papa did not want me to go live with Tina was because the man she had married was Catholic. To Papa, who had never known anything about any other religion than Primitive Baptist, a Catholic was like the devil incarnate and he forbade Tina from bringing Kelly home when she came. She tolerated that for a year or two but finally announced on one of her visits that it would be the last time she ever came home unless her husband could accompany her.

I adored Tina and her husband Kelly. She was beautiful and he was handsome. They had a nice life and did such wonderful things as going to dances, going canoeing and out with their friends to play bridge and such other sophisticated things to which I had never been privy. They always included me and Tina dressed me up in one of her evening dresses and they took me to balls with them. Tina taught me to love the opera, which I had never heard of before. She and I would get up on Saturday mornings and hurry and do the cleaning and laundry and then lie down in the afternoon across her bed and listen to the Texaco broadcast of the opera. I was introduced to Carmen, Verdi, La Traviata and the other great operas. Kelly being a linotype operator at the Florida Times Union, the leading newspaper, had to work on Saturday getting out the Sunday edition which he always brought home with him. Saturday nights they usually played bridge at their house or the home of one of their friends. They took me on cook-outs to the beach and to shrimp and crab feasts where we caught the shrimp and crabs. They once took me to the home of one of their friends who had a dock and a boat and he taught me to water ski, only way back then it was called aquaplaning and was done on a flat board on which one stood.

I was an excellent swimmer, having learned how so many years ago at the old mill pond. One of the churches within walking distance had a pool and I walked up there two or three nights each week and took a life saving course and became a certified life saver. Kelly and Tina got me a badminton set and put it up in the back yard and we played badminton many happy hours. I was their special pet and I loved it. This was a whole new life for me--one I had only dreamed of in the past--no more picking or hoeing cotton, fun things to do and wonderful books to read and knowledgeable people with whom to associate. I soaked it all up like a sponge. I listened and learned and tried to improve myself in every way I possibly could.

After working free and then getting paid \$3.50 per week for a short time, my great opportunity came. I now "had experience" and could apply for a real job! I was not quite finished with my business course at Duval Vocational School when my shorthand teacher sent me on an interview in another law firm, Daniel and Thompson. Miracle of miracles, I was selected for the job and it paid \$10.00 per week. The education I got on this job was to affect the entire remainder of my working life and make me who I am today. I never had an opportunity to go to college but there were so many things I wanted to know. Little did I know, but the man I was going to work for was an angel in disguise. Mr Richard P Daniel. He took a genuine interest in me and gave me a little black book with three words in it each day and I was to look them up in the dictionary and be prepared to tell him everything about them first thing the next morning when he would give me three new ones. He was a very prominent attorney, from an old Jacksonville family. He spent his free time working on all kinds of civic matters and was very active with the NAACP (The National Association for the Advancement of Colored People). Mr Daniel instilled in me the desire to learn words and I spent all my time from then on reading the dictionary when I was not busy with my office duties. We remained friends for the remainder of his life. Many years after I moved to Washington, his son-in-law, Mr. Edward Barrett, became an Assistant Secretary of State and I was working in his area of the Department of State and visited with Mr. and Mrs. Daniel when they went to Washington for his installation. Small world!

MEMORIES - Doll House

You asked me to write and tell you how your doll house with the electric lights came into being:

This is my best effort to recreate what I did. Back in those days oranges and other citrus fruit and vegetables were shipped in wooden boxes about two and a half feet long and divided down the middle. These boxes, when laid on their side with the open side outward made ideal doll house rooms and stacked one on top of the other, made the house two story in the bargain.

I had made a very crude one when I lived in Jacksonville with Tina and Kelly just for my own enjoyment but when I gave birth to a beautiful baby girl I also gave birth to a desire to make her a real doll house from orange crates. So I did. I collected old wallpaper sample books to get the paper for the walls; built stairs from the first to the second floor. Got pieces of tapestry upholstery fabric samples for carpets on the floor (rugs really as wall to wall had not been invented so far as I knew). We also had summer rugs made of sisal, which we put down in the summer and put the wool rugs away in moth balls for the summer. Carefully wrapped in "tar paper" and then brown paper and sealed with tape and stored in the rafters of the basement for the summer.

Your father put a small switch on the outside of the doll house and installed wiring for lights and we used small flashlight bulbs and batteries and eureka, we had electric lights throughout the house.

I took gift boxes, which in those days were pretty sturdy, not at all flimsy, and cut out patterns for furniture, chairs, sofas, beds, etc and with needle and thread sewed the cardboard together to make the frames for the furniture. When this was completed, I padded the cardboard frames and upholstered them with pieces of upholstery material and in the case of beds with linen and bits of fabric I had left over from garments I had made. I made velour portieres for archways between rooms and also for winter drapes at the windows. Summer curtains and drapes were also made so that the house could be changed from it's winter dress of heavy velvet and velour to light cool summer fabrics, just as the house we lived in had to be done.

This looks like as good place as any to relate how spring and fall house cleaning were done each year. First, you set aside a week and planned to do nothing else-----then you began to completely dismantle the house-- and you kept it up until the house finally bore no resemblance to it's former self. Seasonal rugs (wool for winter and sisal i.e. crex rugs for summer) depending on the season were taken up and the others were unpacked and put down after the floors had been stripped of the old wax and fresh wax was put on the hardwood floors Furniture was stripped of slipcovers in fall cleaning and their real upholstery was displayed for winter. Slipcovers were washed, ironed and put away awaiting their coming out again the following spring. Heavy velvet drapes, wall hangings, etc were hauled out to the backyard and put on the clothes line to air and were thoroughly brushed to rid them of dust and they were packed away and lace curtains were installed downstairs and ruffled priscilla curtain installed in bedrooms upstairs. These curtains would all be washed, starched and placed on curtain stretchers to dry before being hung at the windows.

Beds would be stripped of their chenille spreads and silk or rayon ones Put on after the mattresses had been thoroughly brushed to get rid of any dust and the springs, slats and frames wiped down with a damp rag and camphor. There were no box springs in those days so each spring coil had to be wiped off with this damp cloth. Walls were brushed down with a goats hair brush to get dust off and baseboards were washed clean and wiped dry.

Kitchen cupboards would all be cleaned out, shelves washed and new shelf paper put in. Kitchen linoleum stripped of old wax and re-waxed. You have seen the ads for Pinesol where they say it smelled like a Carolina pine forest--well our house smelled as fresh and clean as Johnson's paste wax and camphor water could make it smell and the windows, -- storm windows and storm doors would have been hauled up from the basement and installed, after windows and every other bit of glass were washed and polished until they sparkled like diamonds. By this time it is Thanksgiving eve if you have been doing fall cleaning or Easter eve if you have done spring cleaning. Your back, legs, arms and fingernails are all broken by this time and you don't really care if the Easter bunny shows up or the turkey gets cooked or not. But at Thanksgiving you will still have to toast and break up a couple of loaves of bread, chop a half bunch of celery and three or four onions to stuff the turkey as there was no ready made stuffing and by the time you had broken and crushed and stuffed all this bread into the turkey, there was no skin on your hands and you walked around all day with them dripping lard to keep them from bleeding (NO HAND CREAM THAT I REMEMBER) but we had one hell of a clean house and we were very thankful that ordeal was over for another six months!

I can't believe all this came out just to tell you about a simple little orange crate doll house I built many years ago for a precious daughter. She was also known as Annette FLOYD (2821). She was born on 22 Jun 1918 at ., Bleckley County, GA.⁵⁶³ As of 4 Aug 1941, her married name was VOLLMER (2821). She married Herman

⁵⁶³ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

Charles VOLLMER (1534), son of Herman Christian VOLLMER (2592) and Margaret Mae KNOPP (2591), on 4 Aug 1941 at St. Paul's Catholic Church, Jacksonville, FL.

She witnessed the baptism of Margaret Ann VOLLMER (2) on 23 Aug 1942 at Roman Catholic Church of St. Ann, Washington, D.C. Margaret Annette Floyd was always a go-getter - one who meant to be something or die trying. Ambition should have been her middle name. As a teen she left home to live in town in order to attend school, and later she moved to Jacksonville, Florida to live with her sister Tina in order to educate herself at business school. Tina and Kelly Rosenberger lived on the water in Florida so it was natural that they would be members of the boat club and spend weekends participating in the club activities. It was at this club that Annette met her husband at an invitational canoe race. He was from Washington D.C., a town that must certainly have spelled glamour to her. They were married in August of 1941. Obituary of she was in 2006.

She died on 11 May 2006 at Largo, Pinellas County, FL, 33770, aged 87. She was buried in Oct 2006 at Cedar Hill; Family Plot, Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. Her body was cremated allowing the planning of a family reunion to honor her memory. Her grandchildren as well as her great grandchildren and her daughter and son-in law were in attendance as were her two remaining sisters, LaVerne and Mary.

i) Margaret Ann¹⁵ VOLLMER (2) is still living.

ii) Elizabeth Jane¹⁵ VOLLMER (33) is still living.

(j) Aaron¹⁴ FLOYD (1537) was employed by Gas Station Owner. He was born on 15 Dec 1920 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA. He married Odell (Nora Mae) INGRAHAM (1538), daughter of Robert Lee INGRAHAM (5191), on 19 May 1943 at Bleckley County, GA. Aaron Floyd was the 11th of 12 children. He and Mary Floyd were born twins with Mary arriving first by just a few minutes. They were born on December 15th 1920. In the year 2000 Mary wrote the following: We will hit our 80th year in December 2000. What a life!!!! Aaron and Mary were reasonably close as children, doing things together such as joining the 4-H club and owning a Steer each, which had to be pampered and taken care of to prepare them for showing at the *Fair*. We had an old wooden cart we pulled out to the corn patch and cut down many stalks of corn for the fodder to feed them. Aaron's was a deep brownish red and mine was closer to a honey red. Because he was the boy he got the prettiest and nicest one and I got the one that had to have a ring in his nose he was so wild and mean. But we loved having them and had to work every day taking care of them. When it came time to show them off they had to be moved to stalls, along with hey to bed down on, to Macon, Ga which was 40 miles away. Aaron went with his and had to bed down with the Steer until the day of the showing, but being a girl I was not allowed to go with mine. We had a colored (Negro) family living on the farm and Papa always said (colored) because he thought that sounded a little nicer. Anyway, *Aunt Ann* as she was known to us, had two or three grown *strapping* boys and one was named Clayton who got to go with my steer and bed down with it. On the day of the showing I was allowed to get in the pen and hold onto the rope along with Clayton and because I looked up at this handsome Negro man and smiled someone in the audience said "look-a-there, she got her a negar boy friend". I will never forget that @#&*<*@* which I thought was awful for him to say. (Shug's son Lucian stayed at his grand parents home almost as much as he did his own so as children we, and the entire family, treated him like a brother and he and Aaron were very close, so the two of them and me and LaVerne used to get into trouble almost constantly, between shooting cats with *Pop Guns* and making mud pies and swinging from trees we stayed in trouble with Papa. We were all making mud pies and needed some water so sent Lucian with a bucket to the branch (stream of water) that ran pretty fast through a sewer pipe under the road to the other side at the bottom of the hill. Well, he tried to sink the bucked by pushing straight down on it until it suddenly went under and pulled Lucian in with it. We children ran down the hill to save him and after pulling him out of the water proceeded to roll him in sand trying to dry him off so Papa would be none the wiser. Well, I am sure you can guess at the outcome of this little trick. Everyone got a switching. Aaron Lucian, and I would put LaVerne, who was all of 4 or 5, on a pine sapling we had pulled down as far as it would bend and let go just to see her flung back and forth until it had straightened out!!! Aaron and Lucian were playing down the road a ways late one evening after dark and would not come in the house to eat their supper. After many calls Albert decided to take a bedsheet and put it over his head and sneak up behind them. Those two boys thought they were seeing a *ghost* and really made tracks running home. In high school Aaron liked the prettiest girl in the class named Patsy. He always wanted to drive the car (ford) Papa had bought for us to drive to school in Cochran which was 5 miles away. Since I was Papa's pet he also knew I would be allowed to go visit Patsy if I asked Papa. My job around the house was washing up all those dirty dishes from such a large family, You guessed it, the only way I would agree to go visit Patsy was if Aaron helped me wash the dishes!!! Patsy got pregnant

by someone and left high school and was considered not a *nice* girl and that was the end of visiting Patsy. Later I had a friend named Odell Ingram and visited her frequently and she did the same to my house where she and Aaron started dating and got married. As a young man Aaron got drafted and had to serve in the army. He was sent to Australia and New Guinea where he sent me pictures of native women wearing nothing but grass skirts!! During this time he went for a swim in the ocean and got caught in a riptide and before he knew it he had drifted very far out so began to swim towards the beach but became too tired he gave up on life and decided that was it he just could not go another stroke and when he dropped his arms they touched sand and that was what saved him. While stationed there he was radioman on a plane that had to fly out almost daily. One day a new Jewish fellow radioman wanted to go on that flight - the plane went down and was never heard from. So your Uncle Aaron has had two close calls that he told me about. After the war Aaron and Odell, LaVerne and Raymond, Mary and Hassan, Herschel and Annie and Bessie Lou and Lucian would all gather at each others house for spaghetti suppers (that being all any of us could afford at the time). After eating, some or all of us, played a card game called Red Dog which involved light gambling (just pennies or nickles). We had heard that Mama's half sister Aunt Eva or Aunt Ruby or Aunt Florence had discovered that way back in history there was a man named Humphrey, whom we promptly nicknamed Uncle Hump, who had lots of oil wells and no known relatives when he died and that the royalties from all this oil had been collecting with no one to claim it. It seems that one of our half Aunts had been working on it for years trying to prove that Uncle Hump was related to our Grandfather Holland. After a few card games and a few beers we would sit around and spend Uncle Hump's money. I remember Aaron was going to have milk piped in and silly stuff just like that. Odell died a few years back and Aaron has had a stroke but is doing good. Written by Mary Floyd. He died on 5 Dec 2002 at GA aged 81 He died after many years of decline. His daughters devotedly cared for him until the end. Fortunately, he was able to attend the family reunion in November and be at the ceremony commemorating the placing of the CSA headstone for his grandfather, Shade Floyd. He According to his daughter, Lynn, his blood type was rh negative type B. in 2008.

- i) Judy Elaine¹⁵ FLOYD (1606) is still living.
- ii) Mary Lynn¹⁵ FLOYD (1608) is still living.
- iii) Dana Leigh¹⁵ FLOYD (1610) is still living.
- (k) Mary¹⁴ FLOYD (1535) is still living.
 - i) Mona Maria¹⁵ EL KHADEM (1616) is still living.
 - ii) Joseph Rasheed¹⁵ EL KHADEM (1618) is still living.
- (l) Katherine LaVerne¹⁴ FLOYD (1630) is still living.
 - i) Denny Ray¹⁵ DYKES (1623) is still living.
 - ii) Sharron Elaine¹⁵ DYKES (1627) is still living.
- (d) Harriett R.¹² FLOYD (1391)⁵⁶⁴ was born circa 1848 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census of 1850 at Pulaski County, GA.

She appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. She married G. J. GRIMSLEY (1392) on 25 Dec 1887 at Pulaski County, GA. As of 25 Dec 1887, her married name was GRIMSLEY (1391). She died after 1924 at Moultrie, GA, She is mentioned as being alive at the time her brother's obituary was written.

 - i) Ella¹³ GRIMSLEY (2362)⁵⁶⁵
 - ii) Annie¹³ GRIMSLEY (2363)
 - iii) Hattie¹³ GRIMSLEY (2364)⁵⁶⁶
 - iv) Carrie¹³ GRIMSLEY (2365)⁵⁶⁷
 - v) Jesse James¹³ GRIMSLEY (2366)⁵⁶⁸
- (e) Amos E.¹² FLOYD Jr. (1393) was born in Jul 1850 at Pulaski County, GA. He served in the military circa 1860 at Pulaski County, GA, I think this is a mistake as he was only ten years old.⁵⁶⁹ He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA (Living in house # 890).⁵⁷⁰ He married Martha (Margaret) MARTIN (1394), daughter of George MARTIN (3387) and Elcy (Alesa) HASKINS (3388), on 7 Jul 1872 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁷¹ He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (Shown as living in house # 559 not far from Zachariah Davis).⁵⁷² He appeared on the census in 1900 at Coffee, GA.⁵⁷³ He died after 1900 at Coffee, GA.

⁵⁶⁴ 1850 Census.

⁵⁶⁵ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁵⁶⁶ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁵⁶⁷ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁵⁶⁸ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁵⁶⁹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁵⁷⁰ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁵⁷¹ Pulaski County Marriages.

⁵⁷² 1880 Census.

⁵⁷³ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

i) Gordon¹³ FLOYD (1422)
 ii) Homer F.¹³ FLOYD (1423) married Emma (--?--) (1477) She is wife #1. He married Irma RAKESTRAW (1424) on 7 Feb 1926.
 iii) Infant¹³ FLOYD (3353)⁵⁷⁴ died on 23 Nov 1892.⁵⁷⁵
 iv) Charlie C.¹³ FLOYD (1419) was born in Apr 1873.⁵⁷⁶ He appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁷⁷
 v) George¹³ FLOYD (1427) was born in Apr 1873 This may be a nephew rather than child.
 vi) Anna¹³ FLOYD (1420) was born circa 1875.⁵⁷⁸ She appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (Shown living with her parents).
 vii) Edward¹³ FLOYD (1421) was born circa 1876.⁵⁷⁹ He appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁸⁰
 viii) James G.¹³ FLOYD (1425) was born in Jan 1887.
 ix) John H.¹³ FLOYD (1426) was born in May 1890.
 (f) John J.¹² FLOYD (1395) was born circa 1852 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁸¹ He married Elizabeth MARTIN (3396), daughter of George MARTIN (3387) and Elcy (Alesa) HASKINS (3388), on 16 Nov 1872 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁸² He married Nancy Elizabeth COODY (1400), daughter of James H. COODY (3399), on 10 Oct 1880 at Pulaski County, GA. Based on what your mother said in her messages, I went back through your online genealogy and found that Nancy Coody was married to John J. Floyd who was a possible father of the right approximate age. I based this on Joseph H. Floyd (Joe)'s year of birth - 1902. I have current access to an online 1900 Federal Census. When I looked up John J. 's Family by looking in Pulaski County, GA census data, I found the following:

John J. Floyd	Head of Household
Nancy E.	wife
Henry	son
James A.	son
Emma	daughter
Morgan H.	son

Since your mom says that Joe, Morgan, Will and other older brother's mother was a Coody and Morgan's name is listed as a son, it seems very likely that John J. and Nancy were Joseph (Joe) Floyd's parents. This is a good starting point at the very least or it would appear so. Thank you for your help, Bill Hudson. He died on 31 Jan 1904 at Bleckley County, GA. He There is an interesting story here. While in Cochran for the funeral of Viola Floyd Berryhill, MVW visited the library as well as the Coody Cemetery where Viola was buried. From scraps of information, an interesting picture developed. The land were the Coody Cemetery is located first belonged to George Martin who was a rather well to do farmer in the area. When George died in 1876 he divided his land among his children among whom were Elizabeth and Martha Martin. The Martin girls both married sons of Amos Kinchen Floyd. Elizabeth married John J. Floyd and Martha married Amos Floyd. Elizabeth Martin died at age 28 and John J. Floyd then married Nancy E. Coody. The Berryhills and Coody's intermarried and Viola and Marueen Floyd later married two of the Berryhill brothers and were subsequently buried on the old Martin land left and divided by George Martin one hundred and twenty five years earlier in his will of 1876. in 2002 at Pulaski County, GA.

i) George W.¹³ FLOYD (1397) appeared on the census at Atkinson, GA (Hi, I saw your Floyd web site and I think we have a connection but I'm having difficulty figuring it out. The Floyd's of my family are George b. 1874 who married Clarice Asbell. They lived in Atkinson County, GA in the 1920 census. I see a George Floyd living with an uncle Amos in the 1900 census as well. All of these names were on your site in one place or another. Does this make any sense? Dan Cahill [dcahill@fdn.com]). He was born in Apr 1873 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁸³ He married Susan Clarissa ASBELL (1473), daughter of John Lewis ASBELL (3362) and Elizabeth Drucilla LOWMAN (3363), on 13 Jul 1902 at Pulaski County, GA. Dan, Yes, Susan Clarice Asbill/Asbell Floyd was a daughter of John Lewis Asbill/Asbell and Elizabeth Drucilla "Lizzie" Lowman. My information comes from a book written by Hilda Grimwood called Asbill Connections. Hilda Jernigan Grimwood is a descendent of

⁵⁷⁴Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Tombstone only says infant son; Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Tombstone only says infant son; Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Tombstone only says infant son.

⁵⁷⁵Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*, Tombstone only says infant son. Date is when stone erected.

⁵⁷⁶1880 Census.

⁵⁷⁷unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁵⁷⁸1880 Census.

⁵⁷⁹1880 Census.

⁵⁸⁰unknown subject unknown repository.

⁵⁸¹1860 Census.

⁵⁸²Pulaski County Marriages.

⁵⁸³unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

Bertha Belle Asbill/Asbell Sanders. Bertha Belle was a sister of your Susan Clarice. Mrs. Grimwood's book can be found at many libraries and her mailing address is: Mrs. Hilda Grimwood 826 Voyager Drive Houston, Texas, 77062-5619 (281) 488-3972. I hope that this information would prove helpful. Sincerely,

Stepheni Scott
202 Cheltenham Dr.
Aiken, SC 29803

vinonut@aol.com. He Here is a note worth keeping: I saw your Floyd web site and I think we have a connection but I'm having difficulty figuring it out. The Floyd's of my family are George b. 1874 who married Clarice Asbell. They lived in Atkinson County, GA in the 1920 census. I see a George Floyd living with an uncle Amos in the 1900 census as well. All of these names were on your site in one place or another. Does this make any sense? Dan Cahill in 2002.

ii) Hiram¹³ FLOYD (3451) was born in 1875 Tombstone says he was 18 months at time of death. He died on 11 Jul 1876.

iii) Henry R.¹³ FLOYD (1398) married Emma B. (--?--) (3663).⁵⁸⁴ He was born on 25 Sep 1877.⁵⁸⁵ He appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁵⁸⁶ He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁵⁸⁷ He died on 31 Oct 1961 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 84.⁵⁸⁸

(a) Roscoe H.S.¹⁴ FLOYD (3664)⁵⁸⁹ is still living.

(b) Henry C.¹⁴ FLOYD (3665)⁵⁹⁰ is still living.

iv) Will (Willie) E.¹³ FLOYD (1399)⁵⁹¹ was born on 14 Jan 1880. He married Sammie MUNN (1484) on 10 Jan 1900. He died on 6 Jan 1941 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 60.

(a) Wilson¹⁴ DOOLITTLE (2335) is still living.

(b) Harvey¹⁴ FLOYD (1511)⁵⁹² was ill with Died of appendicitis. He was born in 1905.⁵⁹³ He died on 17 Mar 1924 Harvey J. Floyd, my mother's brother, died at the age of 19 of a perforated duodenal ulcer on 17 Mar 1924 after two weeks in the Macon hospital.

(c) Mary Lou¹⁴ FLOYD (1512) was born on 31 Jul 1906.⁵⁹⁴ She married Jesse Lamar HITCHCOCK (1513) on 16 Jun 1928 Mary Lou Floyd, my mother, was born 31 Jul 1906 in Pulaski Co. She married Jesse Lamar Hitchcock. As of 16 Jun 1928, her married name was HITCHCOCK (1512).

i) Glenn¹⁵ HITCHCOCK (4385) is still living.

(d) Willie Nell¹⁴ FLOYD (1514). She Died as a teenager from blood poisoning. She died at Blood Poisoning, ., Bleckley County, GA. She was ill with Died of blood poisoning. She was born in 1914.⁵⁹⁵

(e) Vera¹⁴ FLOYD (2327)⁵⁹⁶ is still living.

(f) Zola¹⁴ FLOYD (1515) was born in 1920.⁵⁹⁷ She married Olen PIERCE (1516) on 30 Sep 1939. As of 30 Sep 1939, her married name was PIERCE (1515).

v) James Amos¹³ FLOYD (1401) There is probably another marriage here since Annette Kaplan says that James A. was "half brother" to Morgan, Joel and Will Floyd. He was born on 11 Aug 1881.⁵⁹⁸ He married Willie F. SIMPSON (1485) on 3 Jan 1904. He died on 20 Jan 1938 aged 56 He was killed in an automobile accident.

He was New Tag James Amos Floyd was the first sheriff of Bleckley County, serving 1913-15. Law enforcement was in his blood, his great grandfather Frederick Floyd having been constable in Pulaski County. James Amos Floyd was also clerk of the Bleckley County Superior Court 1921-25. He was an alderman for the city of Cochran in 1918 and 1919 and clerk for the city 1937-38. in Feb 2001.⁵⁹⁹

(a) Watson¹⁴ FLOYD (1486) married Lois BOLLINER (1487). He was born in 1905.⁶⁰⁰ He died circa 1937.⁶⁰¹

⁵⁸⁴1920 Census.

⁵⁸⁵Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

⁵⁸⁶unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁵⁸⁷1920 Census.

⁵⁸⁸Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

⁵⁸⁹1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁵⁹⁰1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁵⁹¹unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁵⁹²unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁵⁹³1920 Census.

⁵⁹⁴1920 Census.

⁵⁹⁵1920 Census.

⁵⁹⁶Family information.

⁵⁹⁷1920 Census.

⁵⁹⁸Bob Bridger, "Bob Bridger Correspondence.," e-mail message from unknown author e-mail (unknown address) to Margot Woodrough, March 2003. Hereinafter cited as "Bridger."

⁵⁹⁹Floyd, "Donald Floyd."

⁶⁰⁰1920 Census.

⁶⁰¹unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

(b) Johnny¹⁴ FLOYD (1488)⁶⁰² was employed at Attorney. He married Rubye ROGERS (1489). He was born in 1907 at GA.⁶⁰³

vi) Emma Elizabeth¹³ FLOYD (1402) Child of second wife according to MarieJordy@aol.com. She was born on 11 Aug 1887. She married Jessie W. BRANNEN (1491) on 17 Jan 1909. As of 17 Jan 1909, her married name was BRANNEN (1402).

vii) Margaret¹³ FLOYD (1494) was born on 30 May 1892. She appeared on the census in 1930 at Bleckley County.

viii) Morgan Hudson¹³ FLOYD (1403) was born on 30 May 1892 at Bleckley County, GA. He married Addie CROSBY (1492) on 16 Feb 1912.⁶⁰⁴ He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁶⁰⁵ He died on 20 Jun 1983 at ., Bleckley County, GA, aged 91.⁶⁰⁶

ix) Joseph Henry¹³ FLOYD (1404) was born on 25 Jun 1902.⁶⁰⁷ He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA (Living with mother and brother).⁶⁰⁸ He married Lola Mae NEWMAN (1493) on 16 Dec 1928. He was buried in 1985 at Limestone Baptist Church, Cochran, Bleckley County, GA.⁶⁰⁹ He died on 18 Sep 1985 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 83.⁶¹⁰ He Margot, I do have the info that you requested:

Husband

Barkwell Joseph Floyd

b. March 27, 1930 pl. Bleckley County, GA

d. December 21, 1992 pl. Perry Hospital, Perry, GA

burial: Cremated - ashes to second wife

Married (1)

Wife

Betty Sue Hudson (dau. of Susie L. Jones & John Thomas Hudson)

b. February 05, 1935 pl. Cochran, Bleckley Co., Ga.

d. March 24, 1981 pl. Taylor Memorial Hospital
Hawkinsville, Pulaski Co.,GA

burial: Orange Hill Cemetery, Hawkinsville, GA

Married : Sept. 14, 1953 in Cochran, Bleckley Co., GA

Children: Treasure (b. Oct. 25, 1954 in Hawkinsville, GA)

Barkwell Joseph, Jr.(b. Dec. 04, 1957 in Birmingham, AL)

Barkwell was married a second time but all the information that I know is that her maiden name was Rachel Strather. If you do not have the vital dates on Barkwell's parents, Joseph H. Floyd and Lola Mae Newman they can be found on the cemetery listing for Limestone Baptist Church Cemetery at the Bleckley County Website.

Please thank your mother and Betsy Mullis for their help in helping a stranger solve a family connection mystery. I am going to give Treasure a print out of her ancestors and I know she will be thrilled to learn that her distant cousins were so sharing with their information. Also, I am sure that Treasure would like to know the location of the original Floyd homestead. Thank you for being willing to help us get to know more about her Floyd family. Bill Hudson

----- Original Message -----

From: Margot Woodrough

To: bill hudson

Sent: Wednesday, April 16, 2003 5:16 PM

Subject: RE: Barkwell Floyd

Hi Bill, I would appreciate having date of Barkwell's birth etc. to add to my database. Also your sister's name. Do you know the location of the original Floyd homestead in Bleckley Co. I do if you re interested.

Margot

-----Original Message-----

From: bill hudson [mailto:hudsonbj@cox.net]

Sent: Saturday, March 08, 2003 10:32 PM

To: Margot Woodrough

Subject: Re: Barkwell Floyd

Margot,

⁶⁰²unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁶⁰³1920 Census.

⁶⁰⁴Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶⁰⁵1920 Census; Shown as single and living with mother.

⁶⁰⁶Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

⁶⁰⁷Bill Hudson, "Floyd Family Correspondence -Bill Hudson," e-mail message from Bill hudson [hudsonbj@cox.net] to MVW, April 2003. Hereinafter cited as "Bill Hudson."

⁶⁰⁸1920 Census; Living with mother and brother.

⁶⁰⁹Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003.

⁶¹⁰Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003.

Based on what your mother said in her messages, I went back through your online genealogy and found that Nancy Coody was married to John J. Floyd who was a possible father of the right approximate age. I based this on Joseph H. Floyd (Joe)'s year of birth - 1902. I have current access to an online 1900 Federal Census. When I looked up John J. 's Family by looking in Pulaski County, GA census data, I found the following:

John J. Floyd	Head of Household
Nancy E.	wife
Henry	son
James A.	son
Emma	daughter
Morgan H.	son

Since your mom says that Joe, Morgan, Will and other older brother's mother was a Coody and Morgan's name is listed as a son, it seems very likely that John J. and Nancy were Joseph (Joe) Floyd's parents. This is a good starting point at the very least or it would appear so. I will try to double check this by looking up a 1910 census or maybe a 1920 census but it will take some time.

Thank you for your help,
Bill Hudson

----- Original Message -----

From: Margot Woodrough

To: Bill Hudson

Sent: Saturday, March 08, 2003 5:12 PM

Subject: FW: Barkwell Floyd

I sent your message to my mother Annette Kaplan. she replied to me, but don't know if you received her message so here it is.

Margot

-----Original Message-----

From: Annette Kaplan [mailto:ak1822@earthlink.net]

Sent: Thursday, March 06, 2003 12:00 AM

To: Margot Woodrough

Subject: RE: Barkwell Floyd

Joe Floyd is our cousin. He is /was the brother of Morgan Floyd Joe's wife was Lola Mae Newman and I knew them well. I went and sat up at the wake of their mother when I was a child. I believe some of these kids may have come and lived in our house (where Wayne lives now) after Mama died. Morris will know about this. Cousin Will Floyd, father of Vera, Zola, Willie Nell, and at least one other daughter whose name slips me, was a brother to Joe and Morgan. Morgan never married and was a mail carrier for many, many years. I believe they had other brothers, one of whom may have been Johnny Floyd, an attorney in Cochran and one of whom may have been the Ordinary in Cochran. Love me

----- Original Message -----

From: Margot Woodrough

To: Annette Kaplan

Sent: 3/6/03 8:01:02 AM

Subject: Barkwell Floyd

What do you make of this?

Margot

-----Original Message-----

From: bill hudson [mailto:hudsonbj@cox.net]

Sent: Wednesday, March 05, 2003 9:05 PM

To: margo4it@tampabay.rr.com

Subject: Ancestors of Joseph H. Floyd

My name is Bill Hudson and I am interested in the Floyd ancestry because my sister married Barkwell Joseph Floyd; son of Joseph H. Floyd of Cochran, GA. I have enjoyed reading through your Floyd ancestry and am fairly sure that Joe Floyd, as he was known, was a part of this wonderful family. This is probably the same Joe Floyd that was an honorary pallbearer at Ed Floyd's funeral in 1960.

I am trying to do the ancestry of my sister's children with B. J. Floyd whose names are Treasure and B. J., Jr. Any help that you could provide in suggesting who Joseph H.'s father / grandfather might have been would be a great help. If there was no tie to your Floyd family, I would also like to know so that I could search elsewhere.

I already have the ancestry of Joe's wife, Lola Mae Newman and know that he was a mail carrier in Cochran for many years. According to his marker at Limestone

Baptist Church Cemetary, he was borned June 25, 1902 and died Sept. 18, 1985.

Any help appreciated,
Bill Hudson
hudsonbj@cox.net in 2003.

(a) Barkwell¹⁴ FLOYD (3586) was born on 27 Mar 1930 at Bleckley County, GA.⁶¹¹ He married Betty Sue HUDSON (3590), daughter of John Thomas HUDSON (3591) and Susie L. JONES (3592), on 14 Sep 1953 at Cochran, Bleckley County, GA.⁶¹² He died on 21 Dec 1992 at GA. aged 62.⁶¹³

i) Treasure¹⁵ FLOYD (3594)⁶¹⁴ is still living.

ii) Barkwell Joseph¹⁵ FLOYD Jr. (3595)⁶¹⁵ is still living.

(g) George Washington¹² FLOYD (1169) was born in Jan 1854. He appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA. He married Susanah (Susan) DAVIS (1150), daughter of Zacharias DAVIS (1141) and Elizabeth KING (1142), on 19 Dec 1875.⁶¹⁶ He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (Lived in house #444 just down the road from his brothers Shadrack and Frederick and his father Amos).⁶¹⁷ He was employed by He was pastor of church from 1888 to 1923. The following is from Annette F. Kaplan: "Uncle George Floyd and Aunt Susan were Cousin Jim's father and mother. Uncle George was the minister Chris Floyd wrote you about at Mount Horeb church. Uncle George and Aunt Sue are buried at Mt. Horeb as are Cousin Jim and Cousin Ava I am sure.

ELDER GEORGE WASHINGTON FLOYD

Elder Floyd, son of Amos Kinchen and Anna Luttia (McDaniel) Floyd, was born in Pulaski County, Georgia about the year 1855. He married Miss Savannah Davis in Pulaski County on December 19, 1875.

During his later years he resided in Empire, Georgia and was actively preaching the Gospel among the Primitive

Ebenezer Association of Primitive Baptists in Georgia. Union and Pleasant Plains Churches called Brother Floyd to

serve as their pastor and he was esteemed highly among these people. in 1910 at Minister; Mt. Horeb Church (Empire GA), Empire, Dodge County, GA. He was buried in 1923 at Bowers, Empire, Dodge County, GA. He died on 30 Aug 1923 aged 69.

i) Annie Elizabeth (Lizzie)¹³ FLOYD (1250) married Robert LORD (1474). Her married name was LORD (1250). She was born on 21 Jan 1877 at Bleckley County, GA. She appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (They lived in house # 444).⁶¹⁸

ii) Sarah Jane (Sallie)¹³ FLOYD (1251) According to Ed Harmon's notes from his grandmother: "She rode a buggy pulled by a small horse by the Charlie Davis place. She was a small petite (spritely) woman always dressed up with a hat on."⁶¹⁹ She was born on 29 Jul 1878 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁶²⁰ As of 20 Dec 1893, her married name was SIMMONS (1251).⁶²¹ She married John Henry SIMMONS (1252) on 20 Dec 1893.⁶²² She married George Pinkney WOODS Jr. (3580) on 28 May 1938.⁶²³ As of 28 May 1938, her married name was WOODS (1251).⁶²⁴ She died on 29 Mar 1962 aged 83.⁶²⁵

(a) Louise¹⁴ SIMMONS (3135) (This information from Annette Kaplan) is still living.

i) Alma¹⁵ HANCOCK (3137) is still living.

(b) Ruth¹⁴ SIMMONS (1378) was born on 13 Oct 1894. She married Walker DAVIS (1254), son of Reuben DAVIS (1158) and Willie Ann FAIR (1177), circa 1919. As of circa 1919, her married name was DAVIS (1378). She died on 13 Jan 1989 aged 94.

i) Emory¹⁵ DAVIS (4343) is still living.

⁶¹¹Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003; 1930 Census; Appears with parents as an infant.

⁶¹²Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003.

⁶¹³Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003.

⁶¹⁴Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003; Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003; Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003.

⁶¹⁵Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003; Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003; Hudson, "Bill Hudson," e-mail to MVW, April 2003.

⁶¹⁶Harris, *History of Pulaski County*; Harris, *History of Pulaski County*.

⁶¹⁷1880 Census.

⁶¹⁸1880 Census.

⁶¹⁹Ed Harmond, "Harmond," e-mail to MVW, Feb 8 2006.

⁶²⁰1880 Census.

⁶²¹Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶²²Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶²³Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶²⁴Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶²⁵Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

- ii) Sarah¹⁵ DAVIS (4340)⁶²⁶ is still living.
- iii) James Washington (Cousin Jim)¹³ FLOYD (1255) was born on 12 Mar 1882 at Hawkinsville, Pulaski County, GA. He married Ava A. SANDERS (1256) on 17 Sep 1903 at ., Bleckley County, GA, They celebrated Golden Wedding Anniversary in 1976. There is something wrong here given death date and marriage date. He appeared on the census in 1930 at Bleckley County, GA (They lived two doors from Jesse Jasper Holland and Siddey Bradley).⁶²⁷ He died on 1 Dec 1967 aged 85 Death date from his grandson Christopher. He is buried in Bowers Cemetery Empire Georgia.
- (a) Jesse James (Pete)¹⁴ FLOYD (1257) married Blanche (--?) (2334) at ., Bleckley County, GA.⁶²⁸ He lived in 1979 at Macon, GA.
- i) Hazel Kathryn¹⁵ FLOYD (4654) is still living.
- (b) Tomas Watson¹⁴ FLOYD Sr. (1479) married Lucylle BOLLINGER (2336). He was born on 24 Mar 1911. He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁶²⁹ He lived in 1979 at Bleckley County, GA (In 1979 he lived near the family "homeplace"). He died on 12 Dec 1995 at Bleckley County, GA, aged 84 Death date from grandson Chris Floyd. Buried at Limestone Baptist Church. He was New Tag An interesting story from Chris Floyd. My grandfather, Thomas W. Floyd (J.W.'s son), ran away from home when he was 16. Life was probably too boring for a rambler like him. He traveled to Boston (where people were selling watermelons for \$.75 per slice he said--J.W. told him that people were feeding melons to the hogs in Cochran at the same time!) and eventually stopped for a while a Falls Church, VA. Being so close to Washington, D.C. he was able to hear FDR's inauguration speech in March of 1933. "We have nothing to fear but fear itself!" Those were dark days for many people (as I am sure you could tell me all about!), and that speech was the beginning of a turnaround in the fortunes of our depressed nation. So a poor country boy, my grandfather, witnessed one of the most famous speeches in history, which happened to be given by his grandson's favorite prez. Well, I won't ramble any more. Have a good day! I hope to be in closer contact over the summer. CJF in 2001.
- i) George W. "Shorty"¹⁵ FLOYD (3138) (This information from Christopher Floyd (nephew)) was born in 1938. He died in 1961 He died in a house fire after returning for a National guard birthday party for him.
- ii) James Graydon¹⁵ FLOYD (3112) is still living.
- (c) Alice¹⁴ FLOYD (1480) was born in 1913.⁶³⁰ She appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁶³¹ She married O. T. HODGE (1481) on 26 Feb 1928. As of 26 Feb 1928, her married name was HODGE (1480). She died say 1979.
- (d) Ruth¹⁴ FLOYD (1482) was born in 1915 at GA.⁶³² She appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁶³³ She married Homer J. MCCORVEY (1483) on 1 Sep 1931 at Moultrie, GA, Lived in or near Moultrie, Georgia. As of 1 Sep 1931, her married name was MCCORVEY (1482).
- iv) Nancy Ellafair (Nannie)¹³ FLOYD (1258) was born on 18 Aug 1887 at Hawkinsville, Pulaski County, GA. She married Elexander "Abner". Tippet Woods (2415) on 6 Sep 1903.⁶³⁴ As of 6 Sep 1903, her married name was WOODS (1258).⁶³⁵ She married Ben GIDDINGS (2416) on 4 Aug 1919 at GA Information on two husbands came from Annette F. Kaplan's notes made from conversation with Don Floyd.⁶³⁶ As of 4 Aug 1919, her married name was GIDDINGS (1258).⁶³⁷ She died on 22 Sep 1951 aged 64.⁶³⁸ She was buried on 27 Sep 1951 at Empire, Dodge County, GA.⁶³⁹
- (a) Omer¹⁴ WOODS (2417)
- (b) George P¹⁴ WOODS (2418)
- v) John Paul¹³ FLOYD (1475) died Died Young.⁶⁴⁰ He was born on 1 May 1890 at Hawkinsville, Pulaski County, GA.
- (h) Mary Ann E.¹² FLOYD (1405) was born on 6 Aug 1855 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census of 1860 at Pulaski County, GA. She appeared on the census of

⁶²⁶ 1920 Census; 1920 Census; 1920 Census.

⁶²⁷ 1930 Census.

⁶²⁸ Family information.

⁶²⁹ 1920 Census.

⁶³⁰ 1920 Census.

⁶³¹ 1920 Census.

⁶³² 1920 Census.

⁶³³ 1920 Census.

⁶³⁴ Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶³⁵ Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶³⁶ Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶³⁷ Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶³⁸ Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶³⁹ Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶⁴⁰ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

1870 at Pulaski County, GA.⁶⁴¹ She married William Henry DAVIS (2996), son of Zenos DAVIS (2961) and Julia Ann LITTLE (2993), on 1 Jan 1874 at Dodge County, GA.⁶⁴² As of 1 Jan 1874, her married name was DAVIS (1405). She appeared on the Census in 1880 at Pulaski County, GA (Henry Davis along with wife Ann and two boys, William and James were living with her parents in house # 446).⁶⁴³ She appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁶⁴⁴ She was living in 1924 at Plainfield (In 1924 she is mentioned in her brother's obituary and said to be living in Plainfield. Dodge County Newspaper Clippings, Vol. VI, page 2951 (March 24, 1938)). She died on 16 Mar 1938 at Dodge County, GA, aged 82 Mrs. Annie Davis, one of the oldest residents of this section, died at the home of her son, Jim Davis, in Cottondale Wednesday, March 16, of paralysis. She was a native of Pulaski County, a daughter of the late Mr. and Mrs. Kinch Floyd. She was 82 years old. Funeral services were conducted in the Second Baptist Church Thursday afternoon by Rev. J. H. Estes. George, Charles, Alvin, and Jack Davis and Roscoe and Andrew Floyd served as pallbearers. Interment was in Floyd Cemetery (located behind the Max Perkins place), near Empire.

From the Bible of James Henry Davis: Annie E. Floyd Davis died March 16, 1938. Bob Bridger says that his mother remembers when she died. My mother was a child of about 9 or 10 and this date fits that age for her. I am getting the obit to further clarify the dates and will send it to you when I send the completed update on my Davis file.⁶⁴⁵ She was buried on 17 Mar 1938 at Floyd Family Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA.

- i) William Bosey¹³ DAVIS (1501) was also known as Willie (1501).⁶⁴⁶ He was born on 27 Oct 1874 Faye Dyal gives death year as 1876. she got this from the family Bible. The 1874 date is from the inscription on his tombstone.⁶⁴⁷ He was buried in 1890 at Floyd Family Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA.⁶⁴⁸ He died on 18 May 1890 aged 15.⁶⁴⁹
- ii) James Henry¹³ DAVIS (1502) was born on 23 Feb 1880 at Pulaski County, GA.⁶⁵⁰ He married Emma Lucille FORDHAM (3017) on 21 Jan 1906.⁶⁵¹ He died on 29 Dec 1969 at Eastman, Dodge County, GA, aged 89.⁶⁵² He Faye Dyal tells me there were nine children total. Two remanl alive in 2008. in 2008.⁶⁵³
 - (a) Lorene¹⁴ DAVIS (3032)⁶⁵⁴ married Harley "Nig" DUPREE (3033) on 1 May 1940.⁶⁵⁵ As of 1 May 1940, her married name was DUPREE (3032).
 - (b) Blanche¹⁴ DAVIS (3030)⁶⁵⁶ was born on 16 Jan 1909.⁶⁵⁷ She married Jake Heard COODY (3031) on 6 Dec 1930.⁶⁵⁸ As of 6 Dec 1930, her married name was COODY (3030).
- iii) Jeff Julias¹³ DAVIS (2367)⁶⁵⁹ married Clara TAYLOR (3018).⁶⁶⁰ He was born on 17 Jul 1885.⁶⁶¹ He died on 27 Mar 1965 at Macon, Bibb County, GA, aged 79.⁶⁶²
- iv) Jacob Monroe¹³ DAVIS (2368)⁶⁶³ was born on 13 Sep 1894.⁶⁶⁴ He died on 5 Aug 1931 aged 36.⁶⁶⁵
- v) Mary Elizabeth¹³ DAVIS (2369)⁶⁶⁶ also went by the name of Molly (2369). She was born on 29 Jul 1897 at Laurens, GA.⁶⁶⁷

⁶⁴¹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁶⁴² Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁴³ 1880 Census.

⁶⁴⁴ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁶⁴⁵ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail message from fdyal@progressivetel.com to Margot Woodrough, I have never seen her name listed as Mary. She has always been Ann E., Anna, or Annie E. as was in the Bible. Where did you get the name that you show in your database? Faye Dyal. Hereinafter cited as "Faye Dyal."

⁶⁴⁶ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁴⁷ Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*; Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁴⁸ Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*; Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁴⁹ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁶⁵⁰ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁵¹ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁵² Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁵³ Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁵⁴ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁵⁵ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁵⁶ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁵⁷ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁵⁸ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁵⁹ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁶⁰ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁶¹ Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁶² Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁶³ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁶⁶⁴ Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁶⁵ Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Faye Dyal, "Faye Dyal," e-mail to Margot Woodrough.

⁶⁶⁶ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" Donald R. Floyd, *The Elusive Floyds*.

As of 7 Sep 1913, her married name was FLOYD (2369).⁶⁶⁸ She married Jessie Clarence FLOYD (3019), son of Seaborn Andrew FLOYD (1633) and Mary Lou SANDIFORD (1634), on 7 Sep 1913 at Dodge County, GA. Husband and wife were first cousins according to Don Floyd.⁶⁶⁹ She died on 12 Jan 1990 at Hazlehurst, Jeff Davis, GA, aged 92.⁶⁷⁰

- (a) William Evert¹⁴ FLOYD (3151) (see above)
- (b) Roscoe Maurice¹⁴ FLOYD (3020) (see above)
- (c) Andrew Willard¹⁴ FLOYD (3022) (see above)
 - i) Don¹⁵ FLOYD (3153) (see above)
- (d) Clarence Robert¹⁴ FLOYD (3024) (see above)
- (e) Mavis Christine¹⁴ FLOYD (3025) (see above)
 - i) Jean¹⁵ FAULK (3154) (see above)
 - ii) Jerry Robert¹⁵ FAULK (3157) (see above)
 - iii) James Gregory¹⁵ FAULK (3159) (see above)
- (f) Oris Franklin¹⁴ FLOYD (3027) (see above)
 - i) Robert Franklin¹⁵ FLOYD (3873) (see above)
- (g) Jack Charles¹⁴ FLOYD (3028) (see above)
 - i) Angie¹⁵ FLOYD (3163) (see above)
 - ii) Dee Dee¹⁵ FLOYD (3164) (see above)

(i) James Everett¹² FLOYD (1407)⁶⁷¹ was born on 10 Aug 1861 at Pulaski County, GA.⁶⁷² He appeared on the census of 1870 at Pulaski County, GA.⁶⁷³ He appeared on the census of 1880 at Pulaski County, GA. He married Mary Victoria (Mollie) YOUNG (1408) on 25 Dec 1884. He died on 30 Jun 1918 at Empire, Dodge County, GA, aged 56.⁶⁷⁴

He was buried in Jul 1918 at Floyd Family Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA.⁶⁷⁵
He A note from Annette Kaplan to Bob Bridger: Dear Bob I knew your Grandfather, Uncle Everett Floyd but did not remember his wife's name. When Uncle Everett's place was sold, Papa bought the piano. I remember the name Staff Davis but can't connect him with anyone --I sort of thought he was Uncle Everett's son but then he would have been a Floyd. In the old picture Margo sent all of us of the mule Molly and Uncle George and Aunt Susan Davis Floyd, the lady looking out the window was named Elafair with a number of other names, none of which was Bloodworth. I am sure there was a relationship as Elafair was not a very common name, The photo was taken in about 1870/80 so the text with it says. I remember Cousin Zachariah (we called him zacky and sometimes Jackie) Cousin Mildred Davis. They were the parents of Marylou Collins and Hazel Davis _____ who moved off to Atlanta. Marylou Collins lived on the road between Limestone and Hawkinsville.

I never remembered that we were related to Dandy Kimberly although I believe I heard Buddy (Arthur Edward Floyd) my brother speak of this. Do you know the names of all of Uncle Everetts Children?

I remember Chalmers, Laura, Manella Walker (who was a girl) and married Clifford Davis, had three children I knew-- Cecil, Jack, and Mary. So good to hear from you. Keep up the good work and I hope you find Elafair.

Your cousin--Annette Kaplan

From: Bob Bridger

To: Annette Kaplan

Cc: Margot Woodrough

Sent: 3/13/03 9:52:44 PM

Subject: Floyd / Davis

Margot and I have been corresponding for some time on the above and she suggested I drop you a line.

My GGGF was Zacharias Davis, GGF was John Davis and my GF was John Alfred 'Staff' Davis. On the Floyd side, my GGGF was Amos K. Floyd, GGF was James Everette Floyd, GM was Mattie Viola Floyd. All this on my Mothers side.

Most of my Davis information has come from Anita Kimberly Prince of Lithia Springs. Her mother was Alice D. Davis, daughter of 'Big John' Davis and wife of Dandy Gerome Kimberly. At one point in time, Anita and her parents lived with Nancy Jane Buchan Davis and helped raise her 10 children after the untimely death of her husband, 'Big John' Davis in 1896.

A question for you.

⁶⁶⁷Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

⁶⁶⁸Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁶⁹Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

⁶⁷⁰Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Betty Curran, "Western Floyds," e-mail to MVW, Feb 2004.

⁶⁷¹unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; Henderson, Lillian., *Roster of Confederate Soldiers of Georgia*.

⁶⁷²Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁶⁷³unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁶⁷⁴unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address; Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁶⁷⁵Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

In 1882, a Christopher Bloodworth married Zacharias Davis' daughter Elafair Davis and seem to have dropped off the face of the earth. Any thoughts?

Thanks for your help.

Bob Bridger

Annette Kaplan

Sorry I made a mistake on Uncle Everett's daughter's name. It was Walter, not Walker and we called her Walt. I think she and Cliff Davis may have had another son but I can't for the life of me remember his name in 2003.

i) Chalmus (Chalmers)¹³ FLOYD (1417) married Lillian B. DORMAN (4236) on 4 Jul 1928 Annette says he moved to Detroit.⁶⁷⁶

ii) Daniel Everette (Evie)¹³ FLOYD (1409) was born on 17 Apr 1886. He married Lillie Mae DAVIS (3356), daughter of John DAVIS (1151) and Nancy Jane BUCHAN (1170), on 22 Jan 1916.⁶⁷⁷ He was buried in 1965 at Bowers Cemetery, Empire, Dodge County, GA, Pictures of grave in file taken by Bob Bridgers. He died on 4 Jul 1965 aged 79.

(a) Evie Mae (Sally)¹⁴ FLOYD (3708)⁶⁷⁸ is still living.

iii) Laura V.¹³ FLOYD (1410) was born in Apr 1887. She appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁶⁷⁹

iv) Osker Winslow¹³ FLOYD (1411) was born on 7 Mar 1889.⁶⁸⁰ He was buried in 1891 at Floyd Family Cemetery, Bleckley County, GA.⁶⁸¹ He died on 10 Oct 1891 aged 2.⁶⁸²

v) Walter M.¹³ FLOYD (1412) (This is a woman) was also known as Walt (1412).⁶⁸³ She was born on 28 Oct 1890. She married Clifford "Cliff" DAVIS (3045) on 22 Dec 1915.⁶⁸⁴ As of 22 Dec 1915, her married name was DAVIS (1412). She died in Aug 1968 aged 77.⁶⁸⁵

(a) Jackson Lamar¹⁴ DAVIS (3046)⁶⁸⁶ was born on 17 Sep 1918.⁶⁸⁷ He married Virginia SMITH (3047) on 17 Jul 1937 Divorced.⁶⁸⁸ He died on 7 Mar 1966 aged 47.⁶⁸⁹

(b) Cecil¹⁴ DAVIS (3048)⁶⁹⁰ was born on 30 Nov 1919.⁶⁹¹ He married Monteen BETHUNE (3049) on 2 Feb 1946.⁶⁹² He was buried in 1981 at Limestone Baptist Church, Cochran, Bleckley County, GA.⁶⁹³ He died on 15 Dec 1981 aged 62.⁶⁹⁴

(c) Mary¹⁴ DAVIS (3050)⁶⁹⁵ was born on 17 Oct 1921.⁶⁹⁶ She married Mahlon FLOYD (3051) on 1 Jan 1944.⁶⁹⁷ As of 1 Jan 1944, her married name was FLOYD (3050). She died on 27 Nov 1996 aged 75.⁶⁹⁸

(d) Floyd¹⁴ DAVIS (3052)⁶⁹⁹ was born on 17 Aug 1928.⁷⁰⁰ He married Betty Jean ARROWOOD (3053) on 23 Dec 1953 Divorced.⁷⁰¹ He was buried in 1986 at Limestone Baptist Church, ., Bleckley County, GA.⁷⁰² He died on 22 Dec 1986 aged 58.⁷⁰³

vi) Mattie Viola¹³ FLOYD (1413). Her married name was DAVIS (1413). She was born on 6 Jun 1892 According to her tombstone she was born in 1893. She married John Alfred (Staff) DAVIS (1184), son of John DAVIS (1151) and Nancy Jane BUCHAN (1170), on 24 Dec 1911 According to Morgan Floyd Mattie married Alfred Davis. Her

⁶⁷⁶Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶⁷⁷Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶⁷⁸Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003; Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003; Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶⁷⁹1920 Census; She is shown as head of household with her brother and sisters.

⁶⁸⁰Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁶⁸¹Robin Mullis, *Bleckley County, Georgia Cemeteries*.

⁶⁸²Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁶⁸³Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁸⁴Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁸⁵Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁸⁶Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁸⁷Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁸⁸Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁸⁹Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁹⁰Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁹¹Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁹²Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁹³Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶⁹⁴Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁶⁹⁵Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁹⁶Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁹⁷Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁹⁸Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁶⁹⁹Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000; Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁷⁰⁰Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁷⁰¹Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

⁷⁰²Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁷⁰³Letter, Dixon to MVW, Feb 29 2000.

tombstone shows John A. Davis as husband. She died on 2 Jun 1929 at Jacksonville, Duval, FL, aged 36. She was buried on 5 Jun 1929 at Bowers Cemetery, Empire, Dodge County, GA, Picture of tombstone in file. Sent by Bob Bridger [RBRidger01@mediaone.net] in 2002. She Note to Annette from Bob Margot and I have been corresponding for some time on the above and she suggested I drop you a line. My GGGF was Zacharias Davis, GGF was John Davis and my GF was John Alfred 'Staff' Davis. On the Floyd side, my GGGF was Amos K. Floyd, GGF was James Everette Floyd, GM was Mattie Viola Floyd. All this on my Mothers side. Most of my Davis information has come from Anita Kimberly Prince of Lithia Springs. Her mother was Alice D. Davis, daughter of 'Big John' Davis and wife of Dandy Gerome Kimberly. At one point in time, Anita and her parents lived with Nancy Jane Buchan Davis and helped raise her 10 children after the untimely death of her husband, 'Big John' Davis in 1896. A question for you. In 1882, a Christopher Bloodworth married Zacharias Davis' daughter Elafair Davis and seem to have dropped off the face of the earth. Any thoughts? Thanks for your help. Bob Bridger in 2003.

(a) June¹⁴ DAVIS (4068)⁷⁰⁴ is still living.

i) Bob¹⁵ BRIDGER (4070)⁷⁰⁵ is still living.

vii) Wilbur D. B. (Bozie)¹³ FLOYD (1414) was born on 3 Apr 1894. He was buried in 1913 at Bleckley County, GA.⁷⁰⁶

He died on 17 Jul 1913 aged 19.

viii) Sherman C.¹³ FLOYD (1415) was born in Jan 1896. He appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁷⁰⁷ He married Lelia Mae SANDERS (1478) on 19 Apr 1925 This marriage is a guess. He appeared on the census in 1930 at Bleckley County, GA.⁷⁰⁸

(a) Carolyn¹⁴ FLOYD (3693)⁷⁰⁹ is still living.

(b) Charles S¹⁴ FLOYD (3695)⁷¹⁰ is still living.

(c) Grace¹⁴ FLOYD (3694)⁷¹¹ is still living.

ix) Manila¹³ FLOYD (1416) married R. Thomas DAVIES (4472).⁷¹² She was born on 11 Feb 1898.⁷¹³ She appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁷¹⁴ She died on 20 Nov 1973 aged 75.⁷¹⁵ She was the person responsible for encouraging Tina Floyd to move to Jacksonville. Tina then encouraged her sister, Annette and the rest is history. in 2006.

x) Irene O.¹³ FLOYD (1418) was born in 1908.⁷¹⁶ She appeared on the census in 1920 at Bleckley County, GA.⁷¹⁷

(j) Nancy E.¹² FLOYD (3452) (This is a guess. tombstone says Daughter of Amos and Elizabeth Floyd. Buried in Ross Cemetery. Location of cemetery is off Chicken Road) was born on 22 Sep 1866. She died on 15 Nov 1868 aged 2.

x) Elizabeth Jane¹¹ FLOYD (1136) was born on 29 Mar 1819 at Pulaski County, GA. She married James M.P. GIDDINGS (1137) on 5 Dec 1843 at Pulaski County, GA. As of 5 Dec 1843, her married name was GIDDINGS (1136). She appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 (They lived near Amos and Thomas Floyd).⁷¹⁸ She appeared on the census in 1860 at Pulaski County, GA (They lived just four houses from Amos Kinchen Floyd).⁷¹⁹ She died before 1870 I suspect that both she and her husband were dead before 1870 as they do not appear on the census, but their son Toby is living with a brother William in the household of Shadrack Smith.

(a) A. E.¹² GIDDINS (3634)⁷²⁰ was born in 1847 at Pulaski County, GA.⁷²¹

(b) Mourning E.¹² GIDDINS (2358)⁷²² was born in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA.⁷²³ She Apparently she was named for her grandmother who was still alive. in 1850 at Pulaski County, Ga.

⁷⁰⁴Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003; Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003; Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁷⁰⁵Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003; Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003; Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁷⁰⁶Wiregrass Genealogy Group, *Floyd Cemetery*.

⁷⁰⁷1920 Census; Sown living with his siblings.

⁷⁰⁸1930 Census.

⁷⁰⁹1930 Census; 1930 Census; 1930 Census.

⁷¹⁰1930 Census; 1930 Census; 1930 Census.

⁷¹¹1930 Census; 1930 Census; 1930 Census.

⁷¹²Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁷¹³Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁷¹⁴1920 Census; Living with her siblings.

⁷¹⁵Bob Bridger, "Bridger," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, March 2003.

⁷¹⁶1920 Census.

⁷¹⁷1920 Census.

⁷¹⁸1850 Census.

⁷¹⁹1860 Census.

⁷²⁰1850 Census; 1850 Census; 1850 Census.

⁷²¹1850 Census.

⁷²²Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart;" 1850 Census; She is shown as M.E Floyd.

(c) James A.¹² GIDDINS (2359) was born in 1852 at Pulaski County, GA.⁷²⁴
 (d) John F.¹² GIDDINS (2370)⁷²⁵ was born in 1853 at Pulaski County, GA., Shown as John L. on census.⁷²⁶
 (e) Tobias J.¹² GIDDINS (2371) was born in 1858 at Pulaski County, GA.⁷²⁷ He appeared on the census in 1870 at Pulaski County, GA (He was living with the Shadrick Smith family. A younger brother, Willaim age 9 is there as well. I suspect they were orphans).⁷²⁸
 (f) William¹² GIDDINGS (4464)⁷²⁹ was born in 1861 He is shown living with his brother Toby in the household of Shadrick Smith. I think this means that the boys were orphans as I've found no record of the parents on the 1870 census.⁷³⁰

xi) Francis Mary Ann¹¹ FLOYD (1138).⁷³¹ The eleventh and last child of Fed and Mourning Floyd, Francis Mary Ann was born January 23, 1824 eleven years after the Floyds moved to Georgia from North Carolina. Francis is an important character in the story for two reasons. First, her name hauntingly reflects the several men named Frances Floyd who lived in Isle of Wight County, Virginia and then in North Carolina nearly a century before her birth. Possibly this is evidence of a strong oral tradition in the family. Could it be that Fed and Mourning had heard tales of ancestors and chose this name for their child in remembrance of an ancestor? (One wonders if Francis was aware of the origins of her name?)
 The second and perhaps most important role that Francis played in the family was her wish to preserve in writing some details of the family she knew. In 1848 Francis Floyd married James Wardlaw of Pulaski County. At some point near this date she acquired a Bible and out of a sense of history and wishing to keep a record she became the first family member to have both the inclination and the ability to set facts in writing. On a page of the family Bible she carefully recorded the names and birthdates of all her brothers and sisters. In time her record would serve as the positive link between the Floyds of Georgia and the Floyd and Bass families of North Carolina. Without the notations in Francis Mary Ann's bible a great portion of the information on the Floyd family would have died with the individuals because whatever history the Floyd family knew was dispersed orally. They were not a family inclined to leave lengthy and detailed wills or diaries and in fact, without the Wardlaw bible record there would be no proof that the Floyd oral tradition was correct. Thanks to the record left in the bible by Francis Mary Ann Floyd it is possible to know that there was in fact a flaw in the Floyd oral tradition which asserted that Francis' brother, Amos Kinchen Floyd, was the pioneer from North Carolina. Her written record gives the names of her parents, Fed and Mourning Floyd and with that knowledge it only requires a short step to find them in the very earliest history of Pulaski County and even back to North Carolina. Francis Floyd is a central figure in the story for she is both a link with the past through her name as well as a direct connection with the future through her careful recording of family details. Thanks to her the story of the Floyd family is a matter of firm fact rather than vague suspicion. Francis is a very key part of the puzzle as well as a strong link in the chain.

She was born on 23 Jan 1824 at Pulaski County, GA.⁷³² She married James Patrick WARDLOW (1139), son of Cynthia (---) (4518), on 26 Oct 1848 at Pulaski County, GA. James Wardlow seems to come from a family well established in Jones County Georgia as his mother Cynthia is shown as a head of household there in 1830. There is no way to know how James ended up in Pulaski County married to Francis Mary Ann. The couple did not appear on the 1860 census anywhere in Georgia, but they reappear in 1870 in Jones County living with Cynthia. As of 26 Oct 1848, her married name was WARDLOW (1138). She appeared on the CENSUS in 1850 at Pulaski County, GA (They were living very close to her brothers and next door to her brother Amos Kinchen Floyd).⁷³³ She appeared on the Census in 1880 at Jones, Ga. She Her 20th century descendant is Floyd H. Wardlow at 124 E. College Ave, Ashburn, Ga 31714-5209 or Floyd H. Warlow, Jr. 3190 Wardlow Rd. Ashburn, Ga 31714.

And here is 2004 information: I found you through a ancestry.com posting dated 8/12/03 in which my gggrandfather William Franklin Wardlow was mentioned along with James Wardlow and Francis M A Floyd. Yes I am Floyd Hill Wardlow Jr's son, his father, Floyd Hill Wardlow was William Franklin's second oldest son. My brother is Floyd Hill Wardlow III. I am 56 and retired as

⁷²³ 1850 Census.

⁷²⁴ 1860 Census.

⁷²⁵ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁷²⁶ 1860 Census.

⁷²⁷ 1860 Census.

⁷²⁸ 1870 Census.

⁷²⁹ 1870 Census; 1870 Census; 1870 Census.

⁷³⁰ 1870 Census.

⁷³¹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷³² Wardlow Bible, Bible Page, MVW File, Margaret V. Woodrough, 100 Beach Dr. # 1801, St. Petersburg, Pinellas County, FL 33701.

⁷³³ 1850 Census; They were living very close to her brothers.

an elementary principal, although I am returning to the workforce shortly. I have two children James Benjamin (b 11/25/82) who is a student in Baltimore at Johns Hopkins, and Jenson Lauren Wardlow (b 11/25/85). She is a HS senior. I live in Americus GA about 60 miles from the Turner county farm where William Franklin moved the family on Dec. 18, 1895. Both WF and Floyd Sr were not known to me. W F died in 1940 and Floyd, my grandfather in 1948 when I was just 6 months old. I did however know Floyd Sr's older brother George Clifford very well. He lived from 12/30/1884-Oct 1987. I talked to him often about his early recollections. For example he recalls he and WF riding in a boxcar from Jones County to Crisp County on 12/18/95. Please tell me how you fit into The Wardlow tree? My address is James Patrick (Jim) Wardlow 176 Wolf Creek Dr Americus, GA 31719 in 2001.

(a) William Franklin¹² WARDLOW (2372)⁷³⁴ married Anna Olivia KILLPATRICK (5016).⁷³⁵ He married Mattie BROCK (5018).⁷³⁶ He appeared on the Census in 1880 at Jones, Ga (He is living unmarried with his parents).

i) Anna¹³ WARDLOW (5019) is still living.

(a) Emmitt¹⁴ REYNOLDS (5030)⁷³⁷ is still living.

ii) Mattie Lillie¹³ WARDLOW (5021) is still living.

iii) George Clifford¹³ WARDLOW (5017)⁷³⁸ died He died at the age of 102.

iv) Floyd Hill¹³ WARDLOW Sr. (5013) was born in 1889. He died in 1948.⁷³⁹

(a) Myrtis¹⁴ WARDLOW (5026)⁷⁴⁰ is still living.

(b) Nancy¹⁴ WARDLOW (5028) is still living.

(c) Floyd¹⁴ WARDLOW Jr. (5014) married Linnie Virginia POWELL (5023). He was born on 29 Apr 1921.⁷⁴¹ He died on 9 Sep 1998 aged 77.

i) Jim¹⁵ WARDLOW (5015) is still living.

ii) Floyd Hill¹⁵ WARDLOW III (5024) is still living.

(f) Thomas⁸ BASS (2963) (This is a new person found in FAA that was not listed in any will)⁷⁴² was born circa 1723.⁷⁴³

(g) Undice (Euridice)⁸ BASS (1856) married Charles COUNCILL (1857). Her married name was COUNCILL (1856). She was born circa 1725 at North Carolina, NC.

(h) John⁸ BASS (1847) married Ann (--?--) (1848) at Halifax, NC. He was born circa 1726.⁷⁴⁴ In 1777 Served as executor of his father's will.⁷⁴⁵ He was on the tax roll in 1783 at Halifax, NC. He appeared on the census of 1784 at North Carolina, NC.⁷⁴⁶ He was received land grant John Bass was granted 210 acres in Halifax (had once been part of Edgecomb) between Fishing Creek and Beech Swamp - joining his old deed for 300 acres in fork of said creek and swamp. (I wonder if this is land he inherited from his father?) on 27 Oct 1784 at Halifax, NC. He died in 1786 at Halifax, NC. His estate was probated on 4 Oct 1786 at Halifax, NC, His will lists wife Ann and no children.

(i) Jethro⁸ BASS (1853) married Susanna (--?--) (1854) at Northampton, NC. He married Elizabeth (--?--) (2022). He was born circa 1734 at Northampton, NC. He was on the tax roll in 1780 at Northampton, NC. He appeared on the census of 1784 at North Carolina, NC.⁷⁴⁷ He died in 1794 at Northampton, NC, His will is in MVW file. His estate was probated on 27 Sep 1794 at Northampton Co. Estate Records; 1792-1816, Northampton, NC, Will of Jethro Bass proved on oath of Samuel Knox; Council Bass qualified as exrr. March Ct. 1795.

The widow Elizabeth Bass entered her dissent to the will, inventory by the exr. Mar. Ct. 1795. William Grant was appointed guardian to Jethro and Burwell Bass (orphans of the deceased) to defend a petition by the widow Elizabeth for her dower. Mar Ct. 1795.

i) Council⁹ BASS (2026)⁷⁴⁸ was born at Northampton, NC. He served in the military in 1776.⁷⁴⁹ He married Patty GRIFFIN (2027) on 4 May 1782.⁷⁵⁰ He appeared on the census of 1784 at North Carolina, NC.⁷⁵¹ He died in 1830.

⁷³⁴ Doris Floyd Dixon, "Pedigree Chart."

⁷³⁵ James Wardlow, "Wardlow, James," e-mail message from jimjanicew@bellsouth.net (unknown address) to MVW, June 7, 2008. Hereinafter cited as "Wardlow."

⁷³⁶ James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008, This is wife #2.

⁷³⁷ James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008; James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008; James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008.

⁷³⁸ James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008; James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008; James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008.

⁷³⁹ James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008.

⁷⁴⁰ James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008; James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008.

⁷⁴¹ James Wardlow, "Wardlow," e-mail to MVW, June 7, 2008.

⁷⁴² Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com; Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com; Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁴³ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁴⁴ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁴⁵ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁴⁶ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁴⁷ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁴⁸ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁴⁹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁵⁰ LDS, *North Carolina Marriages: Early to 1800* (No place: Liahona Press, 1999). Hereinafter cited as *N.C. Marriages*.

⁷⁵¹ unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

- (a) Martha¹⁰ BASS (2029) married /Mayo/ (--?) (2030).
- (b) Elizabeth¹⁰ BASS (2031)
- (c) Charlotte¹⁰ BASS (2032) married /Holloman/ (--?) (2033).
- ii) Merica⁹ (--?) (2028) was born circa 1774.
- iii) John Redick⁹ BASS (2025) was born circa 1780.
- iv) Burrell⁹ BASS (2023) was born circa 1780.
- v) Jethro⁹ BASS (2024) was born circa 1780.
- (j) Jacob⁹ BASS Sr. (1845) was born in 1734 at Perquimans, NC.⁷⁵² He married Ann (--?) (1846) say 1761 Another source calls her Prudence or perhaps Prudence was #2.⁷⁵³ He was circa 1774 at Bute, N.C.⁷⁵⁴ He was shown on a deed on 8 Nov 1774 at Bute, N.C. Bute County, North Carolina Minutes of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions, 1767-1779
8 November 1774 A Deed from Jacob Bass to the Baptist Society at Sandy Creek was proved by the Oath of David Walker a witness thereto and on Motion the same is ordered to be Registered.
Do not know if this is the same Jacob, but the dates are likely. He served in the military in 1776 at North Carolina, NC, He served with the 1st N.C Militia.⁷⁵⁵ He appeared on the census in 1790 at Franklin, NC.⁷⁵⁶ He died on 13 Aug 1791 at Franklin, NC.⁷⁵⁷
 - i) Orren⁹ BASS (1874)
 - ii) Jordan⁹ BASS (1875) married (--?) (--?) (1881). He died in 1841 at AL.
 - (a) John¹⁰ BASS (1888)⁷⁵⁸ died at TX.
 - (b) Willis¹⁰ BASS (1889) died at TX.
 - (c) Sally¹⁰ BASS (1890) married James GATLIN (1891). Her married name was GATLIN (1890).
 - (d) Rebecca¹⁰ BASS (1892) married William RILEY (1893). Her married name was RILEY (1892).
 - (e) /Bass/¹⁰ (--?) (1894) married Elyah (--?) (1895).
 - (f) Nancy¹⁰ BASS (1896) married Riley PIERCE (1897). Her married name was PIERCE (1896).
 - iii) Solomon⁹ BASS (1868)⁷⁵⁹ married (--?) (--?) (1916). He died in 1807 at TN.
 - (a) /Bass/¹⁰ (--?) (1917) married Hearly SCEARCY (1918). Her married name was SCEARCY (1917).
 - (b) Oren¹⁰ BASS (1922) died in 1830 at TN.
 - (c) Nancy¹⁰ BASS (1923)
 - (d) Sion¹⁰ BASS (1919) was born in 1781. He died in 1847 Look for him in Wilson County Tennessee.
 - (e) Jonas B.¹⁰ BASS (1920) was born in 1785.
 - (f) Cader¹⁰ BASS (1921) was born in 1790. He died in 1858.
 - iv) Ferabe⁹ BASS (1869) married Josiah WILLS (1870) on 31 Oct 1789 at Franklin, NC. As of 31 Oct 1789, her married name was WILLS (1869).
 - v) Alexander⁹ BASS (1871) died at Warren, GA.⁷⁶⁰ He was received land grant He is shown on the list of persons eligible to draw in the lottery. in 1805 at GA.
 - vi) /Bass/⁹ (--?) (1879) married Samuel DUKES (1880). Her married name was DUKES (1879).
 - vii) Ezekiel⁹ BASS, Sr. (1876) died at TN. He married (--?) (--?) (1881).
 - (a) Archamak¹⁰ BASS (1882)
 - (b) Henry¹⁰ BASS (1883)
 - (c) Ezekiel¹⁰ BASS (1884)
 - (d) John¹⁰ BASS (1885) died at Lawrence, IL.
 - (e) Elizabeth¹⁰ BASS (1886) married James GADDY (1887). Her married name was GADDY (1886).
 - viii) Sarah⁹ BASS, (1877) married Benjamin COOKE (1878). Her married name was COOKE (1877).
 - ix) Theophilus⁹ BASS (1867)⁷⁶¹ was New Tag. He married Winifred (--?) (1924). He was born circa 1751.⁷⁶² He was on the tax roll in 1805 at Wilson, Tennessee, He is shown on the tax rolls with 640 acres in Captain Crowley's District at Cedar Lick. He is shown living near the children of Elizabeth Bass Bridger. Apparently they all moved west together. He died in 1829 at TN.
 - (a) Etheldred¹⁰ BASS (1925)
 - (b) John¹⁰ BASS (1926)
 - (c) Ann¹⁰ BASS (1927) married /Bridges/ (--?) (1928).
 - (d) /Bass/¹⁰ (--?) (1929) married Harty ODUM (1930). Her married name was ODUM (1929).
 - (e) /Bass/¹⁰ (--?) (1931) married John EDWARDS (1932). Her married name was EDWARDS (1931).

⁷⁵²Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com; Basse GENWEB, online <ftp://rootsweb.com/pub/usgenweb/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt>.

⁷⁵³Basse GENWEB, online <ftp://rootsweb.com/pub/usgenweb/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt>.

⁷⁵⁴Basse GENWEB, online <ftp://rootsweb.com/pub/usgenweb/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt>.

⁷⁵⁵unknown subject unknown repository; Basse GENWEB, online <ftp://rootsweb.com/pub/usgenweb/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt>.

⁷⁵⁶Basse GENWEB, online <ftp://rootsweb.com/pub/usgenweb/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt>.

⁷⁵⁷unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁵⁸

⁷⁵⁹unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁶⁰unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁶¹unknown subject.

⁷⁶²unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

- x) Warren⁹ BASS (1873) married (--?--) (--?--) (1902). He was born circa 1755. He died in 1806 at Franklin, NC.
- (a) Nancy¹⁰ BASS (1903)
 - (b) Lydak¹⁰ BASS (1904)
- xi) Reddick⁹ BASS (1865) was born in 1755 at Franklin, NC. He married Obedience PARSONS (1866) in 1774. He was shown on a deed after 1790 at Land, Warren, GA, Deed Book A p. 473 shows John Gibson to Reddick Bass for \$400. sold 200 acres on Middle Creek. It was land granted 2-28-1788 to John Gibson (Note a witness is listed as A. *Persons* - this is probably a family friend whose name provides the source of name for #3 son Persons Bass). He was living before 1793 at GA. He was shown on a deed on 21 Jan 1805 at Land, Warren, GA, Deed book B p. 376-377 shows Richard Sammons having sold to Reddick Bass for \$457. land on Middle Creek adjacent to John Gibson's line and Culpepper line, land originally granted to John Torrence. He died in 1829 at GA. He was living in Georgia before 1793. His estate was probated in 1829 at Warren, GA, His will gave 287.5 acres of land in Warren county, Ga called "the home place" located on middle creek and in addition four slaves to wife Obedience for her use.⁷⁶³
- (a) Nancy¹⁰ BASS (1933)
 - (b) Elizabeth¹⁰ BASS (1934) married Kendall MC TYEIRE (1935). Her married name was MC TYEIRE (1934).
 - i) Narcissa¹¹ MC TYEIRE (1941)
 - ii) Reddick¹¹ MC TYEIRE (1942)
 - (c) Larkin¹⁰ BASS (1937) died at GA.
 - (d) Parsons¹⁰ BASS (1936). His name may have come from a friend of the family. His father bought land in Georgia and one of the witnesses was an individual named "A. *Persons*." - child possibly named for him. She died at GA.⁷⁶⁴ She was born after 1774. She was account administrator on 16 Sep 1822 at GA. Administrator of a bond from John Gibson.
 - (e) Buckner¹⁰ BASS (1938) Possibly had a daughter named Nancy (Nancy Fuller Bass). He died at AL. He married (--?--) (--?--) (1939). He was born in 1788 at North Carolina, NC.
 - i) Jane¹¹ BASS (1940)⁷⁶⁵
- xii) Jacob⁹ BASS Jr. (1872)⁷⁶⁶ was born after 1774. He married Ann COOK (4199) in 1785.⁷⁶⁷ He appeared on the census in 1790 at Franklin, NC (He appears in miscellaneous county records 1774-1804 and is said to have taken an oath of allegiance which was required for him to vote).⁷⁶⁸ He died in 1810 at Franklin, N.C. His will is to be found in Book D on Page 7 under Wills and Inventories Jan 13 1813. His land was said to be on north side of Sandy Creek.⁷⁶⁹ He died in 1810 at Franklin, NC.
- (a) Nancy¹⁰ BASS (1906)
 - (b) Sally¹⁰ BASS (1907) married Guilford COOKE (1908). Her married name was COOKE (1907).
 - (c) Wyatt¹⁰ BASS (1909) died at TN.⁷⁷⁰
 - (d) Jacob¹⁰ BASS (1910) died at Warren, GA.⁷⁷¹
 - (e) Betsy¹⁰ BASS (1911) married Jacob GUPTON (1912) in 1810 at Franklin, NC. As of 1810, her married name was GUPTON (1911).
 - (f) Cynthia¹⁰ BASS (1913) married /Boykin/ (--?--) (1914). She died in 1827 at Franklin, NC.
 - (g) Guilford¹⁰ BASS (1915) died at TN.⁷⁷² He Guilford is the ancestor of Gerry Bass who is doing the Bass DNA project. Interesting that Gerry is a type A haplogroup which is one of the oldest from the southern part of Africa. No one can figure out how the type A got into the Virginia area. Obviously some male from southern Africa got to Virginia. I suppose its possible that an early Portugese or Spanish explorer picked up an African and took them back to Europe, but that seems far fetched. Of course the African could have walked to Europe and become the ancestor of a Bass family, but since the type A is not found universally in Europe that seems peculiar too.

The African probably claimed the name Bass from an owner - but when? The y Chromosome comes directly from father to son only. Anyhow, here is Jerry's line. He claims for sure he descends from Guilford (I wonder how many Guilfords there were) Guildford was father of William, father of Andrew Jackson, father of William Benjamin, father of Gerald Irvin, father of Gerry William (himself). This is fascinating stuff. He was born in 1794.⁷⁷³ He died on 20 Sep 1846.⁷⁷⁴

- (k) Isaac⁸ BASS (1851) married Nancy (Ann) (--?--) (1852). He was born before 1745.⁷⁷⁵ He began military service circa 1750 at Militia; Soldier, Edgecomb, NC, he served in Captain Jacob Whitehead's Company along with his brother, Abraham. Also in the same company were Elisha Battle, Thomas Floid

⁷⁶³Will.

⁷⁶⁴unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁶⁵unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁶⁶unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁶⁷Basse GENWEB, online ftp.rootsweb.com/pub/usgenweb/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt.

⁷⁶⁸1790 Census; Both he and his father appear on the census.

⁷⁶⁹Basse GENWEB, online ftp.rootsweb.com/pub/usgenweb/il/montgomery/bios/bassefam.txt.

⁷⁷⁰unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁷¹unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁷²unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁷³Barb Clayton, "usgwarchives," *Ancestral File*.

⁷⁷⁴Barb Clayton, "usgwarchives," *Ancestral File*.

⁷⁷⁵Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

(possibly the father of Fed Floyd) and Edward Bass.⁷⁷⁶ He served in the military circa 1776 at North Carolina, NC.⁷⁷⁷ He was on the tax roll in 1782 at Nash, N.C. He appeared on the census in 1790 at Nash, NC (He is shown with three males more than 16, three under sixteen and four females and nine slaves). He died on 27 Dec 1800 at Nash, NC, Will left wife Nancy 4 negroes, livestock, furniture.

- i) Jethro⁹ BASS (1984)
- ii) Isaac⁹ BASS (1985)
- iii) John⁹ BASS (1986)
- iv) Jesse⁹ BASS (1993) married Francis (--?--) (1994).⁷⁷⁸ He died in 1822 at Nash, N.C.⁷⁷⁹
 - (a) Coffield¹⁰ BASS (1996)
 - (b) Council¹⁰ BASS (1997) died after 1835 at Mississippi, Washington, MS.⁷⁸⁰
 - (c) Goodman¹⁰ BASS (1998) died after 1835 at Madison, MS.
 - (d) Sion¹⁰ BASS (1999) died circa 1837.
 - (e) Jordon¹⁰ BASS (2000) died at Arkansas.
 - (f) Gideon¹⁰ BASS (2001)
 - (g) Erwin (Edwin)¹⁰ BASS (2002) died circa 1837 at Mississippi.
 - (h) Issacc¹⁰ BASS (2003)⁷⁸¹ died circa 1835 at Madison, MS.
 - (i) Edmon¹⁰ BASS (2004). An Edmund Bass received a Georgia Land Grant in Hancock Co. Book 5 p 232 in 1824 for nine acres. Do not know if this is the same Edmund. Probably not since this Edmund was married in 1836 in NC. He married (--?--) (--?--) (2005) in 1836 at Nash, NC.
 - (j) Jesse¹⁰ BASS (2006) died after 1836 at Mississippi.⁷⁸²
 - (k) Frances¹⁰ BASS (2007) married William W. EALEY (2008). Her married name was EALEY (2007). She was living in 1840 at Leake, MS. She died after 1841 at Mississippi. She was New Tag Information about the children and location came from an e-mail sent by Melvin J. Collier Melman872@aol.com. However, I had the couples names and their parents before receiving the e-mail message. in 2001.
 - i) Isaac¹¹ EALEY (3139)
 - ii) Harriet¹¹ EALEY (3140)
 - iii) William Council¹¹ EALEY (3141)
 - iv) Josiah¹¹ EALEY (3142)
 - v) Martha H.¹¹ EALEY (3143)
 - (l) Penelope¹⁰ BASS (2009) married /Wilhight/ (--?--) (2010).
 - (m) Elizabeth¹⁰ BASS (2011) died at Mississippi. She married Jos, HOLLAND (2012). Her married name was HOLLAND (2011).
 - (n) Louzany¹⁰ BASS (2013) died after 1821 at GA. Lived in Georgia in 1821.
- v) Dinisa (Nise)⁹ BASS (1989) married /Rogers/ (--?--) (1990).
- vi) Levicey (Crise)⁹ BASS (1991) married /Laurence/ (--?--) (1992).
- vii) Augustin⁹ BASS Sr. (1987) He possibly married to #2 named Mildred who died in 1845. He married Lydia (--?--) (1988). He was born in 1769 He was a witness in 1790.⁷⁸³ He died in 1816.
 - (a) Nancy¹⁰ BASS (2014)
 - (b) Blake¹⁰ BASS (2016)
 - (c) Bennet¹⁰ BASS (2017)
 - (d) Jacob¹⁰ BASS (2423)⁷⁸⁴ was born in 1789.
 - (e) Augustine¹⁰ BASS Jr. (2018) was born in 1792. He married Julia Ann SIKES (2019), daughter of /Sikes/ (--?--) (1963) and Mourning ROGERS (1962), on 26 Jan 1833 at Nash, NC, Date found on microfiche at LDS.
 - i) Jacob¹¹ BASS (2021) (see above)
 - (f) Mourning¹⁰ BASS (2015) was born in 1801.
 - (g) Embry¹⁰ BASS (2020)⁷⁸⁵ was born in 1804.
- ix) Mary⁷ BASS (1839) was born circa 1707.⁷⁸⁶ She purchased land in 1732 Mary born say 1722, received 100 acres on the north side of Urahaw Swamp by her father's will.⁷⁸⁷
- x) Judith⁷ BASS (1834) died at Guilford, NC. She married William CANADAY (1835) at Guilford, NC. Her married name was CANADAY (1834). She was born circa 1708.⁷⁸⁸ She purchased land on 7 Apr 1744 She received 100 acres by her father's will. She and husband William sold this land on 7 April 1744 [Northampton DB 1:175].⁷⁸⁹

⁷⁷⁶Clark, *Colonial Soldiers of South*.

⁷⁷⁷unknown subject unknown repository.

⁷⁷⁸Joseph Watson, *Nash County Wills*.

⁷⁷⁹Watson, compiler, *Abstracts of Early Nash County Will book #1 1778-1868* (No place: no publisher). Hereinafter cited as *Nash County Wills*.

⁷⁸⁰unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁸¹unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁸²unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁸³unknown subject, unknown repository, unknown repository address.

⁷⁸⁴Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁷⁸⁵Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁷⁸⁶John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁷⁸⁷Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁸⁸John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁷⁸⁹Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

- xi) Patience⁷ BASS (1840) was born circa 1710.⁷⁹⁰ She purchased land in 1732 Patience, born say 1726. Her father left her his plantation on the south side of Bear Swamp.⁷⁹¹
- xii) Aaron⁷ BASS (1833) (Lived in Dobbs, Chatham and Surry County, North Carolina) was born circa 1724.⁷⁹² He purchased land in 1732 Aaron, born say 1724, received his father's plantation on the south side of Bear Swamp. There was an Aaron Bass who was taxable on one poll in Dobbs County in 1769 [NCGSJ XV:74] and taxable on one poll in Johnston County in 1784 [GA 64.1]. There was also an Aaron Bass who was counted as white in Chatham County, head of a household of one male and 3 females in 1790 [NC:87] and head of a Chatham County household of 3 "other free" in 1800.⁷⁹³
- xiii) Elizabeth⁷ BASS (3366) married Edward TAYLOR (3367).⁷⁹⁴ Her married name was TAYLOR (3366). She was received land grant Elizabeth, not mentioned in her father's will but called the "now wife of Edward Taylor" whose son John Taylor was given a deed of gift of 100 acres on the south side of Hunting Quarter Swamp in Northampton County on 6 November 1747 by her brother John Bass [DB 1:321]. in 1732.
- (c) William⁶ BASS (2259) was also known as William (B) BASS (2259).⁷⁹⁵ He was born on 28 Oct 1676.⁷⁹⁶ He purchased land on 12 Nov 1728 at Norfolk, VA, Deed Book G. pp. 110-111 William Lovina, son of John Lovina, deceased sold to William Bass, Jr. for 16 pounds 150 acres on the southern Branch of the Elizabeth River; land which had bee willed to John Lovina in 1695.⁷⁹⁷ He married Sarah LOVINA (2962) in 1729 at Norfolk, VA, Sarah called the "Molatto" daughter of a "Negro Woman" slave named Jean Lovina. Norfolk WB 6:fol.96; DB 12:188; 18:41-2 Seventy years later the Norfolk County Clerk wrote a certificate for a grandson named William stating that he was "of English and Indian descent and is not a Negroe nor a Mulattoe as by some falsely and maliciously stated." The author of "Free African Americans" says the May 1797 affidaivit was false and conflicted with other family evidence.⁷⁹⁸ He purchased land on 18 Mar 1736 at Norfolk, VA, Deed Book 12 p. 188 Willian and Sarah Bass his wife of the Southern Branch of the Elizabeth River, sold to Thomas Dale 48 acres "on Jos. Bachelder's line" out of a tract of the sd. Neck of land that Major Michols gave (wonder why he gave it to her?) unto the said Sarah Bass before her marriage to the sd. Wm Bass.⁷⁹⁹ He died on 20 Oct 1751 at Norfolk, VA, aged 74.⁸⁰⁰
- (d) Joseph⁶ BASS (2257) was born on 21 Dec 1679.⁸⁰¹ He died after 1742 He is mentioned in his father's will with a token bequest. Probably he was still living in Norfolk County Virginia.
- (e) Mary⁶ BASS (2260)⁸⁰² was born on 15 Jun 1681.⁸⁰³ Inheirtance was (Under her father's will she beat out four brothers for inheirtance. Possibly this is because the brothers had plenty of land and money. Brothers given only tokens. She received all remaining money and personal property, and "my land if she can save it after my death"). In 1999 She was apparently a spinster as she is mentioned in a certificate as being "spinster daughter of English and nansemun Indian descent with no Admixture of negro, Ethipopoc blood."⁸⁰⁴
- (f) Keziah⁶ BASS (2261)⁸⁰⁵ was born on 30 Oct 1675 Have found two conflicting birth dates for her.⁸⁰⁶ She was born on 15 Jun 1681.⁸⁰⁷ She died circa 1704.
- (g) Thomas⁶ BASS (2258) was born on 13 Nov 1687.⁸⁰⁸ He died after 1741 Mentioned in his father's will with a token bequest. Probably living in Norfolk Virginia area at time.
- (7) Richard⁵ BASSE (2295) was born on 2 Aug 1658 at Nansemond Kingdom.⁸⁰⁹ He married Jane BRYANT (2895) on 6 Nov 1680.⁸¹⁰ He married Mary BURWELL (2896) on 25 Aug 1695 at VA.⁸¹¹ Between 1722 and 1727 The Nansemonds split into two parts in the mid-seventeenth century. The nonreservation Christianized Nansemonds continued to live on the Nansemond River in Virginia until either the late 17th or early 18th ceentury. Then, family by family, they withdrew southeast into the back country of Norfolk County on the northern edge of the Great Dismal Swamp. There they went on living quietly throughout the 18th century, keeping a Nansemond identity and living by hunting and farming on a small scale. However, the Indian identity of these people and later, their distant Indian ancestry made some of their English neighbors unwilling to respect their citizenship. Therefore, sometime between 1722 and 1727 the children of Richard Bass in Norfolk County Virginia had the clerk of court write a certificate for them, reciting their ancestry and stating that "these are Peaceful Subjects of His Maitie George I...numbered among ye Nansiemum People, freeborn, and worthie of ye Respecfull Consideracon of Christians in ye Church in Carolina as

⁷⁹⁰ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁷⁹¹ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁹² John Bass, Documents MVW file; Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁹³ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁹⁴ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁹⁵ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁷⁹⁶ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁷⁹⁷ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁷⁹⁸ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁷⁹⁹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁰⁰ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁰¹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁰² Bass Book.

⁸⁰³ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁰⁴ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁸⁰⁵ Bass Book.

⁸⁰⁶ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁰⁷ Bass Book.

⁸⁰⁸ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁰⁹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸¹⁰ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸¹¹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

in Virginia.⁸¹² He died on 26 Dec 1722 at Nansemond aged 64 William Rudd, Clergyman of the Parish of Elizabeth River Church, stated "These are peaceful subjects of His Majesty George I, King and defender of he faith, numbered among ye Nansiemum people, freeborn, and worthy of ye respectfull consideration of Christians in ye Church in Carolina as in Virginia and intituled to the same." Note - Evidently the Basse family was preparing to move south to North Carolina. It was the custom to be released from one Parish so that they could transfer to the Parish church in the new area.⁸¹³

- (a) Charles⁶ BASSE (2897)⁸¹⁴ was born on 9 Nov 1681 at VA.⁸¹⁵
- (b) Samuel⁶ BASSE (2898)⁸¹⁶ was born on 20 Jan 1682/83 at VA.⁸¹⁷
- (c) James⁶ BASSE (2899)⁸¹⁸ was born on 14 Jan 1683/84 at VA.⁸¹⁹
- (d) Matthew⁶ BASSE (2900)⁸²⁰ was born on 24 Dec 1684 at VA.⁸²¹
- (e) Keziah⁶ BASSE (2901)⁸²² was born on 30 Nov 1687 at VA.⁸²³
- (f) Anna⁶ BASSE (2902)⁸²⁴ was born on 16 Dec 1688 at VA.⁸²⁵
- (g) Andrew⁶ BASSE Sr. (2911)⁸²⁶ was born on 9 Jun 1698 at Norfolk, VA.⁸²⁷ He married Elizabeth SMITH (2912) circa 1728 at Norfolk, VA.⁸²⁸ He died in Mar 1770 at Craven, NC, aged 71.
- i) Ann⁷ BASSE (2913) married Richard BLACKLEDGE (2914). Her married name was BLACKLEDGE (2913).
- ii) Richard⁷ BASSE (2915)⁸²⁹ married Sarah (--?--) (2918) Record says they might have married in Johnston Co., NC.⁸³⁰ He was born circa 1730 at Craven, NC.⁸³¹ He died circa 1792 at Wayne, NC.⁸³²
 - (a) Andrew⁸ BASSE (2919) was born circa 1756. He married Christian ? SCULL (2920) circa 1780.⁸³³ He died in Nov 1791 at Craven, NC.
 - (b) Elizabeth⁸ BASSE (2921) married James STEVENS (2922).⁸³⁴ Her married name was STEVENS (2921). She was born circa 1759.
 - (c) Edward⁸ BASSE (2923)⁸³⁵ married Sarah FARMER (2927). He was born circa 1762.⁸³⁶ He died circa 1802 at Wayne, NC.⁸³⁷
 - i) John⁹ BASSE (2928) died between 1820 and 1821 at AL.
 - (a) Uriah¹⁰ BASSE (2937)⁸³⁸
 - (b) Mary¹⁰ BASSE (2938)⁸³⁹
 - (c) Betsy¹⁰ BASSE (2939)⁸⁴⁰
 - (d) Sally¹⁰ BASSE (2940)⁸⁴¹
 - (e) Annea¹⁰ BASSE (2941)⁸⁴²

⁸¹²King, *Isle of Wight*.

⁸¹³Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸¹⁴Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸¹⁵Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸¹⁶Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸¹⁷Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸¹⁸Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸¹⁹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²⁰Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²¹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²²Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²³Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²⁴Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²⁵Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²⁶Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²⁷Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²⁸Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸²⁹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³⁰Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³¹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³²Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³³Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³⁴Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³⁵Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³⁶Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³⁷Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³⁸Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸³⁹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴⁰Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴¹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴²Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

- (f) Keziah¹⁰ BASSE (2942)⁸⁴³
 - (g) Richard¹⁰ BASSE (2943)⁸⁴⁴
 - ii) Andrew⁹ BASSE (2929)
 - iii) Mary⁹ BASSE (2933) married Britton HOOD (2934). Her married name was HOOD (2933).
 - iv) Richard⁹ BASSE (2931) died circa 1897 at TN.
 - v) William⁹ BASSE (2936)
 - vi) Keziah⁹ BASSE (2932)⁸⁴⁵ was born Note the persistant use of this name that came from the Indian wife of John Bass five generations earlier!⁸⁴⁶ She married John COX (2935). Her married name was COX (2932).
 - vii) Uriah⁹ BASSE (2930) was born Died in infancy.
 - (d) Sarah⁸ BASSE (2924) married Joseph BOON (2925). Her married name was BOON (2924). She was born circa 1764.
 - (e) Uriah⁸ BASSE (2926) was born on 11 Jun 1766 at Dobbs, NC. He died on 30 May 1819 at Madison, AL, aged 52.
 - iii) Andrew⁷ BASSE (2916) married Ann (--?--) (2917).⁸⁴⁷ He was born circa 1740. He died on 15 Mar 1791 at Wayne, NC.
 - (h) Anthony⁶ BASSE Sr. (2903)⁸⁴⁸ was born on 9 Jun 1698 at Norfolk, VA.⁸⁴⁹
 - (i) Alexander⁶ BASSE (2904) was born on 27 Jul 1702 at Norfolk, VA.
 - (j) Richard⁶ BASSE Jr. (2905) Hiyas Margo!
- I really *shouldn't* post to people when I have been studing into the early morning hours. I do tend to ramble when it gets past midnight. As best I can I will key in what I have from the death of Humphrey Basse to present on my end. I do not have records of all the children - only the one who made our family line - sorries. I know my Auntie would have this information but I asked only for "my family history - descendants to myself" - what I can fill in I will (from my chart or other family records). And I can get other information about all (or many) children of ancestors - but my Auntie is ill and it may take me a few weeks before she is able to help me.

Humphrey Basse - born about 1564 in France- died in Middlesex, London 1616 . He was married to Mary Buschier about 1587 who died the 22 of July 1616. He was known as "The Immigrant" as they came from France. They had a son named Nathaniell (or Nathaniel as US records show)

Nathanie(l) Basse - born 29 of December 1589 in London. He died the 3rd of July 1654. He was married 21 of May 1615 in London to Mary Jordan (who died the 17th of Jan. 1630). They were of the "gentry" class (I can explain the "class" system of UK at this time period if needed for background in a later e-mail). They had a son - John Basse (other children not on *my* list as I only asked for the line from my maternal grandfather back but I can get this information if you need it)

John Basse - born 7th of December in 1616, London England, and he died the 2cd of April 1699 in Norfolk, Virginia (however UK records state they have record he died at this time period in London "without incident- escaping the massacre in Virginia"- the UK information comes from *my* research not my Aunties) - John Basse was married to Elizabeth Keziah- daughter of the Great Petter, King of the Nansemond Indians, on 14th of August, 1638. Elizabeth died 4th of Dec, 1676 in Virginia

Richard Basse- 7th child of John & Elizabeth born the 2cd of August, 1658 and he died the 26th of December in 1722 in Nansemond Virginia . He married Mary Burwell on 26 of August, 1695 in Namsond, North Carolina (Mary Burwell was his 2cd wife - Richard Basses' first wife was Jane Bryant - she bore him 6 children and died when 24).

Richard Bass - 3rd child born 24th of July 1710 in Virginia and died the 9th of March 1780 in Sampson, North Carolina and married Elizabeth (?) born ca 1710 Virginia They were married about 1738 in Virginia or North Carolina and had 11 children - the 11th being Andrew.

Andrew Bass- 11th child - born ca. 1768 Duplin County, North Carolina. Died before 1850 in Barbour County, Alabama. He married Rebecca Pate born abt 1775 in North

⁸⁴³Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴⁴Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴⁵Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴⁶Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴⁷Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴⁸Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁴⁹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

Caroline. She died in Clayton, Barbara County, Alabama. They had 7 children.

Allen Bass - the 3rd child. He was born in 1798 in North Carolina he died in 1854 Barbour County, Alabama. He married Molsey Frances Tew who was born ca 1805 and died in Barbour County Alabama

Hardy Bass- Born 12th of August, 1822 Sampson County, North Carolina. Died 16th of Sept 1913 buried in Damacus Cemetary, Coffee County Alabama was married the 20th of July, 1847 to Clarke Adaline Long - who was born the 30th of November, 1831 Georgia and died the 23rd of June, 1907 is buried in same cemetary as Hardy (next to him).

John Hardy Bass- Born 26th of Feb, 1868 in Alabama - he died the 6th of Jan, 1924 in Coffee County, Alabama. He was married the 22nd of December, 1887 to Christian Ledora Smith who was born in Sept 1862 in Coffee County, Alabama and died November of 1905. John Hardy was buried in Beulah Baptist Church Cemetary in Opp Alabama & Christian Ledora was buried in Bethany Church Cemetary in New Brockton, Alabama (unmarked grave at time chart was made but I believe the family changed this & she now lies in a marked grave).

Malcolm Rosco Bass - (my grandfather- and one of many children- thats the Bass's for you - they did believe in huge families up to this point) :)
born 24th of Sept, 1898 in Elba, Alabama and died the 9th of July, 1986
Married the 28th of November, 1920 to Sallie Ilene Donaldson - born 20th of March, 1904 in DeFuniak Spgs, Florida and died the 2nd of June, 1967. They are buried side by side in Alaqua Methodist Church Cemetary, DeFuniak Spgs Florida - had 5 children. Milladeen, Olene, John, Milford, Donald.

My Mother is Della Olene - she had myself (eldest) and 2 sons. I have information going back 2 more generations from Humphrey - we originally came from France (the Basse). I started doing research when I was living in Leadhills Scotland (I married a Scot). Writing for records from UK archives.

Also I have information from my aunts chart going back from Clarke's side of the family (Hardy's wife) & of course my maternal grandmothers side (Donaldsons, Trotmans) but I am only sending the organized bits that I have on the Basse family. Does this help or ...?

Hope this post doesn't sound *quite* as disjointed as my first "early morn" post did. This took longer to key in this way than it does to write it on a chart. lol Okies - I am "off to play pogo".
Hope to hear from you soon & if you wish any other info I will certainly hasten to send it to you!

Sincerely~

Tisha Harvey-Davidson

tharveydavidson[at]harveydavidson@cableone.net]. He was born on 24 Jun 1707 at Norfolk, VA.

(k) Mary⁸⁵⁰ BASSE (2906)⁸⁵⁰ was born on 16 Aug 1709 at Norfolk, VA.⁸⁵¹

(l) William⁸⁵² BASSE (2907)⁸⁵² was born on 19 Jul 1713 at Norfolk, VA.⁸⁵³ In 1727 "In 1727, William Bass, Sr., one of Richard's sons, had to have an inquest held by the county court to prove that he and his kinsmen were of English and Nansemond descent only and that by the Treaty of Middle Plantation in 1677 they were entitled to bear arms and to use the "cleared Lands and Swamps" that their ancestors had used 'since and before English governance in Virginia." The county government was plainly willing to accord the Basses priveleges that ceased for other, more "Indian" groups when they lost their reservations.⁸⁵⁴ In 1742 "The Nansemond-descended Basses continued to have problems with racist English neighbors, so in 1742 William Bass went back to the county court and got a certificate stating that he was "of English and Indian descent with no admixture of negro blood" and was "numbered as a Nansemun by his own Choosing." This certificate, which describes Bass as "tall, swarthy, dark eyes," is a forerunner in form of the certificates of free birth which became required for free non-whites after the turn of the 19th century.⁸⁵⁵ In 1798 another William Bass had to get yet another certificate from the county court reciting his ancestry and stating plainly that he was "of English and Indian descent and was not a Negroe or a Mulattoe as by some falsely and maliciously stated." The genealogies recited in the certificates show at least two ties to the traditional Nansemond tribe; one was the John Bass marriage of 1638 and the second

⁸⁵⁰Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁵¹Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁵²Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁵³Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁵⁴King, *Isle of Wight*.

⁸⁵⁵King, *Isle of Wight*.

linked William Bass of 1797 to Great Peter, Nansemond headman on the reservation in Isle of Wight (now Southampton) county in 1710. The Christianized Nansemonds had clearly kept up ties with their reservation kinsmen for a long time, and in the long run they were the group that survived. Note from MVW -The Indian name Keziah is found in five related Bass families and descends through at least five generations! Obviously this family treasured their Indian heritage.

(m) Uriah⁵ BASSE (2908)⁸⁵⁶ was born on 29 Oct 1716 at Norfolk, VA.⁸⁵⁷

(n) Thomas⁶ BASSE (2909)⁸⁵⁸ died at Craven, NC.⁸⁵⁹ He was born on 5 Jul 1719 at Norfolk, VA.⁸⁶⁰ He married Sophia CORDWAINER (2910) circa 1740.

(8) John⁵ BASSE (2294) was born on 14 Mar 1661.⁸⁶¹ He died on 14 Mar 1661.⁸⁶²

d) William⁴ BASSE Sr. (2287) (The suffix Sr. found in "Early Bases") died at Norfolk, VA. He was born on 25 Dec 1618 at London, England.⁸⁶³ He married Sarah BATTEN (2893) on 26 Sep 1641.⁸⁶⁴ He died in 1695 at Norfolk, VA.⁸⁶⁵

(1) William⁵ BASSE (2952) (Found his name on page 10 of "Historical Notes on Isle of Wight County") married Hester (--?--) (4494).⁸⁶⁶ He was born on 18 Feb 1647/48.⁸⁶⁷ He died in 1695.⁸⁶⁸

(a) William⁶ BASSE (4495)⁸⁶⁹

(b) Thomas⁶ BASSE (4496)⁸⁷⁰

(c) Elizabeth⁶ BASSE (4497)⁸⁷¹

(d) Ann⁶ BASSE (4498)⁸⁷²

e) Anthony⁴ BASSE (2286) was born on 13 Mar 1620/21 He was probably born in London as his parents were in England at time of the 1622 massacre. Its likely they took Anthony with them, but no other information is available.⁸⁷³ He was #R3 CENSUS in 1696 at Rowen, N.C.⁸⁷⁴

f) Edward⁴ BASSE (2285) was also known as Edward (A) BASS (2285).⁸⁷⁵ He was born on 8 May 1622 at London, England.⁸⁷⁶ "Edward Basse, sonne of Nathll and Mary Basse yt unregenerated by ye Spirit of God, took in marriage one virtuos Indian maydn by the Christian name of Mary Tucker and went to live amongst the Showanocs in Carolina in 1644 AD. He went to Carolina in later years in persute of trade and not in 1644. Dyed in 1696 Ad.⁸⁷⁷ He married Mary TUCKER (2892) in 1644 ...Edward Basse took in marriage one virtuous Indian Maydn by the Christian name of Mary Tucker and went to live amongst the Showanoes in Carolina in 1644 AD. He went to Carolinas in latter years in pursute of trade and not in 1644. Dyed in 1696 (last two sentences added at a later date, but in same handwriting).⁸⁷⁸ He died in Sep 1696 at Chowan, NC, aged 74 His death record states: "a devout and Godly man."⁸⁷⁹

(1) Elizabeth⁵ BASSE (3118)⁸⁸⁰

(2) Mary⁵ BASSE (3119)⁸⁸¹

(3) John⁵ BASSE (3117)⁸⁸² He may have married and had children and one might even have been named John, but as of November 2000 no evidence of this has been found.

2008

⁸⁵⁶ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁵⁷ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁵⁸ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁵⁹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁶⁰ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁶¹ Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁸⁶² Free African Americans, online www.freeafricanamericans.com.

⁸⁶³ Basse Sermon Book.

⁸⁶⁴ Basse Sermon Book.

⁸⁶⁵ Cary A. Rutherford Jr., Research and Compilation by Cary A. Rutherford Jr., online

<http://www.nelsongenealogy.org/gedcom/sources.html#2>, I have no idea what Rutherford's sources are. Hereinafter cited as Rutherford.

⁸⁶⁶ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁶⁷ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁶⁸ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁶⁹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁷⁰ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁷¹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁷² Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁷³ Basse Sermon Book.

⁸⁷⁴ Rutherford, online <http://www.nelsongenealogy.org/gedcom/sources.html#2>.

⁸⁷⁵ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁷⁶ Basse Sermon Book; Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁸⁷⁷ Basse Sermon Book.

⁸⁷⁸ Basse Sermon Book.

⁸⁷⁹ Basse Sermon Book.

⁸⁸⁰ John Bass, Documents MVW file; John Bass, Documents MVW file; John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸¹ John Bass, Documents MVW file; John Bass, Documents MVW file; John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸² John Bass, Documents MVW file; John Bass, Documents MVW file; John Bass, Documents MVW file.

Margot,

Glad to hear from you again.

I see nothing here that I did not reference in my *John Bass of Virginia*.

I am 100% convinced that John Bayes was not the father of the John Bass who married Love Harris. I am 98% convinced that John Bayes was not even closely related to said John Bass.

I know it is not interesting reading, and I know that my *John Bass of Virginia* does not PROVE that John Bass was the son of William Basse, but it does demonstrate that all of the documentary evidence is consistent with same, and that there is not a shred of evidence that is consistent with the contrary contention that John Bass was a son of John Bayes.

Al Bass

-----Original Message-----

From: Margot Woodrough <margo4it@tampabay.rr.com>

To: Albasspe@aol.com

Sent: Mon, 11 Feb 2008 10:12 am

Subject: FW: Edward Basse (b.1622) and son John "Bayes"

Hi Al, I looked at my database and discovered that your book is the source of my information. Can you answer this gentleman's question? Please send me a copy of your response as I am very interested.

Margot Woodrough

From: Mark Baze [mailto:mark_baze@yahoo.com]

Sent: Sunday, February 10, 2008 5:27 AM

To: margo4it@tampabay.rr.com

Subject: Edward Basse (b.1622) and son John "Bayes"

Hi Margaret,

I came across your webpage (e.g., <http://margotwoodrough.com/p19.htm#i3117>) and I'm wondering how reliable that the name variation of John "Bayes" is that you have for John Basse (son of Edward Basse, son of Capt. Nathaniel Basse)? I'm asking because I found an abstract (from the book "Abstract of North Carolina Wills Compiled" by John B. Grimes, pub. 1910, p.24) which reads:

BAYES, EDWARD Albemarle County.

August 8, 1696. October Court, 1696. *Son:* John Bayes. *Daughters:* Eliz., Mary and Ann Bayes. *Executrix:* Mary Bayes. *Witnesses:* Thos. Luton and Cotton Robison. *Clerk of the Court:* Nathl. Chevin.

[Presumably "Albemarle" County is referring to Chowan Precinct.] The abstract of the will is giving identical family members to those you give for Edward Basse, the father of your John Basse/Bayes. Is the above Bayes will the source for the names of the children you give for Edward Basse? (And do you have a copy of the original will by any chance?)

I'm wondering if what's happened here is that a researcher may have mistakenly assumed that because Edward Basse married a Mary and then went to the Carolinas (according to the writings in the Basse Sermon Book: <http://vaimage.lib.va.us/Bible/26371/0016.tiff>) that the Edward Bayes found in the above will must be the same Edward I do see that the Basse Sermon Book is saying that Edward died in 1696, which is obviously consistent with the deathyear for the Edward Bayes of the will, but I'm still finding it very hard to believe that Edward Basse's will would have given his name as "Bayes." Is your month of death of "September" that you give for Edward Basse based on using the intermediate month between the writing (August) and the proving (October) of the will for Edward Bayes?

I also see where a John Bayes witnessed a deed 6 April 1708 in Chowan and on the same document a Richard Lewis was also a witness. (Unverified record from:

<http://www.woodardfamilytree.com/html/chowancounty.html>) An individual who may be this same Richard Lewis was later willed land in Chowan Precinct called the "Bayes Plantation" by a Henry Bonner who died in 1738: "I give and bequeath all that my plantation tract, or seat of Land Lying in the precinct aforesaid commonly Called by the name of Bayes's plantation to my Grandson Richard Lewis and his hiers forever." (Unverified record from: <http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com/~mysouthernfamily/myff/d0040/q0000039.html>) I'm assuming that this "Bayes Plantation" may have been named after a Bayes family who owned it previously and that it was sold to Bonner prior to 1738 and that the Bayes family then moved elsewhere.

This consistent usage of the name "Bayes" is again making me think that a Basse family may be getting mixed up with a Bayes family. The similarity of the names is such that it is appealing to some researchers to think they might be spelling variations, and I've even seen where at least one record was misrepresented to make readers think a "Bass" was being referred to when it was in fact a "Bays." I've not seen any proven examples where an actual name

transformation from a Bass/Basse to a Bays/Baze or vice versa occurred. So this Edward/John situation would be the very first one - if it's true.

Thanks very much for any insight you can give.
Mark

Never miss a thing. [Make Yahoo your homepage.](#)

More new features than ever. Check out the new [AOL Mail](#).⁸⁸³ He. He was born circa 1650.⁸⁸⁴ In 2008 No indication that this John is father of the John who married Love Harris. I am 100% convinced that John Bayes was not the father of the John Bass who married Love Harris. I am 98% convinced that John Bayes was not even closely related to said John Bass. Al Bass.⁸⁸⁵

(4) Ann⁵ BASSE (3120)⁸⁸⁶ married Thomas JOHNSON (3121).⁸⁸⁷ Her married name was JOHNSON (3120). She was born circa 1652.⁸⁸⁸

g) Mary⁴ BASSE (2293) was born on 14 Jun 1623 I do not know if she was born in London or Virginia.⁸⁸⁹

h) Anne⁴ BASSE (2291) was born on 9 Oct 1624 She was born ten minutes earlier than her twin Genevieve.⁸⁹⁰ She married Thomas BURWELL Jr. (2894) on 11 Jun 1640 at VA Marriage mentioned on P. 10 of Historical Notes on Isle of Wight County.⁸⁹¹ As of 11 Jun 1640, her married name was BURWELL (2291).

i) Genevieve⁴ BASSE (2292) married Peter KNIGHT (2953) Taken from p. 10 of Historical Isle of Wight County that cites research by Oliver L. Perry, Sr. Her married name was KNIGHT (2292). She was born on 9 Oct 1624 She was a twin.⁸⁹²

j) Richard⁴ BASSE (2284) was born in 1625.⁸⁹³ In 1651 Feb 28 Depositions re bond given by Francis Norton of Charles Town, New England, merchant to John Hart and Richard Basse of London merchants. "Complete Book of Immigrants" Coldham. In 1656 Petition of Nicholas Blake, Nicholas Juxon and Richard Basse part owners of the "Friendship", that they may transport horses to their plantation in Barbados. See "Complete Book of Immigrants" by Coldham. Do not know if this is same Richard, but could easily be. In 1660 April 11 Deposition on behalf of John Hart and Richard Basse, merchants of London re bond between John Allen and Richard Basse of New England to deliver Virginia fish in 1650 to Hart. Found in "Complete Book of Immigrants" not sure if it is this same Richard, but could easily be.

k) Gregory⁴ BASSE (2283) was born on 10 Dec 1628 Gregory and George were twins.⁸⁹⁴

l) George⁴ BASSE (2282) (Birth and death dates from Historical Notes on Isle of Wight County p 10) was born on 11 Dec 1628.⁸⁹⁵ He died in 1681.⁸⁹⁶

m) Stillborn⁴ BASSE (2281) was born on 17 Jan 1629/30 at London, England.⁸⁹⁷

2. Richard³ BASSE (2271) was christened on 30 Oct 1591 at London, England.⁸⁹⁸ He was in business Resolution to sell the Jambi pepper at 26d., the Bantam pepper at 25d., and as many other commodities as may be. Request of Mr. Leske, the preacher, to have his goods delivered to him free of freight ; some condemned him as worthy of no kindness, seeing he was, as it is said, sent home as a malefactor ; others supposed he was wronged because of his severe reprehension of sin in others who sought to injure him "by putting a trick upon him by a wench at the English house ;" resolved in respect of his coat to deal kindly with him and leave it to the Governor to remit the freight as a favour.

Wages of Joseph Salbancke; his desire to write 200l. in the last joint stock, referred. Petition of John Curtis, master of the Peppercorn, "craving favour" for his goods brought home, referred, as it was conceived a great wrong to bring such a quantity of spices home, contrary to his bond.

Committee appointed to frame proceedings for commissions, letters, number of ships, men, provisions, and the like for the next year's fleet. Committee to speak with Slanye, respecting the purchase of six or seven tons of elephants' teeth. Sept. 23.- Minutes of a General Court.

Those of the generality absent to be fined 12d. each. Resolutions concerning the sale of the spices and other goods brought home by the Globe and Peppercorn. 250l. of Luke Walthall in the first joint stock "put to sale," adjudged to Robert Delean, he bidding 212l. per cent. for the same ; also 40l. belonging to Rich. Basse, sold to Wm. Prestley for 85l. ; 300l. of John Wightman to Rowland Backhouse, for 218l. per cent. ; 400l. of Anna Walthall, half to [Hugh] Hamersley for 210l. per cent., and half to Robt. Delean for 210l. 10s. per cent. ; 400l. of Edw. Dodsworth, half to Rowland Backhouse for 210l. 10s., and half to [John] Bancks for 210l. per cent. ; and 400l. of John Walthall, half to Rich. Venne, and half to Wm. Cockes for 210l.

⁸⁸³ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸⁴ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸⁵ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸⁶ John Bass, Documents MVW file; John Bass, Documents MVW file; John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸⁷ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸⁸ John Bass, Documents MVW file.

⁸⁸⁹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁹⁰ *Basse Sermon Book*.

⁸⁹¹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁹² *Basse Sermon Book*.

⁸⁹³ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁹⁴ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁹⁵ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁹⁶ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁸⁹⁷ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Rutherford, online <http://www.nelsongenealogy.org/gedcom/sources.html#2>.

⁸⁹⁸ Stephaun Paul, online <http://hometown.aol.com/stephaunnn/NathanielBasseDebate2.html>, Stephaun Paul (on line), downloaded Feb 5 2004; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

per cent. each ; and 200l. to Arthur Robinson. Sale of commodities with names of purchasers and the prices. Sept. 25.-In the case of the "rulers" of the porters, Robert Pore is enjoined to submit. Demand of Barrett referred. Difference between Martyn and the "Caldæan," referred.

Consideration of the number of ships to be employed in the next fleet. To be at Bantam to command the factories in the Indies, and to examine, establish, and dissolve factories as there may be occasion in the next fleet, their tonnage, the places they should go to, and the stock they should carry ; some of opinion to send eight ships, -two to Surat and six to Bantam, one from Surat to go to Acheen and Bantam ; those from Bantam to go to the Moluccas and parts thereabouts, that the Dutch may perceive the English intend not to leave [off] their traffic to those places ; and by such strength the inhabitants there and at Banda will be encouraged to deal with the English when they shall find them of power to resist the wrongs put on them by the Hollanders.

After discussion, it was held fit to send the more shipping, not to oppose the Hollanders in hostile manner, but to countenance the Company's business, that they be not put down or forced from their trade, "which, it seems, they (the Hollanders) do intend in all parts," but to send a good strength, both to the Moluccas and Banda, to purpose once for all and see what the Hollanders will do, "if a man of courage may be had that will not endure their wrongs ; as yet, they have only given hard words, but performed no deeds, and the Company's intents have been and still will be, not to drive a war with them, but to defend and resist the wrongs that may be put upon the English." Opinion that it were fit for the English to attempt Banda, and endeavour to expulse the Flemings, where the country people will assist, hating the insolency of the Flemings. Resolved to have, first Mr. Jourdain's, then Capt. Keeling's opinions, and then both together ; to hear also Augustine Spaldinge, Capt. Saris, Mr. Paiton, and others. Opinion of Jourdain on prosecuting the trade in the Indies, and dissolving unprofitable factories ; that Jourdain would be a fit person [for that service]. Description of the alterations and additions to be made in the several departments of the Company's premises at Blackwall ; these include the repacking and slaughter rooms. Sept. 26.-Complaints of Deane concerning his "half capital," of divers grocers regarding the purchase of pepper, and of other members of the Company who could not have their half capitals. in Sep 1617.⁸⁹⁹ He was in business Nov. 13. 18. Petition of Nicholas Blake, Nicholas Juxon, and Rich. Basse, merchants and part owners of the Friendship, to the Lord Protector and Council. Have sundry plantations belonging to them in Barbadoes, which greatly need working horses. Pray for a licence to transport 30. Endorsed, "Ref. 13 Nov. Ord. 18 Nov. 1656." on 13 Nov 1656.⁹⁰⁰

3. William³ BASSE (2270) was born in 1594 at London, England.⁹⁰¹ He was christened on 20 Oct 1594 at London, England.⁹⁰² He was buried on 12 Feb 1595.⁹⁰³

4. Mary³ BASSE (2276) was christened on 25 Jan 1595 at London, England.⁹⁰⁴ She married Luke WALTHALL (3890), son of William WALTHALL (5262), on 12 Feb 1610 Marriage license issued by the Bishop of London to Mary Basse, spinster to marry at St. Giles in the Fields Middlesex County.⁹⁰⁵ As of 12 Feb 1610, her married name was WALTHALL (2276).⁹⁰⁶ She was mentioned in her father's will and later became administrator when her mother the original executrix died. on 13 May 1616 at London, England. She was in business May 19-23. 356. Court Minutes of the East India Company. Christopher Farewell's bonds for "true service" to be cancelled. There being many points unfit to be divulged in the letters from Persia which both the Spaniards and the Hollanders will be ready to take advantage of, the Committee only to be allowed to read them. Letter read from Aleppo, that the delay of Connok's previous letters was caused by his sending them by way of Marseilles ; also of the danger of sending the two Arabs according to Connok's advice. Discussion whether in the letter from his Majesty to the King of Persia, the King's kindness in offering to give credit to his Majesty's subjects for 2,000 or 3,000 bales of silk, should not be acknowledged. A pinnacle of 130 or 140 tons, and not to draw more than 11 feet of water and of extraordinary length, to carry good ordnance "for offence," to be built for the coast of Persia. A Committee to appear before the Privy Council concerning Sir James Cunningham's business. Request of Mrs. Walthall to sell 100l. of her husband's adventure in the first joint stock, referred. Petition of Nathaniel Basse about brokerage. Petition of divers poor men of Blackwall, Ratcliffe, and Limehouse for employment and to be relieved from the opposition of the porters of London. Petition of Eliza, wife of John Noble and a prisoner with the Turks, for payment of certain debts. The lease of Leadenhall to be sealed by the Company. May 23.-Permission to Mary Walthall to pass over 100l. of her late husband's adventure in the first joint stock to the account of Humphrey Browne. [Two pages. Court Bk., IV., 175-177.] in 1618. She died after 1620 She died after 1620 as she was mentioned in her grandmother's will of 1620.

a) Mary⁴ WALTHALL (4467)⁹⁰⁷ was born on 19 Feb 1612.⁹⁰⁸

b) William⁴ WALTHALL (4190)⁹⁰⁹ died He died young.⁹¹⁰ He was born on 21 Feb 1613.⁹¹¹

5. Hester³ BASSE (2275) was christened on 3 Jul 1597 at London, England (Baptism recorded at St. Gabriel Fenchurch St).⁹¹² She was mentioned in her father's will. on 13 May 1616. She married Thomas HOBSON (2957) on 5 Sep 1616

⁸⁹⁹ unknown subject unknown record type, by unknown photographer.

⁹⁰⁰ unknown subject unknown record type, by unknown photographer, 'America and West Indies: November 1656', Calendar of State Papers Colonial, America and West Indies, Volume 1: 1574-1660 (1860), pp. 450-452. URL: <http://www.british-history.ac.uk/report.aspx?compid=69310&strquery=basse>.

⁹⁰¹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹⁰² Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹⁰³ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹⁰⁴ Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹⁰⁵ Paul, Feb 5 2004; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹⁰⁶ Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹⁰⁷ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹⁰⁸ Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹⁰⁹ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹¹⁰ Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹¹¹ Boyd, *Boyd's*.

at England Husband's name from Aug 30 1654 deposition. Location of marriage given as Stepney (I take this to be a church name).⁹¹³ As of 1654, her married name was HOBSON (2275) Called Hester Hobson of Bromley (widow) in 1654 deposition. 6. Samuel³ BASSE (2268) was born in 1598.⁹¹⁴ He was christened on 20 Aug 1598.⁹¹⁵ He was living on 16 Feb 1623 at Basse Choise, Isle of Wight County, VA (He arrived in Jamestown July of 1624).⁹¹⁶ He lived in 1632 at Roxbury, MA (Samuel, was an early and prominent citizen of Massachusetts, having arrived in Roxbury about 1632.

Margot:

Thanks a ton! I can already see, just by scanning a few items, that new nuances and hopefully new information may appear. I now believe that Samuel Basse, who lived with Nathaniel in 1623 at Basse's Choice, was his brother and perhaps traveled with him when he went up north on a recruiting expedition. But lo, Samuel stayed in Massachusetts. I have not proved this, but the circumstantial evidence is flooring. This same Samuel Basse, apparently, is listed in Ancestry.com as being an ancestor of John Adams and John Quincy Adams. Samuel was in his 90s when he died, and I checked the dates about a year ago, and they add up as being our Samuel. Put it this way, our umpteenth great grandfather, Humfrey Basse, was an ancestor of two U.S. presidents.

Don

>From: Margot Woodrough <margo4it@tampabay.rr.com>

>Sent: Apr 11, 2008 10:00 AM

>To: Don Floyd <tfloyd12@earthlink.net>

>Subject: Books on line

>).⁹¹⁷ He died on 30 Dec 1694 at Braintree, Massachusetts.⁹¹⁸

7. Humphrey³ BASSE (2269) was christened on 10 Nov 1599 at London, England (This was the third child named Humphrey that the couple produced. The previous two died in infancy).⁹¹⁹ He This is from John Smith's account of the exploration:

The Names of the Adventurers for Virginia, Alphabetically set downe, according to a printed Booke, set out by the Treasurer and Councell in this present yeere, 1620.

Page 256 Hugh Brooker, Esquire. Ambrose Brewsey. John Brooke. Matthew Bromridge. Christopher Brooke, Esquire. Martin Bond. Gabriel Beadle. John Beadle. David Borne. Edward Barnes. John Badger. Edmund Brandvell. Robert Bowyer, Esquire. Robert Bateman. Thomas Britton. Nicholas Benson. Edward Bishop. Peter Burgoney. Thomas Burgoney. Robert Burgoney. Christopher Baron. Peter Benson. John Baker. John Bustoridge. Francis Burley, William Browne. Robert Barker. Samuel Burnham. Edward Barkley. William Bennet. Captaine Edward Brewster. Thomas Brocket. John Bullock. George Bache. Thomas Bayly. William Barkley. George Butler. Timothie Bathurst. George Burton. Thomas Bret. Captaine John Brough. Thomas Baker. John Blunt. Thomas Bayly. Richard and Edward Blunt. Mineon Burrell. Richard Blackmore. William Beck. Benjamin Brand. John Busbridge. William Burrell. William Barret. Francis Baldwin. Edward Barber. **Humphrey Basse**. Robert Bell. Matthew Bromrick. John Beaumont. George Barkley. Peter Bartle. Thomas Bretton. John Blount. Arthur Bromfeld Esquire. William Berbloke. Charles Beck. <http://www.webroots.org/library/usahist/ghov1-09.html> in 1620. He died in 1622 at England.⁹²⁰

8. Thomas³ BASSE (2302) was christened on 21 Feb 1601/2 at London, England.⁹²¹ He died in 1603.⁹²² He was buried on 11 Jan 1603.⁹²³

9. Barnaby³ BASSE (2301) was born in 1605 at London, England.⁹²⁴ He was baptized on 30 Jun 1605 at London, St. Helen's, Bishopgate, Great Britain.⁹²⁵

10. John³ BASSE (2267) was born circa 1606 at London, England. He was christened on 14 Dec 1606 at St. Helen's BISHOPGATE, London, London, St. Helen's, Bishopgate, Great Britain.⁹²⁶

11. Lidea³ BASSE (2303) was christened on 15 May 1608.⁹²⁷ She died on 26 Jan 1609 at London, St. Helen's, Bishopgate, Great Britain, This is her burial date.⁹²⁸

12. Abigail³ BASSE (2274) married (--?--) THORPE (2958) Husband's name of Thorpe given in 1654 deposition. She called Abigale of Chelsea Hampton, Oxon, widow. Her married name was THORPE (2274). She was born in 1609. She was

⁹¹²Paul, Feb 5 2004; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹¹³Paul, Feb 5 2004; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹¹⁴Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹¹⁵Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹¹⁶Hotten, *Original Lists of Persons*, A Nathaniel, Samwell, and William were all living in same area. Presumption is that they were brothers; Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹¹⁷Fred Harvey Williams, "Basse Family," e-mail to Margot Woodrough, Feb 2004.

⁹¹⁸Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹¹⁹Paul, Feb 5 2004; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹²⁰Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹²¹Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹²²Paul, Feb 5 2004; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹²³Paul, Feb 5 2004; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹²⁴Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹²⁵Paul, Feb 5 2004; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹²⁶Paul, Feb 5 2004; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹²⁷Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹²⁸Paul, Feb 5 2004; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

christened on 14 Jan 1609/10.⁹²⁹ She is mentioned in her father's will. on 13 May 1616 at London, England. She died after 1654 She is mentioned in an estate deposition in 1654.

13. Luke³ BASSE (2266) was born in May 1613 at England. He was christened on 5 May 1613 at London, England. He is mentioned in his father's will. on 13 May 1616 at London, England. He died in 1654 at VA He is the subject of an estate deposition in 1654. Deposition indicates tht he died in Virginia.

14. Abraham³ BASSE (4967)⁹³⁰ was born on 4 May 1613 He is shown in Boyd's as being christened on the same day as his apparent twin, Luke. No mention that he died young in Boyd's. I do not think he appears in his father's will of 1616.⁹³¹

15. Sarah³ BASSE (2273). Her married name was HASTLER (2273). She was christened on 27 Jun 1615 at London, England.⁹³² She is mentioned in her father's will. on 13 May 1616 at London, England. As of circa 1630, her married name was CARRELLON (2273).⁹³³ She married Thomas CARRELL (4968), son of Richard CARRELL (4969), circa 1630.⁹³⁴ She married Thomas HASTLER (2956) circa 1640 Husband's name from Aug 30 1654 depostion. She died after 1654 at London, England, She is mentioned in a deposition in 1654.

B. Thomas² BASSE (4185)⁹³⁵ died before 13 May 1616 His brother's will mentions Thomas as deceased and forgives most of his debt.⁹³⁶

C. Robert² BASSE (4499) He is mentioned in Humphrey Basses' will as "my bretheren along with a Richard Basse" Will is ambiguous. Possibly Robert was dead. in 1616.

D. Richard² BASSE (4500) He is mentioned in Humphrey Basses' will as "my bretheren along with a Robert Basse" Will is ambiguous. Possibly both Robert and Richard are dead. in 1616.

E. William² BASS (4186)⁹³⁷ was living on 16 Feb 1623 (William and Mrs. Basse living at Jordan's Journey. I presume this could be Humphrey's brother, but evidence is just circumstantial).⁹³⁸

Printed on: 12 Mar 2015

Prepared by:

Margaret V. Woodrough

⁹²⁹Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹³⁰Boyd, *Boyd's*; Boyd, *Boyd's*; Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹³¹Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹³²Paul, Feb 5 2004.

⁹³³Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹³⁴Boyd, *Boyd's*.

⁹³⁵Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹³⁶Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹³⁷Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia; Bass Family, Book, 1961 State Archives of Georgia.

⁹³⁸Hotten, *Original Lists of Persons*.